



THE UNIVERSITY OF  
**WAIKATO**  
*Te Whare Wānanga o Waikato*

Research Commons

<http://researchcommons.waikato.ac.nz/>

## Research Commons at the University of Waikato

### Copyright Statement:

The digital copy of this thesis is protected by the Copyright Act 1994 (New Zealand).

The thesis may be consulted by you, provided you comply with the provisions of the Act and the following conditions of use:

- Any use you make of these documents or images must be for research or private study purposes only, and you may not make them available to any other person.
- Authors control the copyright of their thesis. You will recognise the author's right to be identified as the author of the thesis, and due acknowledgement will be made to the author where appropriate.
- You will obtain the author's permission before publishing any material from the thesis.

**Te Kaunati Hikahika a Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti:  
Ka hika i taku ahi, kimihia e Te Whakatōhea te ara o te tikanga i  
pai ai te noho i te ao nei**

He tuhikura

i tukuna hai whakatutuki

i ngā herenga mō te tohu

o te

**Tohu Kairangi**

ki

**Te Whare Wānanga o Waikato**

nā

**TE KAHAUTU MAXWELL**



THE UNIVERSITY OF  
**WAIKATO**  
*Te Whare Wānanga o Waikato*

**2019**

# Hāpainga Te Aroha

---

## Apakura

He tangi apakura tēnei i titoa mō taku tamāhine, mō Kaaterina Ataria Arihia Maxwell i mate ohore i te 23 o Poutūterangi 2013, nā tōna tūngāne a Ricky-Lee Mitai i apakura, nā tōna kapa haka a Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti i haka ki Tauranga i te tau 2014. Mōna, mō Kaaterina tēnei tuhikura nāku i fīmata i a ia e 4 noa iho ōna tau i te tau 1995. E Kati e moe mai.

*E kore te aroha e taka e, kai a koe te wairua o Pāpā.*

*Haere rā te kurupounamu ki Te Pūtahitanga o Rēhua.*

*Hoki wairua mai ki te kahu i tō iwi e tau nei.*

*E haehae nei te tinana ki te matā Tūhua, te pipi Te Ahiaua.*

*E hika ki ahau e i.*

*Takoto maroke ana te kauanga i Ōtīriakuku<sup>1</sup> rā ia.*

*Matatū noa ko au nei anake, i.*

*Ka rehu mai tō kanohi taku rātā tūtahi, rā runga mai ki Pākaurangi<sup>2</sup> rā ia, i.*

*Taku tūranga ake i te ihi o Te Iringa<sup>3</sup>, e rūmaki tonu ana he wai kai aku kamo, i.*

*Ngāti Ngāhere<sup>4</sup> e, e te iwi e, kia noho atu au i roto i te whare o Aitupawa<sup>5</sup>, o Maruaitū<sup>6</sup>,*

*I te whare ponga o Hinerauwharangi<sup>7</sup>, i.*

*Kai kinikini ai te kai a te mamae tē tuku pototia, kia wawe au te mate,*

*Koi noho au i te ao, koi kōingo noa atu te hanake mā te Pākihikura<sup>8</sup>, e tū noa mai rā,*

*Te ahunga ki Paepae-Aotea<sup>9</sup> rā, ka oti atu au e, i.*

---

<sup>1</sup> Ōtīriakuku: Ko te wai tuku kiri o Ngāti Ngāhere

<sup>2</sup> Pākaurangi: He pa tawhito nō Ngāti Ngāhere

<sup>3</sup> Te Iringa: He tipuna nō Ngāti Ngāhere, ko Te Iringa te ingoa o te tipuna whare i Terere

<sup>4</sup> Ngāti Ngāhere: Te ingoa o te hapū o Terere

<sup>5</sup> Aitupawa: He atua o te mate

<sup>6</sup> Maruaitū: He atua o te mate

<sup>7</sup> Hinerauwharangi: He tamāhine nā Tāne-Mahuta. Koia hoki te atua o ngā rau o ngā rākau. Koia te whakatinanatanga o te parekawakawa te tohu o te mate.

<sup>8</sup> Pākihikura: He waka i haramai i Hawaiiki i ū ki Ōpōtiki. Koirā te ingoa o te wahapū o ngā awa e rua ko Ōtara me Waioweka ka hono rāua ka awa kotahi ko Pākihikura te ingoa.

<sup>9</sup> Paepae-Aotea: He moutere kai waho atu o Whakaari ko te Te Reinga tēnei o ngā iwi o Mātaatua.

## Te huawai parae koia te korarī

---

*E tō e te rā tō atu ki te rua, ka haramai roimata me he wai. Heoi au he pupuri tāua tē haere. Kia tere mutu au te wā moana nei, ū noa Paikea ki Awanuiārangi, te Rae ki Kohi. Nō Ngāoho-mata-kamokamo au nā Ringamutu e. Torerenui he tainui, he pahī nōu e Maniapoto, ehara koe i te tāne he mokopuna rā hoki nā Tūhoe-pōtiki e Toherauariki nei (Te Kooti 1883; Te Kahautu 2019).*

Kīngi Tūheitia Pōtatau Te Wherowhero VII taku mana Māori motuhake tēnā koe. Paimārire.

E tohea nei e te kupu taurangi ki aku kuratoroa nāna nei ahau i tātaki, i tātā kī hoki i puta ahau i te kati o Uaua, i te māhanga o Tē Taea, i te ūmanga o Māngere. Mai kore ko koutou te puna manawa, nei ka mihi. Ahorangi Linda Tuhiwai Smith taku manawaora, Ahorangi Pou Temara taku manawarū, Ahorangi Rangi Mātāmua taku toitoimanawa e kore te aroha e taka e, i waho i taku manawa e.

Kai te rere tonu ngā mihi ki Te Pua Wānanga ki Te Ao ki roto o Te Whare Wānanga o Waikato, ki taku Amokapua ki a Ahorangi Brandan Hokowhitu-te-moana-nui-a-Tiki, tēnā koe, tēnā koutou. Tēnā anō hoki koe Hinerangi Kara kōrua ko Mahue ngā tokikura o Te Wharepukapuka o Te Whare Wānanga o Waikato tēnā anō hoki kōrua mō tā kōrua whakamakaurangi i te tuhikura nei.

Ka mihi hoki ahau ki a koutou aku taura tawhito, aku karangamaha o Te Whare Wānanga o Waikato mō te whakarawai i te tuhikura nei, Shaunee Hiha, Travis Biddle me koe hoki Rangipare Ngaropō nā koutou i ngāwari ai te rewanga o te mahi nei.

E Tā Harawira Gardiner tēnā koe e te rangatira mō te wharau i ahau kia wātea ahau ki te whakairo kōrero.

Ka huri ki taku iwi ki a Te Whakatōhea me ōku whakaruruhau, ōku kura kua ngaro i te tirohanga tangata; Himiona Kahika, Hiria Akurangi, Ōtaki Kahika, Pāroa Kūrei, Te Rama Mitai, Ema Rogers, Tā Mōnita Delamere, Maki Tai, Te Wharekaihua Coates, Te Okeroa Huriwaka, Kaaterina Maxwell, Te Wiremu Maxwell tēnei ahau tā koutou mokopuna o te kurahaupō kai te kurahauao i tēnā reinga, i tēnā reinga ki te kura tawhiti nāu, ki te toi i Hawaiki nāu.

Ki ōku taikura Te Riaki Amoamo, Hohipera Williams, Mana Pirihi, Pāroa Apanui, Bruce Pukepuke, Rikirangi Gage, Turuhira Hare, Paora Brosnan tēnā koutou katoa.

Ki ōku manutaikō o te whānau ki taku māma ko koe Matirerau me taku tamāhine a Materoa i manawanui mai ki ahau tēnā kōrua. Kātahi anō nerā Mum. Ki taku huaroa o Te Whānau-ā-Apanui, Uncle Danie Poihipi, e koro e, ko koe taku maunga me koe hoki hai te kōhatu o taku kaha Blythe Rogers me tō taina taku manu tīhau Pixie Rogers me taku rahinga o Ōtehirinaki tēnā koutou.

Ki te kura o Papa Te Whai kai te tuakana, kai te tumuaki Richard Mitai tēnā koe. Tēnā hoki koutou aku kōhanga reo mō te whakaae kia noho ahau ki roto i a koutou, Te Kōhanga o Terere, e Carole Mitai me Te Kōhanga o Te Whare Aroha o Te Whakatōhea, e Tawhi Maxwell.

Kai Te Poutikanga o Te Hāhi Ringatū, Wirangi Pera, me tō hāhi me ō pēka me ngā pāriha o Te Whakatōhea; Ngāi Tama, Ngāti Rua, Ngāti Ira me koe taku pāriha Ngāti Ngahere. Tēnā tātou ngā toenga o ngā tamariki a Iharaira, ngā tamariki o te kupu whakaari.

Kai taku whare wānanga, Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti kai aku tuākana, kai aku tuāhine, kai aku tamariki, kai aku mokopuna mō koutou tēnei tuhikura nā koutou tēnei rangakura o roto i ngā tau e rua tekau mā whā tau mai i te wā i whānau mai ai koe te kapa haka, tātou te tangata, Te Whakatōhea. Kai taku tamaiti, taku hāpai ō Tama Te Waiwhakaruku Hata-Tipene tēnā hoki koe. Ko tō manawa, ko tōku manawa, tēnā whakairihia. Whano, whano, haramai te toki, haumi e, hui e, taiki e.

# Rokohinga atu rā maikuku mākaka

---

<b>Hāpainga Te Aroha</b> .....	<b>ii</b>
<b>Te huawai parae koia te korarī</b> .....	<b>iii</b>
<b>Pinepine Te Kura</b> .....	<b>1</b>
1.1 <i>Te Rongopai</i> .....	1
1.2 <i>Te Ara o Ēnoka</i> .....	4
1.2.1 <i>Te Whakatōhea me te Kapa Haka</i> .....	11
1.2.2 <i>Taumāhekeheke</i> .....	12
1.2.3 <i>He Kura hoki ahau</i> .....	14
1.3 <i>Te Ara Tōtara</i> .....	15
1.4 <i>Ngā Kura</i> .....	19
<b>Hau Te Kura: Te Toihuarewa</b> .....	<b>24</b>
2.1 <i>Kupu Whakaari</i> .....	24
2.2 <i>Rangakura Kaupapa Māori</i> .....	24
2.3 <i>Te Tikanga Rangakura a Te Kura i raro i a Awarua</i> .....	26
2.3.1 <i>Meiha Kounga Tikanga Rangakura Qualitative Research</i> .....	26
2.3.2 <i>Tātari Meiha Kounga Qualitative Analysis</i> .....	26
2.3.3 <i>Ngā Kaitukukura ki te Rangakura Research Participants</i> .....	27
2.3.4 <i>Te Ara Tikanga Māori Approach</i> .....	28
2.4 <i>Titikaha</i> .....	30
<b>Whanake te kura i raro i Awarua: Te Whakatōhea</b> .....	<b>31</b>
3.1 <i>Kupu Whakaari</i> .....	31
3.2 <i>Ko wai a Te Whakatohea?</i> .....	31
3.3 <i>Whenua</i> .....	33
3.4 <i>Atua</i> .....	35
3.4.1 <i>Te Whakapapa o Tāwhaki</i> .....	35
3.4.2 <i>Te Whakapapa o Māui</i> .....	37
3.5 <i>Ngā Waka</i> .....	38
3.5.1 <i>Te Aratauwahāiti</i> .....	39
3.5.2 <i>Nukutere</i> .....	40
3.5.3 <i>Te Ara Umauma</i> .....	45
3.5.4 <i>Te Aratāwhao</i> .....	47
3.5.5 <i>Mātaatua</i> .....	49
3.6 <i>Ngā Tīpuna Ariki</i> .....	56
3.6.1 <i>Tūtāmure</i> .....	57
3.6.2 <i>Muriwai</i> .....	68
3.7 <i>Ngā Hapū</i> .....	70
3.7.1 <i>Ngāti Rua</i> .....	71
3.7.2 <i>Ngāti Ira</i> .....	72

3.7.3	Ngāti Ngahere.....	74
3.7.4	Ngāti Patumoana.....	75
3.7.5	Ngāi Tama .....	76
3.7.6	Te Ūpokorehe .....	79
3.8	<i>Te Pākehā</i> .....	84
3.8.1	Te Rongopai .....	84
3.8.2	Te Tiriti.....	86
3.8.3	Te Wākana.....	89
3.8.4	Muru Whenua .....	90
3.9	<i>Maru Ahiahi</i> .....	93
3.9.1	Te Petihana .....	93
3.9.2	Ngā Kōmihana.....	95
3.9.3	Te Kerēme a Te Whakatōhea.....	97
3.9.4	Te Poari O Te Whakatōhea.....	101
3.10	<i>Titikaha</i> .....	104
	<b>Ko Te Kura Nui: Te Kooti.....</b>	<b>109</b>
4.1	<i>Kupu Whakaari</i> .....	109
4.2	<i>Ko Arikirangi tēnei te haere nei</i> .....	110
4.2.1	Kai Tūranganui he matāpū.....	116
4.2.2	Kawe ana ki Wharekauri .....	120
4.2.3	Ka manene mai ahau i rō te wai.....	128
4.3	<i>Tēnei Te Tira Hou</i> .....	130
4.3.1	Tēnei haramai nei .....	133
4.3.2	Te kupu whakaari ki Waioweka .....	134
4.3.3	Nā Te Rongopai.....	138
4.3.4	Nā Te Rangimārie.....	145
4.4	<i>Hai matua mō te pani</i> .....	152
4.4.1	Karakia mō te kai:.....	153
4.4.2	He karakia hoa tapuwae mō te pakanga:.....	153
4.4.3	Karakia tonu kai.....	154
4.5	<i>Titikaha</i> .....	154
	<b>Ko Te Kura Roa: Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti .....</b>	<b>157</b>
5.1	<i>Kupu Whakaari</i> .....	157
5.2	<i>Te Ōrokotimatanga o Te Kapa Haka</i> .....	158
5.3	<i>Te Whakatōhea me te Haka</i> .....	160
5.3.1	Kaitito.....	162
5.3.2	He Tautitotito.....	165
5.3.3	He Oriori.....	166
5.3.4	He Apakura.....	168
5.3.5	He Ngeri .....	169

5.3.6	Kapa Haka .....	172
5.4	<i>Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti</i> .....	184
5.4.1	Ko wai a Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti .....	186
5.4.2	Whakaara ake nei te iti i roto i te puehu (Tōna Kaupapa) .....	189
5.4.3	Whakateitei ake nei te rawakore i roto i te pūranga paru (Āna Tikanga) .....	189
5.5	<i>Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti me ngā kapa haka o Te Whakatōhea</i> .....	207
5.6	<i>Titikaha</i> .....	210
	<b>Ko te Kura nā Tūhaepō</b> .....	<b>215</b>
6.1	<i>Whanake Te Kura i raro i a Awarua</i> .....	215
6.2	<i>Te Kura Nui</i> .....	218
6.3	<i>Te Kura Roa</i> .....	219
6.4	<i>Ko te hua i te kai</i> .....	220
	<b>Te Kaunati Hikahika</b> .....	<b>225</b>
	<b>Te Wāua Mai Nei</b> .....	<b>226</b>

## Ngā Whakaahua

Whakaahua 1:	Ricky-Lee Mitai, kaitātaki tāne o te motu, Te Matatini 2015.....	15
Whakaahua 2:	Ko te tohu whakamaumaharatanga ki a Hira Te Popo at Ōpekerau Marae...	144
Whakaahua 3:	Te Arawa warriors performing a haka at Rotorua .....	173
Whakaahua 4:	Ngāi Tamahauā hapū o Te Whakatōhea, ANZAC Day 1946, Ōpōtiki. ....	176
Whakaahua 5:	Ngāpōtiki e whakataetae ana ki te WD & HO Wills Tabacco Cup.....	177
Whakaahua 6:	Delamere Cup.....	178
Whakaahua 7:	Waioweka Youth Club. ....	180
Whakaahua 8:	Ko Te Whakatōhea e pōhiri ana i te Kāwana Tianara i a Sir Arthur Porritt..	183
Whakaahua 9:	Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti, Te Whakataetae ā Rohe o Mātaatua, Te Teko, 2016..	184
Whakaahua 10:	He tuku mātauranga i tēnā whakatipuranga ki tēnā whakatipuranga .....	188
Whakaahua 11:	Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti, kai te pupuri i ngā pukapuka karakia Ringatū .....	196
Whakaahua 12:	Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti, Te Matatini, 2015 .....	208
Whakaahua 13:	Te kairangakura, Te Kahautu Maxwell i te kapa haka .....	209
Whakaahua 14:	Ko te Tekaumārua o Mei 2019 ki Ōpekerau Marae .....	223

## Ngā Mapi

Mapi 1:	Te Whakatōhea: Rohe whenua (Te Whakatōhea Archives). ....	34
Mapi 2:	Te Whakatōhea: Papa kāinga (Te Whakatōhea Archives).....	88
Mapi 3:	Te Whakatōhea: Te raina raupatu (Te Whakatōhea Archives). ....	92
Mapi 4:	Te Whakatōhea: Ōpape Native Reserve (Te Whakatōhea Archives). ....	94

## Ngā Ripanga

Ripanga 1: Tiriti o Waitangi, mana whakaae .....	86
Ripanga 2: Wai 87, mana whakaae .....	98
Ripanga 3: Te Whakatōhea Pre-Settlement Claims Trust (WPSCT), mana whakaae.....	100
Ripanga 4: Whakatōhea Māori Trust Board Tuatahi, mana whakaae .....	101
Ripanga 5: Whakatōhea Māori Trust Board 2019, mana whakaae .....	102
Ripanga 6: Whakatōhea Māori Trust Board Mussel Farm, mana whakaae .....	103
Ripanga 7: Ngā Tekaumarua o Te Peka o Te Hāhi Ringatū o Te Whakatōhea, .....	151

# Pinepine Te Kura

---

## 1.1 Te Rongopai

Ko te rangakura nei he titiro ki te Kapa Haka o Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti me tana rautaki ki te whakaora i tōna iwi a Te Whakatōhea mā roto mai i ngā mahi kapa haka. Ko Te Whakatōhea he iwi i pāhua kinotia ai ahakoa he iwi harakore, i whiua tonutia nuitia ki te whiu taumaha. Ko tēnei rangakura he titiro ki te kapa haka nei me tōna whai kia whakarauora ai i ngā marae, i ngā hapū o Te Whakatōhea kia mau ai ngā tikanga marae, kia whakarauora ai i ngā tikanga marae, kia whakarauora i te reo o Te Whakatōhea, kia whakatipu i te whakapono o Te Ringatū, whakatipu i ngā tohunga Ringatū, mā roto mai i ngā akoranga ki te kapa haka i raro i ngā tikanga whakapono tapu a Te Hāhi Ringatū. Ko Te Hāhi Ringatū me tōna poropiti a Te Kooti; ko Te Matua Tangata te waka i whakapaua katoatia e Te Whakatōhea ō rātou ngākau, ō rātou kaha, ō rātou whakapono ki a Te Kooti me tōna whakapono hou. Ko te waka tēnei i ūtaina katoatia ō rātou tūmanako ki runga. Te take i whānau mai te whakapono o Te Kooti, arā Te Ringatū nō muri tata mai i te raupatutanga o te whenua o Te Whakatōhea i te tau 1866, ā, nō te 1868 Te Hāhi Ringatū, nō te 1869 i tau ā takahanga waewae a Te Kooti me tana whakapono ki roto o Te Whakatōhea.

He whakapono i whānau mai ai i roto i te pakanga whenua, he whakapono i whānau mai i roto i te harakore, he whakapono i pakanga kia ora ai ai tōna poropiti, he whaapono i pakanga ai kia ora ai tōna hāhi; Te Hāhi Ringatū, he whakapono i pakanga ai kia ora ai ngā tikanga a te Māori. Ā, e ora tōnu nei.

He iwi motuhake a Te Whakatōhea ki te Moana a Toi, ko tōna manawa ko te taone o Ōpōtiki. He tikanga ahurea whai mana tōna, e ngiha tonu nei tōna ahi kāroa ki tōna whenua ki te whakaū i tōna rangatiratanga me te pupuri i ōna tāhuhu kōrero, tūāuriuri, whāioio. Ka hoki whakatenehe tēnei tāhuhu ki Hawaiki rā anō, ki te hekenga mai o ngā waka ki Aotearoa, ko Nukutere ki Awaawakino, ko Mātaatua waka ki Kākahoroa ki Whakatāne, ana, ka pouwhenuatia mai ko Te Whakatōhea iwi, Whakatōhea hapū, Whakatōhea papakāinga, Whakatōhea whenua, Whakatōhea Mana Atua, Whakatōhea Mana Ariki, Whakatōhea Mana Tangata.

Hoi anō ehara i te mea i āiopī ai ngā wai i ngā wā katoa, i konā tonu ōna ihinga moana, wharenga moana, mararanga moana. Arā tonu, i pūtikingia ōna taura a roto ki ōna piringa iwi, hoi he wā anō; *“E riri ana a Tū rāua ko Rongo i tā rāua māra. Koia a Pōhutukawa ka patua tētahi koia moenga kura, ka patua tētahi koia moenga toto. Rāua ka hē i te riri ka tīkina ki*

*waho rā ki a Marere o tonga, ki a Tumu Whakairia e ora ana te wānanga, mauria mai nei ko te rongō ā whare, ko te rongō taketake ki mua ki te Atua, ka whakahotu i te riri” (Te Kooti).*

Ko te whakapae ururoa anō tētahi i hau mai nei i waho i te moana ki Te Whakatōhea, ko te ngau whakapae i te rau tau tekau mā iwa i rerekē ai tāna noho ki tōna ao, arā, ko ngā taru tawhiti, ko te hoko i te roi o te whenua, ko ngā kairiri, ko te rauwhaitanga a te patu i te whenua me te taikoko i koko ai te Pākehā, i kihirua ai a Te Whakatōhea ki tōna ao mō te ake, ake.

Kāore hoki e te wā i hua ai inangeto ko te pani ki a Te Whakatōhea, i pani ki te whenua, i pani ki te tangata, i pani ki te tikanga. Ka noho pōhara a Te Whakatōhea, ka eke ai te whakataukī; “Te Whakatōhea Huarahi”; arā he iwi korekore nei te rawakore.

I roto i tēnei wā o te pōkaikaha, o te whakarihariha i puta ake he tangata nana i hora he māramatanga nui ānō ko Autahi i mahuta mai i te pae. Nā, ko ōna hihī, he tūmanako, ko tōna purata, he whakapono, nā i koropiko nui ai a Te Whakatōhea ki tōna mana Atua. Ko Te Kooti Arikirangi Te Turuki e mōhiotia whānuita ana tērā, ko Te Matua Tangata tēnei te haere nei, he mana atua, he mana poropiti, he rākaukawa ki te riri, he rākaukawa ki te kupu, he manukura, koia hoki te kaihere i te taura kaha o te kotahitanga i raro i a Ihowā Te Atua ora o ngā mano. I waenganui i te rau tau tekau mā iwa i te wā o te inati, o te pōrahurahu i tahuri ngā iwi ki te whai i a Te Kooti. Nō te Hānuere o te tau 1869 i tapuwaetia e Te Kooti ki roto o Te Wera, ki roto o Te Whakatōhea. Ka mutu, ka ārahina e Hira Tepopo me Te Whakatōhea a Te Kooti ki roto o te Te Urewera.

I tāwharautia a Te Kooti e Ngāi Tūhoe, i reira i takoto tana kupu: ‘Ahakoa koutou whaiwhai i ahau me te Kāwana anō hoki e kore ahau e mau i a koutou. E kore hoki ahau e mau i a koutou. Ā mā te mate hauaitū noa iho e mate ai ahau.’ I reira i Tāwhana i te 26 o Maehe 1869 i tuku a Ngāi Tūhoe i raro i a Te Kooti; tuku tangata, tuku whenua (Binney, 1990).

Tekau tau a Te Kooti e noho ana i te maru o Ngāti Maniapoto ki te Nehenehenui 1873 – 1883. I reira i whakakaupapatia e ia ana karakia, ana Rā, ana tikanga whakahaere i tana whakapono o Te Ringatū, ana mōteatea, ana kupu whakaari, ana whare whakairo, whare rūnanga, wharekarakia. Ka huihui mai te tini o te tangata o Te Tai Rāwhiti, o Mātaatua ki te whakarongo ki ana tohutohu. Ka whakaae rātou he mana whakaora tūroro, he mana poropiti ōna. I hau ai tōna rongō (Binney, 1990).

Ko te kāmaka o Te Kooti ko tōna whakapono hou, arā Te Ringatū te rēhita mō te tini mō te mano i mate i te hoari whakawai a te Pākehā. I whati mai a Te Whakatōhea i runga i tēnei tai

whakapono, tai mau tāngata. Inā noa atu te awe nui o Te Kooti ki runga i a Te Whakatōhea. Kua rokiroki ki te pātaka kōrero o Te Whakatōhea; “*E kore rawa tēnei pūranga e pahemo, ko āna kupu ia e kore e pahemo.*” Ka mau tonu āna karakia, āna waiata, āna kupu whakaari i tēnā whakatipuranga, i tēnā whakatipuranga, i a Te Whakatōhea. Tau rawa iho ki tēnei wā he poutokomanawa tēnei kura nui, tēnei kura roa, tēnei kura nā Tūhaepō, arā tēnei kura tapu nā Te Kooti hai kura mō Te Whakatōhea.

Ehara i te mea nō nā noa ake nei, kua tū a Te Whakatōhea hai maninitua, hai maniniaro mō roto i te mārātapu o te kapa haka, koia nei te mārā taketake a te Māori e mate hiahākari nei ōna hua e te tini, ōna koiora e te mano puta noa i te ao whānui. Kua matomato te tipu mai o te kapa haka ki ngā kokoru katoa o te whenua, kātahi te makuru o tōna miere ko te tohu tēnā ki te ao i te tino rangatiratanga o te Māoritanga mā roto mai o te kapa haka.

Nō te wā o te Kapu Whutupōro o te Ao 2015 ki Aotearoa nei ko ngā mahi kapa haka i whakanuitia whānuitia. Ahakoa i hea i te whenua nei te kēmū i pākangatia ai, arā he kēmū i kō, i kō tonu he haka, he kēmū i kō, i kō tonu he haka, arā, kāore e hapa, he kēmū, he haka, he kēmū, he haka. Koiarā i whakapāhō i runga i te kare o ngā wai ki te tini makehua puta i te ao whānui, i te ao whāroa, ko te haka. Me te mea hoki nō mua noa atu tō tātou kapa toa, Te Kapa Ōpango i nui ai tēnei taonga te haka ki te ao katoa, mā te haka a Te Rauparahā: Ka mate! Ka mate!

Engari he nui noa atu te mahi kapa haka i te mahi kapa haka noa iho. Kapa haka is more than just performance. It is a unique part of our identity as New Zealanders and helps facilitate meaningful connections with other cultures. The very strong belief that kapa haka contributes to social cohesion, positive health and educational outcomes and economic vitality... (Tipene, 2014. p. 3).

I roto i tēnei ao hou, he waka kē ia nei hai utanga nui atu i te tuakiri me te mana Māori motuhake ki runga. Koianei tonu nei te waka hai hoehoenga mā Te Whakatōhea ki te whāngai, ki te pupuri hoki i āna kōrero tuku iho o tuāukiuki, ngā kura huakuru tapu hoki a Te Kooti, ngā tōrangapū, ngā tūmanako, ngā whakahau, ngā akiaki, me ngā whakakitenga. He waka hoki hai whakarauora i te reo o Te Whakatōhea, ōna kōrero, tōna mita, āna kīwaha, ōnā whakataukī me ōna pepehā me ngā kura huna. He waka tēnei te kapa haka hai whakarauora i ngā tikanga marae, ko ngā paetapu ērā, ko ngā paekaranga ērā, ko ngā paemōteatea ērā.

Ko tā tēnei tuhikura he hura i tēnei tāhuhu me te whakatewhatewha i tā Te Kooti whakairo i tōna kura ki te ihomatua me te ihopūmanawa o Te Whakatōhea hai ihoatua, hai ihomatua. Ko

te whakatūwhera hoki tērā i ōna kura ki te mātaitia ihotia kia kite pēhea tā Te Whakatōhea pūtiki i ēnei aho matua ki te taurapa o te waka nei o te kapa haka.

Nō reira ko te ariā o tēnei tuhikura, ‘ko te hura i ētahi kura o Te Kooti Arikirangi Te Turuki, me te whakatewhatewha i ēnei kura me tāna tārai i te tuakiri o Te Whakatōhea mā roto mai i te waka nei o te kapa haka.

Nō reira ko tā tēnei tuhikura he urupare i te urupounamu, pēhea nei te whakarauora i te reo, i te mita, i ngā tikanga; whaikōrero, karanga, mōteatea a Te Whakatōhea i raro i ngā kura o Te Kooti Arikirangi Te Turuki mā roto mai i te waka o te kapa haka o Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti e pupuri ai i tōna tuakiri?

I roto i tēnei tuhikura, anei anō ētahi atu urupounamu ka whakatewhatewhatia:

- Ko wai a Te Whakatōhea?
- Ko wai a Te Kooti?
- He aha ngā kura o Te Kooti me ngā pānga o ēnei ki a Te Whakatōhea?
- He aha te kapa haka?
- Pēhea e whakapuakitia ai ngā kura o Te Kooti mā roto mai i te kapa haka?
- He aha ngā pānga o te kapa haka me ngā kura o Te Kooti ki te tuakiri o Te Whakatōhea?

## 1.2 Te Ara o Ēnoka

### *Te Ako a Horomona Whakataukī 4: 1-5, 9*

*Whakarongo e ngā tamariki ki te ako a te Matu...a... tahuri mai hoki kia mātauria ai ngā whakaaro mōhio. He pai hoki te kupu mōhio ka hoatu nei e ahau ki a koutou, kua tāku ture e whakarerea. Ko te tamaiti hoki ahau a tōku pāpā he ngāwari, he mea matenui nā tōku whae...a... I whakaako anō ia i a au, i mea mai ki a au, kia puritia āku kupu e tōu ngākau, kia mau ki āku whakahau, ā, e ora koe. Tāu taonga e mea ai māu ko te whakaaro nui; tāu e mea ai māu ko te mātauranga; kua e wareware; kua hoki e neke atu i ngā kupu a tōku māngā...i...*

Ko te karakia o runga ake nei, ko te karakia Tūā tēnei i te tamaiti ki roto ki Te Hāhi Ringatū. Ko te tūā, he rite ki te tohi, he kupu, he ingoa, he momo karakia, ko tōna pūtakenga maitanga nō te tūāuriuri i tōia mai e Te Kooti ki roto ki tana whakahaere a Te Hāhi Ringatū.

## Te Āritaritatanga

Ko tēnei kōrero e whai ake nei he tuhura i tōku ao, tōku whakatipuranga, ngā whakangungutanga, ngā whakahautanga me ngā whakamātautauranga i tōku whakapakeketanga ki tēnei ao. He kōrero tēnei e whakatūwhera i ngā whatu o te hinengaro, e whakatūwhera hoki i ngā taringa o te ngākau o te hunga ka whai wāhi ki tēnei tuhikura, ki tēnei rangakura, ko konei e mārama ai ki te take i tuhia ai ēnei kōrero, i rangakuratia ai tēnei kaupapa ki te kairangakura nei.

I whānau ahau ki roto i te iwi o Te Whakatōhea ko Te Kahautu (Dudu) rāua ko Matirerau (Tuda) ōku mātua. Ko taku pāpā he maha ōna tātai ko Te Whakatōhea, Ngāi Tai, Ngāti Awa, Tūhoe, Ngāti Maniapoto, Ngāti Porou. Ko taku māmā nō Te Whakatōhea, Te Whānau a Apanui me Ngāti Porou. Ko ahau te pōtiki, tokoono mātou kotahi te mea wahine, koia te tuatoru. Kua pakeke kē aku tuākana i taku whānautanga mai. I taku tīmata ki te kura ko taku tuakana i mua i ahau kua tae kē ia ki te tau tuaiwa. Ko ngā mea pakeke kua mutu kē ki te kāreti, kua puta ki te mahi. Nō reira i rerekē pea tōku ao. I whai wāhi nui ai ōku tīpuna ki tōku whakatiputanga, ko taku tipuna koroua a Te Wiremu rāua ko taku tipuna kuia a Kaa Mākiwhara me te huhua noa atu o rātou o te wākāinga.

I pakeke ahau ki roto o Te Whakatōhea, i kuraina ahau ki roto o Te Whakatōhea, i whāngaitia ahau ki te taro māro a Te Whakatōhea, ko ōna whakapapa ērā, ko ōna kōrero ērā, ko ōna hītōria ērā. I pakeke ahau ki roto i ngā mahi tōrangapū e pā ana ki a Te Whakatōhea, ko tōku tipuna koroua a Te Wiremu Hoeta Makiwhara te Hiamana o Te Poari Māori o Te Whakatōhea, koia hoki te Hiamana o Te Whakatōhea Tribal Executive, Te Taraipara. Koia hoki te māngai mō Te Waiariki ki runga ki te Kaunihera Māori o Aotearoa, koia te Hiamana o Te Poari o Te Kāreti o Ōpōtiki. I whakataetae ia kia tū hai Mema Māori mō Nāhinara ki te Tairāwhiti. Koia hoki te Farm Supervisor mō ngā kaupapa ahuhenua a tana matua kēkē a Tā Apirana Ngata.

I pakeke ahau ki runga ki te marae o Terere ki roto o Te Whakatōhea, ko Ngāti Ngahere taku hapū. I ākona ahau e ōku tīpuna ki te whaikōrero, tuatahi nā taku tipuna koroua nā Te Wiremu, nō tana matenga i te tau 1976 ka riro mā taku tipuna kuia mā Kaaterina ahau e tohutohu ki te whaikōrero me te mau patu wahaika, i te mea nā tana koroua a Ngakohu Pera ia i ako ki te mau meremere.

Nō te tau 1979 i hoki mai a Tā Monita Delamere i Kawereau ki Ōpōtiki hai Hekeretari mō Te Whakatōhea Māori Trust Board, ka noho koia taku tohunga tae atu ki tana matenga i te tau 1992. I kuraina ahaun ki te mōteatea me te haka anō hoki i ahau e tamariki ana.

I kuraina ahau ki ngā karakia Ringatū me ōna kōrero me āna tikanga. I kuraina ahau ki roto i te wānanga o Te Whakatōhea i ahau e poniponi ana, ā taea noatia taku taipakeketanga. Nōku e tekamāwaru taku pakeke ka tohungia ahau e Tā Mōnita Delamere hai tohunga Ringatū, ā, kai te mau tonu tērā tūranga ināianei, ā, ko ahau te Hiamana o Te Wainui koia rā te tarahiti whenua o Te Hāhi Ringatū e 600 eka, ko ahau hoki te hiamana o Te Hāhi Ringatū.

Kua whakatōkia noatia ki roto i ahau i taku tamarikitanga te kākano o Te Ringatū.

Kāti, i rumakina ahau ki ngā tikanga tapu o Te Ringatū i ahau e tamariki ana ki ngā rekereke o aku tīpuna ki roto o Te Whakatōhea puta atu ki roto o Te Whānau a Apanui i waenganui i te mātotorutanga o te māoritanga, te mana, te ihi, te wehi me te tapu. Ehara i te mea he ahurei motuhake nōku taku tipuranga ki te ao nei i waenganui i taku iwi. E kao, he Ringatū te nuinga o taku iwi. Haere ai mātou ki ngā Rā ki roto o Te Whakatōhea. Ko ngā Rā kai te kōrerotia i konei, ko ngā rā tapu hai karakia mā Te Ringatū.

Ko te rongō a te taringa i te takutaku a ngā tohunga me te iere a te whakaminenga i ngā waiata, i ngā karakia i ngā haora o te pō, ā, i parangia te tamaiti e te moe, ā, i ngā haora o te atapō, i whakaohongia te wairua o te tamaiti i te moe. Hai ngā tangihanga, hai ngā hura kōhatu, hai ngā huihuinga o te hunga ora, hai ngā tira haere ko te taiapa tūtaki ko Te Ringatū me āna karakia i roto i te pōuri te māramatanga e whiti ana.

Koinei te panehe i tāraitia ai taku iwi me taku ao tamariki, arā ko te haumi i te whakapono Māori me te whakapono Pākehā kia kotahi hai takere mō te waka kawē i taku iwi, hai whawhai mō te mana Māori motuhake. I roto i ngā Rā me ngā akoako (he momo kura) i wānangatia āna kupu whakaari, āna poropiti, āna waiata, āna karakia me āna mahi tipua, nā konā i hikaina ai te ahi tapu a Rāwiri ki te kaunati hikahika e mumura ai ki te kura o Te Kooti mā roto mai i ērā wānanga o ngā tohunga, o ngā ruahine hoki, o te kāhui mōhio ki ngā kōrero, rātou i kai i te tapu.

Ko tōku Ringatūtanga nō ōku tīpuna rā anō. Kua matemate katoa ngā kaumātua i rangona ai e ngā taringa o tōku ngākau, nāna ahau i tohu, i whakatū hai Pou mō te hāhi. Kāore e hapa ka pēnei ahau, tōku ao inā hemo tōku kaha i roto i taku tinana.

Nōku e poniponi ana haere ai ahau ki ngā Rā me ōku kaumātua pakeke. Ka tae ki ngā Rā kua kore ngā tamariki Ringatū i te kura. He pai ki a mātou ki te tōti kura, ko tā mātou he tākaro; he Bullrush, he Kēhua, British pakanga ki ngā Tiamana me te kai. Engari, ina tangi mai te pere kua tarai mātou ki te huna, kātahi ka rongō mātou i te reo o te Pirihimana kua haramai ki te

kimi i a mātou, ā, kua huna anō. Nāwai rā kua mau, ā, kua perea ō mātou taringa, kua hāua rānei ō matou ringaringa, ō mātou waewae ki tana rākau. He rākau tō ngā Pirihimana i ērā wā, kua hāua hoki ko ngā pakeke kua parangia e te moe i roto i te karakia. Ana kua kuhu mātou ki te wharenuī ki te karakia, kua kataina e ngā kaumātua, kua rīriā e ngā kuia kōhete hoki.

Ko Himiona Kahika rāua ko tana tamāhine a Hīria Akurangi ngā kaumātua kawē i ahau ki ngā Rā. I mōhio a Himiona ki a Te Kooti. Nō tōna matenga i te tau 1986 kua 98 ōna tau. Ko tana whare i Terere kāore he wai wera kāore i pā te wai wera ki tana ūpoko i a ia e ora ana. He tapu rawa. Kāore he kīhini i tōna whare nā tōna tapu, haere kē ai a ia ki te whare o Hīria kai ai. Kāore ōna hoa kōrero, te take hai tamariki māna ngā tohunga o taua wā kai ngā whitu tekau, kai ngā waru tekau noa iho te pakeke. Nō te ao kōhatū kē a Himiona, he koroua tapu. Kāore a Himiona i mōhio ki te tuhituhi, he rīpeka tāna tuhi ki te tango moni mai i te pēke. Mōhio ahau i reira ahau e mahi ana, ki te pēke. Engari mō te karakia, hai a ia katoa rawa, ngā karakia katoa. He karakia tāna mahi i te ao, i te pō. He karakia mō te hau, he karakia mō te ua, he karakia mō te kōpere, mō te ruru, mō te moana, mō te pōpokoriki. He karakia mō ngā mea katoa. Nō tōna matenga, i kite rawa ake ia i tana moenga e noho tū ana me te tū o tana ringa. Ae rā i mate ia i a ia e karakia ana. Ki ahau nei i te whakahorohoro i ōna tapu kia kaua e whai wāhi ki a mātou o muri nei.

He wahine tapu a Hīria, he wahine kōhete hoki i te tangata ki te hē ngā mahi. Matakū ngā tāngata i a Hīria, ko ngā mea tāne rawa. He wahine i āta ākona ki ngā karaipitire. Hai tāna o ngā tamariki katoa o Terere koia anake i tukuna ki te Kura Rātapu, ki ngā Mihingare ki te ako i ngā karaipitire. Mō te karakia i a ia katoa. Nāna tonu i whakatakariri tana pāpā i a Himiona i te pānga o te wareware ki a ia. Nā Hīria i whakaako ngā tohunga o Te Whakatōhea, ko ngā koroua ērā i ahau e tamariki ana; ko Te Rama Mītai tērā, ko Reti Williams tērā, ko Te Pāroa Kūrei tērā, ko Te Mokotua Pāpuni tērā. Hai tā te kuia nei nāna rātau katoa i ako i te wānanga nāna i whakatū ki Terere. Anā, i pau te kotahi marama ki roto ki tana wānanga. Ko ngā tohunga ērā, tohunga mātau ki ahau, ki tā te tamaiti titiro, whakaaro, whakaponu o taua wā. Koinei ngā kaumātua, nāna ahau i whakaruku ki ngā wai o Meripā ki te kai i ngā tapu o Te Atua; ko Himiona rāua ko Hīria.

Nō muri rawa mai i hoki mai taku matua a Tā Mōnita Delamere ki te whare o taku kuia noho ai ki a Kaaterina Maxwell, nō te 1978. I hoki mai ia i Kawerau ki te whakahaere i te Poari o Te Whakatōhea. I taku hokinga ki te kāinga i tētahi rangi i muri mai i te kura, i reira e tū ana tētahi kōroua tōrea. Ka titiro mai ki ahau me taku pōhēhē kua whai koroua anō ahau. Ehara hai tūngāne kē a ia ki taku kuia. Ko tāna meatanga mai; “Kia ora, he Ringatū koe?” Ko taku whakahoki, ae. Mai i tērā wā tae atu ki taku haeretanga ki te Whare Wānanga o Waikato i te

tau 1991 ko Mōnita taku maunga, te kaiwhakaturuki i ahau ki ngā mahi Māori e mau ana i ahau i tēnei wā. Ia pō Wenerei ka noho māua ki te “akoako” koira tā māua wānanga. Ka whakaturuki i ahau ki ngā mahi karakia a Te Ringatū; tuatahi ko te karakia “Moata”. Hai tāna me mohio ngā tohunga katoa ki te Moata i te mea hai te atapō rawa tērā karakia, kāore hoki he raiti, nō reira me mātau te tohunga ki te Moata. Hai tāna anō ki te kore koe e mōhio ki te karakia Mōata, ehara koe i Te Ringatū. I roto i ngā Akoako, i ākona ai ahau ki ngā karakia katoa, ko ngā karakia mō te whakaeke marae, te whakamoemiti, te tonu, te muruhara, te tūā tamariki, te hākari me te tuku mō roto i ngā Rā. I ākona hoki ki ngā karakia whakatūwhera whare, hura kōhatū, tuku wairua, nehu tūpāpaku, māuiui katoa atu. He wā tōna kua waea mai ia ki taku mahi i te Poutāpeta ki te kīa mai ahau, kua haere māua ki te whaiwhai kēhua i taua wā tonu, ana, kua mate ahau ki te kōrero ki taku pāhi kua haere ahau, anā, me te whakamārama atu he aha taku mahi hoki. Waimarie ahau i taku pāhi Pākehā. Nāwai kua mōhio taku pāhi, kua āmine mai ki ngā inoi a taku koroua pāpā a Mōnita. Nāna ahau i ako ki ngā mahi Māori katoa, ko te whaikōrero tērā, ko te mōteatea tērā, ko ngā hītoria ērā. Ana tekaumāwaru taku pakeke kua whakatōhunga ahau e Mōnita, kua tū hai tohunga mō taku hapū mō Ngāti Ngahere, mō taku iwi mō Te Whakatōhea. Nō reira toru tekau mā whā tau ahau e whakahau nei i te minitātanga o te maungārongo.

He nui aku kaiwhakahau ki ngā whakaritenga, whakawā a te Atua ki tōku ao tohunga, ko Ema Rogers anō tērā te tuahine o Mōnita. Ko Ema te kaitiaki i tana matua i a Paora Delamere he Poutikanga nō te Hāhi Ringatū mai i tau 1938 – 1981. Ana nā Ema i whangāi ahau ki ngā kōrero mō Te Huamata me Te Pure me te mārātapu. Ko Te Huamata te Rā a Te Ringatū ki te whakatō i ngā kai ki te mārātapu. Ko Te Pure te Rā hauhake i ngā kai i te mārātapu. Ko te mārātapu ko te mārā kua wehea taputia mai ki te Atua.

Ae he tokomaha rātou aku pūkaikura i whakatipu i ahau hai tohunga; ko Tā Mōnita Delamere, ko Pāroa Kūrei, ko Maaka Jones, ko Te Riaki Amoamo, ko Hōhīpera Williams, ko Reti Williams, ko Te Rama Mītai, ko Wairemana Taia, ko Tama Gage, ko Danie Poihipi, ko Mātenga Biddle. Ko rātou ko ngā kaiwhakatakoto tīkanga mōku.

Ko Te Ringatū kai roto i ahau, me ahau hoki kai roto i a ia.

Ko te ao kapa haka, i whānau mai ahau ki te ao kapa haka. Ko tōku kuia ko Kaaterina Maxwell tētahi o ngā kaiako o te kapa haka rongonui o Te Whakatōhea, ko Ngā Pōtiki. Ko taku tuakana a Te Keepa he kaihaka mō Ngā Pōtiki, ko ōku mātua, whaea, tīpuna ērā.

Tae atu ahau ki te kura tuatahi ko ōku tūākana i te haka mō te kapa haka o Ōpōtiki Kāreti i te tau 1971, 72, 73. He kapa toa tō rātou wini i a rātou te whakataetae kapa haka o ngā kura tuarua o te rohe o te South Auchland Secondary Schools mai i Te Kauwhata i te raki ki Tongariro i te tonga, ki Te Whānau-a-Apanui ki te rāwhiti. Ana mātakitaki ahau i a rātou me taku manawanui kia pērā ahau me te mahi haka.

Nō taku tīmatatanga ki te kura tuatahi i uru ahau ki ngā whakataetae o te Delamere Cup, tae rawa ki taku haerenga ki te Kāreti o Ōpōtiki he kapa haka te mahi.

Ā pakeke noa nei ahau kai te haka tonu ahau, i tū ahau ki Te Matatini 2019, he kaiako, he kaitito tonu ahau i roto i te ao kapa haka. Nā te mahi kapa haka kua tae ahau ki ngā tōpito katoa o te ao.

Ko te kapa haka kai roto i ahau me ahau hoki kai roto i te kapa haka.

*Tiwha tiwha te pō  
Ko te pākerewhā  
Ko Arikirangi tēnei rā te haere nei.*

Ko te mana o Te Kooti. E ai ki aku pakeke he mana atua tōna, he mana poropiti tōna, tō Te Kooti. I whānau mai ia i raro i tēnei poropititanga a Te Toiroa Ikarihi i runga ake nei, he tohunga nō Nukutaurua ki te rohe o Te Māhia. Ko te whakamāori i tēnei matakite ka whānau mai tēnei Arikirangi i te wā o te raru i te wā o te Pākehā. E ai ki te kōrero nā Te Toiroa tēnei matakite 1766 i mua noa atu i te taenga mai o te Pākehā. Ko te pākerewhā e matakitehia ana ko te Pākehā, ā, ko te tiwha tiwha te pō ko te pō kerekere tērā, arā e whakaatu ana i te aituā nui, te parekura nui o te iwi Māori i ngā kairiri whenua ki ngā Pākēhā. Ana mutu rawa ake, mate tangata, mate whenua, ko te rironga o te whenua i te rau whaitanga o te patu. Ko te Arikirangi e matakitehia ana, ā koia tonu tērā ko Te Kooti Te Turuki Arikirangi. Nā koia tonu ka tū hai pakihwi kaha mō te iwi Māori ki te pakanga mō te mana Māori motuhake, hai kaiātete ki te mana o Wikitōria. Nō reira koirā te mana o Te Kooti i matakitehia tana whānautanga mai ki te ao ki te ārahi i tōna iwi Māori i roto i te raru nui o taua wā, taha kikokiko, taha wairua.

*Hikohiko te uira  
Papā te whatitiri  
Whakahekeheke ana mai i runga o Tūranga rā e  
E i aha tērā ko te mana o Kuini pea  
E awhi ana i te tikanga ka korikori te ture whakarunga  
Ui atu ki a Mita Renata nō wai tērā pere? Hai aha tērā pere!  
Kai te kimi tonu ake te oranga mō te iwi Māori e, ara kai runga rānei, kai raro rānei, kai kō  
rānei, anei ake rānei  
Hi auē hī!*

Kai roto i tēnei haka nā Te Kooti, i hakaina e ia ki Ōmarumutu Pepuere 1889 ki te rohe o Te Whakatōhea i tana whakanana ki te hoki ki Tūranga ki te whakatūwhera i te whare ko Te Poho o Pikihero, he whare i hangaia mōna. Hoi anō i aukatingia tana ara e te ture ka peka ia ki Ōmarumutu i hakaina te haka nei. I roto i te haka nei kai te whakahēngia e ia te mana o Kuini Wikitōria ki te whenua nei o Aotearoa. Kai te whakahēngia e ia te mana o te Pākehā ki runga ki te whenua nei. Arā, kai te whakahē i ngā pere o ngā hāhi Pākehā me ā rātou mahi whānako whenua, pēhi i ngā tikanga a te Māori me ōna Atua. Ko tāna e kīa nā ko ia te oranga mō te iwi Māori, arā he pono tāna pere, he pono tōna whakapono. Ko tōna whakapono te waka hai kawē

i tōna iwi Māori ki te oranga tonutanga e ai ki tāna haka i runga ake nei. Koinei tētahi taurira, mātāpono āna i te awe o Te Kooti i hira ai a Te Whakatōhea, i tahuri tēnei iwi ki te whai i a ia me tana whakaponono me āna kupu whakaari.

He aha i pēnei rawa ai te kaha o tā Te Whakatōhea tuku i a ia, kūpapa rawa iho ki raro ki te maru o Te Kooti? Nā te mea i raupatutia te roi o te whenua, arā 144, 000 eka a Te Whakatōhea mō te hātepetanga i a Te Wākana i te tau 1865. Ahakoa nā Te Kaiwhatu, arā nā Kereopa Te Rau o Ngāti Rangiwewehi, Te Arawa a Te Wākana i kōhuru. I whakapae tekatia nā tētahi rangatira o Te Whakatōhea, nā Te Mokomoko kē a Te Wākana i kōhuru. Ae he whakatakoto kara kē, arā mahi nukarau e riro kē ai te onematua, arā te mōmonatanga o te whenua i te Karauna. Koirā kē. He kīngi a Te Whakatōhea i tōna kīngitanga, aoinaake he taurekareka kē a Te Whakatōhea i tōna whenua, he whakarau, i roto i te ioka whakapononga tangata a te Pākehā. Koirā i pērā rawa te kaha o tā Te Whakatōhea kūpapa ki raro i te mana Atua o Te Kooti. I pūmau te whakaponono o Te Whakatōhea ko Te Kooti te waka, koia hai matua mō te pani, ko te pani ki a Te Whakatōhea, i pani ki te whenua, i pani ki te tangata, i pani ki te tikanga.

*“Te ao o te pārerā e rere pou pou rā*

*Hinga mai rā konei...*

*Tāua e haere..., hai hoatu i ahau...*

*Ngā hiwi ki Tarawera rā, kia mārama ahau...*

*Te whakamau ki waho rā. He waka ahau e te iwi...*

*Kia tauheretia ka roa i te hurihanga?...*

*Ka kuhu au ki te ture... hai matua mō te pani e.”*

Ko te waiata o runga ake nei, he waiata tēnei nā Te Kooti, e whakaatu ana i tana tū hai matua mō ngā iwi, hai Matua tangata.

Arā, koia te oranga mō te iwi Māori e, ara kai runga rānei, kai raro rānei, kai kō rānei, anei ake rānei. Ko Te Kooti te Matua Tangata mō tōna iwi Māori, otirā mō Te Whakatōhea e ai ki tāna haka, i hakaina ki runga o Ōmarumutu, e ai hoki ki tāna mōteatea, “Te ao a te pārerā”. Koirā i tahuri ai a Te Whakatōhea hai iwi mō Te Matua Tangata, hai iwi Ringatū a Te Whakatōhea. Koia hai matua mō te pani; i pani ki te whenua, i pani ki te tangata, i pani ki te tikanga.

### **1.2.1 Te Whakatōhea me te Kapa Haka**

He iwi haka a Te Whakatōhea mai i rā anō i ngā tīpuna. Kai konā ngā haka me ngā mōteatea a Te Whakatōhea e takoto ana i roto i ngā pukapuka nā te ringa tīpuna i tuhi, kai ngā whānau e

puritia ana; kai ngā pukapuka Ngā Mōteatea a Ngata rāua ko Jones hoki. Ko te taonga nei a te haka kai ngā ingoa anō o te iwi e mau ana ki tōna āhua, ki tōna ritenga, ki tōna whenua, ki ōna maunga, ko te haka tērā.

He kapa haka tō ngā hapū katoa o Te Whakatōhea o mua he whakataetae ā marae i ngā tau o te pakanga tuarua o te ao. Nō muri mai ka tū ko ngā kapa haka toa o te iwi, ko Waioweka, ko Ngā Pōtiki ko ngā kapa ēnei i puta ai te toherauariki o te iwi ki ngā mahi kapa haka, ā, taka rawa mai ki a Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti o ēnei rā tonu nei. Kāore te hua mai ki Te Whakatōhea i roto i ēnei mahi a te kapa haka, ko te mau ki tōna ake mita, ki āna ake kupu, ki ōna whakapapa, ki ōna hīoria, ki āna take whawhai ki ngā mahi tōrangapū.

Kāore e rerekē ake a Te Whakatōhea i roto i te haka ki ētahi atu iwi. Ina rā he haka kura huna nō tēnā hapū, nō tēnā iwi, nō tēnā waka. Ko tāna he whakangahau i ngā manuhiri, he whakangahau i te iwi, he whakangahau i te tangata. Ko tāna anō hoki he whakarangatira i te manuhiri, he whakarangatira hoki i te iwi, arā ko tāna anō hoki he pupuri i te mana ariki o te iwi i roto i tā te manuhiri titiro, whakaaro hoki.

Ae he kura nō te iwi.

### **1.2.2 Taumāhekeheke**

Kua roa tēnei mea te whakataetae kapa haka e whakahaeretia ana puta ki ngā marae, puta ki ngā hapū, puta ki ngā iwi, puta ki te motu. Ā, taka rawa mai ki ēnei rā ki te ao, arā te iwi Māori kua manene ki te motu kua tū ā rātou kapa haka, kua tū ā rātou mahi whakataetae hoki.

Ka aua atu ētahi whakataetae e whakahaeretia ana, ā kaumātuatia ana i roto i ngā iwi. I uru anō hoki ngā hāhi ki roto i ngā mahi whakataetae haka nei. Ko tō te Hāhi Katorika, arā te Hui Aranga i whakatūngia i te tau 1946 me tō te Hāhi Mihingare i te tau 1952, anā he hui nui tonu ēnei whakataetae ki ngā iwi me ngā Māori kai roto i ēnei whakapono. Ko te tūāpapa o ēnei whakataetae ko te pupuri i te reo Māori ki roto i ēnei hāhi, ko te haere kōtui te iwi Māori me te hāhi, me te whakapūmau i ngā tikanga a te Māori ki roto hoki ki ēnei hāhi.

Tēnā ka putē aku kamo ki te Tairāwhiti me tāna kaupapa ko Tamararo. I tīmataria tēnei kaupapa i te tau 1952, ā e haere tonu ana i ēnei rā.

Ki roto anō o Te Whakatōhea he pērā anō i muri mai i te pakanga tuarua o te ao, he kapa haka anō tō tērā hapū, he kapa haka tō tērā hapū i ngā whā tekau o tērā rau tau. Ana kua whakakao i

ngā hapū o Te Whakatōhea, anā kua whakataetae rātou ki a rātou tonu. Ko ērā kapa haka ko te nuinga he wāhine, waimaria me he tāne, te take, kua haere kē ngā tāne ki te tūtaki i ngā ahi a Tūmataunga ki tāwāhi, rānei kua matemate kē rātou i te pae o te riri. Ko tōna rite ki te kapa haka a Tinirau, he wāhine te nuinga.

I hau atu ēnei mahi ki roto i ngā tau o te rima tekau o tērā rau tau i whakatūngia ngā kapa haka a Ngā Pōtiki. Ko te mana whakahaere o tēnei kapa haka ko Rāwinia Rangī nee Wehi. Ko te kuia nei a Rāwinia hai tuahine ki te matua o Ngāpō Wehi.

Nō ngā tau o te ono tekau o tērā rau tau i whakatūngia e Hēni Green ko te kapa haka Waioweka Youth Club.

I uru ēnei kapa haka ki te Koroneihana me te Ōhope Cup me te WD & HO Wills Tabacco Cup ki Tauranga. Nō te tīmatanga o te New Zealand Polynesian Festival i te tau 1972, e karangatia ana ko Te Matatini ināianei, i uru anō ēnei kapa toa e rua o Te Whakatōhea.

He wā tōna ka whakamoetia ēnei kapa haka toa. Nō ngā whitu tekau i whakamoea a Ngāpōtiki, ā, i kaha tonu a Waioweka tae atu ki te tau 1988 ka whakamoetia.

Hoi anō i roto i ngā tau o ngā whitu tekau ki ngā iwa tekau he kapa anō o Te Whakatōhea, ko Ngāti Ira, ko Te Whakatōhea hoki, engari ka whakamoetia.

I te tau 1957 i tū anō i a Rāwinia Rangī te whakataetae kapa haka mō ngā kura tuatahi, e kīa nei ko te Delamere Cup. Ko ngā kura ka uru mai i raro i te mana o tēnei kapu ko Te Whakatōhea, Ngāi Tai, Te Whānau-a-Apanui, huri tonu atu ki roto o Te Waimana-kaaku Tūhoe. I tūtaki a Rāwinia ki a Takamoana (Bill) Delamere me te whakapuaki i tana kaupapa ki a ia mō te whakataetae kapa haka mō ngā tamariki kura. Ka hoatu nā e Takamoana he kapu ki a Rāwinia. Ka hanatu atu a Rāwinia ka haere kia kite i te kuia mau moko o Kutarere ko Te Onewhero māna e tapa he ingoa ki runga ki te kapu. Ko tā te kuia rā nā wai te kapu? Ka whakautua atu e Rāwinia nā Takamoana Delamere, ko te whakautu a Te Onewhero, ā koinā te ingoa ko te Delamere Cup.

Ko te kapu nei koinei te kōhanga o te mahi kapa haka mō ngā iwi nei kai raro i te maru o te Delamere Cup nei. Ia tau, ia tau tū ai tēnei whakataetae ki te Kāreti o Ōpōtiki. Nō reira mō Te Whakatōhea koinei te kōhanga whakangungu ai i ngā uri a Muriwai, whakakoikoi o rātou niho ki te haka, ki te meremere, ki te taiaha.

Nō te tau 1995, Hānuere te marama i karangatia te hui ā iwi ki Terere marae. Ko te kaupapa o te hui rā ko te whakatū kapa haka mō te iwi i te mea kua whakamoea noatia atu ngā kapa koroua o Te Whakatōhea, arā, ko Waioweka, ko Ngāpōtiki, ko Ngāti Ira, ko Te Whakatōhea. I karangatia e Te Whakatōhea kia tū te Whakataetae ā Rohe o Mātaatua ki roto o Te Whakatōhea i taua tau rā 1995. Nō te Hānuere o taua tau, ko tōna ono tekau tāngata, he rangatahi te nuinga me ētahi kaumātua ko Hōhipera Williams, ko Reti Williams, ko Wharekawa Kūrei, ko Witi Kūrei, ko Maki Tai rātou mā i kao ki runga o Terere. He mea karanga te hui e Johnnie Kūrei me tana kī atu ki te iwi nāku i karanga. I reira i wānangatia ai e ngā pakeke me mātou he ingoa mō te kapa haka hou nei. Ko Te Whakatōhea tonu tētahi ingoa i kaha te tohea. I te mutunga nāku i kī ko Ōpōtiki-Mai-Tawhit. Ana, i whakatauhia, ā, i whakaaengia e te katoa ko Ōpōtiki-Mai-Tawhit hai ingoa mō te kapa haka. Ko te take i tapaina pērātia ai e ahau, i kīa e ahau ki ngā kaumātua; e hara i te mea ko ngā kaihaka ka uru mai ki te kapa haka nei he Whakatōhea taketake ko ētahi he manene, he hunaonga rānei hoki rātou. Hai tāku ki te iwi ko te ingoa Ōpōtiki-Mai-Tawhiti ahakoa he ingoa taketake nō Te Whakatōhea, kai roto i te ingoa nei ngā kōrero mō ngā pōtiki a Tarawa i ārahina mai ia i Hawaiki ki Paerata ki ngā takutai o Ōpōtiki. I whakatauiratia ai ko ngā rāwaho ki ngā pōtiki rā i haramai i whenua kē, i wāhi kē.

### **1.2.3 He Kura hoki ahau**

Ko te tāhuhu o te kapa haka nei o Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti ko Te Ringatū me āna tikanga. He iwi Ringatū a Te Whakatōhea ko te nuinga o ngā kaihaka i tipu ake i roto i Te Ringatū me ōna Rā me āna tikanga tapu. Kāore e hapa ia mahinga a te kapa ka tīmata ki te karakia ka mutu anō hoki ki te karakia. Ia Rāhoroi 10am ka Hāpati te kapa haka, ia 7pm ka karakia whakamoemiti te kapa haka.

I roto i ngā tau rua tekau mā whā o te kapa haka, kua pakari haere te rangatahi ki te kawē i ngā karakia ahiahi. Kua waea kē rātou, kua kore e matakū ki te tū pēnā ka tohua tētahi ki te kawē i te karakia ahiahi rā. Ko te rangatahi kai te kōrerotia he kōhungahunga tonu, kāore ānō rānei i whānau mai i te wā i tīmata ai a Ōpōtiki-Mai-Tawhiti. Anā pakeke haere mai te rangatahi nei kua kite kē rātou, kua mārama kē rātou ki ngā whakahaere, ki ngā tikanga. Ko tā te kapa nei he tuku ki a rātou ngā whakahaere he ara tikanga tēnei e whakangungu ai te rangatahi mō te āpōpō, e whakapakari ai Te Ringatū ki roto o Te Whakatōhea mō te anamata, ā kia tū rangatira ai te iwi mō te ake, ake, ake.



*Whakaahua 1: Ricky-Lee Mitai, kaitātaki tāne o te motu, Te Matatini 2015. Ko te mana whakaae, Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti.*

Kai roto hoki i ngā waiata me ngā haka a te kapa nei e whakatauiratia ana he kupu whakaari, he rerenga kōrero mai i ngā karakia me ngā mōteatea a Te Matua tangata. He momo kura tēnei, e karangatia ana te kura nei e Te Rīngatū, he akoako. Ko te kura nui, ko te kura roa, ko te kura nā Tūhaepō, arā ko te kura tēnei, ko tōna pūtaketanga mai ko te pō rā anō i tō mai te ihu ki te whai ao, ki te ao mārama, arā; *“I te tīmatanga te kupu ko te Atua te kupu i te Atua anō tēnei kupu i te tīmatanga”*. Tihei mauriora!

### **1.3 Te Ara Tōtara**

Hāngai ana te ara tōtara o te tuhikura nei ki te oriori nā Te Matua tangata mō tōna whakapono hou; *“I tipu ake te pono i te whenua, i titiro iho te tika i te rangi, ā ka hōmai e Ihowā te mea pai ka tukua mai ōna hua e tō tātou whenua”*, arā ko *‘Pinepine te kura’*. Ka tohea te oriori nei i te ngutu o te tāngata, nā Ngāti Kahungunu kē te waiata nei. Ae he tika tonu rā, engari ko tā Te Matua tangata he turuki i tana kaupapa mā te kupu whakaari, arā he kupu poropiti e whakahau ake ana i tōna iwi, mā te mōteatea hoki. Ko tā Te Matua tangata he tiki atu i ngā mōteatea kai te rongonui whānuitia puta noa i te whenua. He ngawari ki te whakaako ki tana iwi i te mea kua mātau kē rātou ki taua mōteatea, kua mātau kē rātou ki āna kōrero tapu, tūāuriuri, whāioio. Hoi anō i te mutunga ko tā te rangi waiata he waka noa iho hai kawē i te tapu manumea o te kupu ki te hoi o te taringa e areare ana me te whakarongo atu. Anā koinā tā Te Turuki, he whakaturuki i tāna kupu mā ngā mōteatea nei, turuki, turuki, paneke paneke haramai te toki haumi e, hui e, tāiki e

*Pinepine te kura,  
Hau te kura, whanake te kura i raro i Awarua,  
ko te kura nui, ko te kura roa, ko te kura nā Tūhaepō....*

*Tēnei te tira hou, tēnei haramai nei,  
Nā Te Rongopai, nā Te Rangimārire,  
Nau mai ka haere tāua ki roto o Tūranga,  
Kia whakangungua koe ki te mīni, ki te hōari, ki te pūhūrihuri,  
Ngā rākau kōhuru a te Pākēhā e takoto nei....*

*Piki ake kake ake i te Toihuarewa,  
Te ara o Ēnoka i piki ai ki runga,  
I rokohinga atu rā maikuku mā kākā,  
Hapainga te aroha he waha i pā mai,  
Taku wahine pūrotu taku tāne pūrotu,  
Kōrua ko te tau e.....*

*Whakakake e te ture,  
I te kīnga o tō waha,  
Nō Runga rawa koe, nō te mana o Kuini e tū nei,  
Nā Rangi-tū koe, nā Te Kotahitanga, nā Tāne rawa koe,  
Nā Pure-i-tawhiti, nā Kaunati hikahika,  
Te kaunati a tō tipuna a Rāwiri,  
I haere ai i tere i nui ao,  
Ka hika i tana ahi,  
Kimihia e te iwi te ara o te tikanga,  
I pai ai te noho i te ao nei....*

*Kai Tūranga-nui he matapū,  
Hai patu i te tangata kia mate,  
Nā te mauāhara hoki rā i haere ai i te ara,  
Ko koutou anake i titi kaha mai nā,  
E kai ō koutou mata i te kohu e tatao,  
I waho i te moana o toka āhuru,  
Ko te kopa o te whare ko te ara tōtara.....*

*Te huawai parae,  
Koia te kōrari,  
Tēnei e te iwi te wā ki tō koutou whanaunga,  
Te wāua mai nei ko te hua i te kai,  
E kai ō koutou mata ki runga o Pāparatū.....*

*Karokaro i te taituri ō koutou taringa kia areare ai,  
Me te whakarongo atu,  
Kīnga kī mai kua ahau e patua,  
Mōku anake te ārai o Tūranga,  
Te matenga o Māhaki i mau ai te rongopati,  
I mātakitakina ai koia hika mātakitaki,  
Whiti kē mai koe i rahirahi nei.....*

*Te ai ō mahara ka mate au ki Waerengahika,  
Te ki mai koe me whakawā mārire,  
Hopu ana koe i ahau kawē ana ki Wharekauri,  
Ka manene mai au i rō te wai,  
Ka ū ana ko Whareongaonga,  
Ka pā ko te waha o Te Kāwana,  
E hika mā e,  
Inā ia te kai tōia ki uta rā haehaetia ai,  
Tunua ai te manawa ka kainga ka pau,  
Mō Koro-Timutimu, mō Tauranga-koau,  
Koia te riri poka noa,  
Ka kai ki te waipiro, ka kai ki te whakamā ki te mauāhara,  
Me whakarere atu ēnā mahi kino,  
E hika mā e.....i.*

Ko te oriori nei koiane te mōteatea rongonui o ana waiata katoa. Kai te ranga tonu te hari ki ngā marae whare puta ki ngā iwi Ringatū o te motu. I titoa e ia tēnei oriori i te 1 o Hanuere 1888 mō te tānga i te kawa o Te Rongopai te whare i hangaia mōna ki Waituhi, ki te rohe o Te Aitanga a Māhaki.

He take anō tā Te Matua tangata tiki atu i te oriori a Ngāti Kahungunu hai waiata māna, hai waiata hoki mō tōna whakapono me tōna iwi Ringatū. He tikanga anō tā Te Matua tangata whai

atu i te oriori a Ngāti Kahungunu hai waiata māna, hai waiata hoki mō tōna whakapono me tōna iwi Ringatū.

Ko te oriori nei ki ahau mō tana whakapono hou mō Te Ringatū. Kai roto i te oriori te kupu tapu manumea mō te takenga mai o Te Ringatū. Koinā rā tā te oriori kaupapa he whakapuaki i ngā kōrero o tāukiuki e pā ana ki te kaupapa o te oriori. Anā i pēnei tā Te Matua tangata, ahakoa he oranga poto tō Te Ringatū i tōna ōrokotīmatanga he nui tonu ngā kōrero mōna, mō tōna poropiti, mō tōna iwi hoki. Kai konā tāku whakataukī e pēnei ana; “*Oranga tōiti, tōnui kōrero.*” Anā, i pēnei ai a Te Matua tangata i tāraia katoatia ngā kōrero nunui, ngā puaroa ki roto ki tana oriori. Arā, ko ngā kōrero whakapapa mōna, mō ngā pakanga; ko Waerenga-ā-Hika tērā, ko tana mau harakoretanga atu ki Wharekauri me tana rerenga anō hoki i runga kaipuke ki Whareongaonga me tāna mau ki te rangimarie ki a Rongo-taketake, ērā. Hāunga anō tēnei i hāngai tonu ki te whare tapu a Te Rongopai, anā ko tōna whakatūwheratanga tērā, ko te whare tērā o Te Aitanga a Māhaki i tāpaea hai whare karakia mō Te Ringatū. Ko te whakapono tonu te whare, ko te whare tonu te whakapono.

I whakaritea e Te Matua tangata a ia tonu ki ētahi tīpuna, āhuetanga kai roto i te waiata nei. I whakaritea hoki a Ngāti Kahungunu ki te tipua kaitangata a Koro-Timutimu atu i Ahuriri puta ki Tauranga-koau. Ana i whakaritea koia tonu ki ngā tāngata i kaingia e Korotimutimu, he whakaatu tēnei i te kaha whai a Ngāti Kahungunu ki te patu i a ia kia mate.

Arā noa atu ngā kōrero, arā noa atu ngā pūrākau kai roto i te oriori nei. Ko tētahi atu take i tikina ai e Te Matua tangata te oriori nei a Ngāti Kahungunu ko te whakapapa here i a Te Aitanga a Mahaki ki a Ngati Kahungunu. He tūranga whānau tonu, ko te taura a roto. Ko Tauheikurī i moe i a Tamataipūnoa te taina o Tūtāmure. Ko Tauheikurī ko te kōkā o Mahaki, koia te tamāhine a Kahungunu tipuna, tangata. Nō reira kua mōhio whānuitia kētia a *Pinepine te kura* ki roto o Tūranga. Nō reira ko te tikanga ka tere te hopu a Te Aitanga a Māhaki otirā Te Ringatū i runga i tēnei tūāhuetanga tito, he mana atua tōna, tō Te Matua tangata.

Hai takapau mō te tuhikura nei kua wehea mai ngā kupu mai i te tīmatatanga o te waiata nei kia ono ōna ūpoko, he kura katoa. Ko te whakaatu tērā i te nui puipuiaki whakahirahira o ia ūpoko, ko te mana, ko te ihi, ko te wehi, ko te tapu.

Nō reira i pēnei ai te tiki mai i te kupu kura; tuatahi kia eke ai te wairua o te tuhikura nei ki te mana, te ihi, te wehi me te tapu o Te Whakatōhea. Tuarua kia hāngai pū te tapu manumea o tēnei tuhikura ki runga ki te tapu o Te Matua tangata me tana whakapono ko Te Ringatū. Tuatoru kia kupu whakaari mai ai tēnei wānanga ko Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti. Tuawhā, kia

whakaairo anō te kairangi o tēnei tuhikura kia kānapanapa mai rā i te kāniuniutanga o Rangi e tū iho, e karangatia ana he kura maiaoirererangi, he kurawāwāwāwai o te mātauranga.

He tikanga anō hoki tō te kupu kura nei. Arā he ako, he mātauranga, he pūmahara, he titiro ki te pae tawhiti, he whakaū, he whakapūmau, he mana, he tapu, he taonga. Koianeī ēnei kura, kai roto i ia ūpoko he kura anō, he rūnanga anō, he wānanga anō.

#### 1.4 Ngā Kura

Ko te kuramahora e whakamahuki ana i ngā kura hai tā te oriori nei e takoto ake nei kia kitea ai tōna tikanga ake me tōna hāngai ki te Ara Tōtara o te tuhikura nei.

**“*Pinepine te kura*”**: Kai te taki tēnei rerenga i te kāmeheheha o te kura nei. Ko tēnei kura he mounga, he kōkōkairangi. Ko te pū ko te more o te iwi. Ko te pinepine nei he iti, he kura hou, he tipu hou. Ko te kura e kōrerotia ana mō tētahi tamaiti rangatira kātahi ka whānau mai ki tā Ngāti Kahungunu. Ki tā Te Matua tangata ko te tipu hou, ko tōna whakapono hou.

#### *Himene Tangi A Mohi*

*Kia whai taringa mai e ngā iwi... Whakarongo mai... ki te kupu a Ihowā... Ka tangihia... e ia i roto i te tau... tōna iwi... Ka patapata iho tāna whakaoranga... ānō he ua... Ka māturuturu iho... tāna kupu... me te tōmairangi... ānō he ua... pūnehunehu ki runga... i te tipu hou...*

Ko te karakia o runga ake nei, ko te karakia o te tau a Te Hāhi Ringatū.

*Pinepine te kura* i roto i te tuhikura nei, ko tāna he taki i te kaupapa, he waerea i te ara rangakura, tōna whāinga me te tūāpapa o tēnei rangakura. Āpiti atu ki tēnā ka whakamāramatia ki te whatukura ngā kaupapa matua kai te whakatewhatewhatia me te whakaatu i te ara tōtara ka hiki tapuwae, ka hōkai nuku, ka hōkai rangi hai amo rangi ake i te whakaaro, hai amo ake i te tuhikura o tēnei rangakura.

**“*Hau te kura*”**: Ko te taenga tuatahitanga mai o tētahi taonga me kī anō rā ko te tīmatanga tēnei. He momo karakia anō tēnei mea te hau, arā ko te whāngai hau ka tohia ki tētahi atua te hau o te tamaiti, he karakia hoki e whakaū i te tapu. Ko te hau hoki o te kupu rangakura e kīa nei he rangakura. Ko te hau i konei ko te whakaatu, ko te rongorānei, anā ko te pāhō kia rangona ai te rongopai, rongonui, rongomaiwhiti, rongorā whare, rongorā whatiwhati me te rongorā kino .

*Hau te kura* i roto i te tuhikura nei, ko tōna aronga ko ngā tikanga rangakura e karangatia ana i te tuhikura nei; he rangakura. Ko ngā rangakura ka whakamahia hai kohikohi i ngā kōrero, i ngā mātauranga mō tēnei tuhikura. Ka tūhura hoki i ngā whakaaro me ngā whakaōhiti e pā ana ki te rangakura, tūturu ko te rangakura Māori. I te mea he kaupapa Māori tēnei, kai roto hoki ngā whakaaro Māori, ngā whakapono o te Māori me ngā whakamārama anō hoki ki ēnei. Nō reira he Māori te tikanga rangakura, ā, kai roto hoki ngā whakapono o te Māori, ngā tikanga a te Māori me ngā whakaaro o te Māori hai whakaū, whakapūmau, hai pūtiki i ngā whakaōhiti, moengā rangakura hoki.

**“Whanake te kura i raro i Awarua”:** E mātai ihotia ana te whanaketanga o tēnei kura, arā tōna ngaruru, kia māia, kia toa.

Ko Awarua he kāinga tēnei kai Hawaiki, ko tōna kōrero koiane te pū o te ao Māori. Ko ngā mea Māori katoa ko tōna pūtakenga mai tēnei, i ahua noa mai tōna āhua i Awarua. Nā te pakanga te take i wehe ai ngā tīpuna i Awarua, anā i whanake mai i Awarua, mai i te mate ki te ora. Ko te whakataukī o reira: “*Auaka tumutumu te kura i Awarua*”, mō ngā karakia, mō ngā mahi kia kaua e tumutumu e mutu ( Ngata, 1990. p.60).

*Whanake te kura i raro i Awarua* i roto i te tuhikura nei. Ko te Awarua tōnu ānō ki te oriori koia ko te pūtaketangatanga o Te Whakatōhea i te pū, i te more, i te weu, i te aka, i te rea, i te tipu. I konei ka whakatewhatewhatia ai, ka matapakitia ai a Te Whakatōhea. Ka uruparengia ngā urupounamu pēnei, ko wai a Te Whakatōhea, ā, kai hea ō rātou pouwhenua? Ka mātaitia ihotia tēnei wāhanga ko te whakapapa, ngā atua, ngā tīpuna, ngā waka me te kōrero ōnehe. Ka whakatewhatewhatia te pānga mai o tauīwi ki te iwi me te whakaatu i ngā kaupapa nunui i pā ki te whanaketanga o te iwi, ko te raupatu tērā, ko te whakarau tāngata tērā. Hai kaupapa whakamutunga ko te whakatewhatewha i te tū ā Te Whakatōhea i te nāiane. E hāngai tonu te whakataukī: “*Auaka tumutumu te kura i Awarua*”, arā, mō ngā kōrero mō Te Whakatōhea kia kaua e tumutumu e mutu.

**“Ko te kura nui”:** Kai te pāhō tēnei rārangi i te karera o te kura nei ki te iwi, he kura nui. He whakaatu i te manawa nui o te iwi ki te kura nei.

Ko te kura nui ka tūhuratia ake te pānga o Te Kooti ki te iwi o Te Whakatōhea me tōna tūākiri. Ka tīmata i konei te whakapapa haere i tōna ao, āna nekeneke, tāna whakakaupapa i tōna whakapono hou, Te Ringatū. Ka tirohia te taenga atu ki roto o Te Whakatōhea, me tōna pānga ki runga ki te iwi. E toru ngā kaupapa motuhake ka whakatewhatewhatia i tēnei wāhanga, ko wai a Te Kooti, he aha te whakapapa o Te Kooti ki a Te Whakatōhea, he aha i hinga nui ai a

Te Whakatōhea ki raro i te mana o Te Kooti, ko ngā waiata a Te Matua tangata, ko ngā akoako a Te Matua tangata me ngā kupu whakaari a Te Matua tangata. Ka whakatewhatewha ngātahitia ēnei tūāhuatanga o Te Matua tangata kia kite he momo pānga pēhea ōna ki a Te Whakatōhea.

**“Ko te kura roa”:** He pēnei anō ki tō kura nui kōrero. He kahotea ki te iwi he manawa roa nō te iwi ki te kura nei. He whakapapa, he taura here e kore e motukia, kia kaua e tumutumu e mutu.

Ko te kura roa ka hōparatia te kapa haka. Ka matapakitia i roto i tēnei kura te ōrokohanga maitanga o tēnei mea te kapa haka me te mātai iho mai i te tirohanga Māori, tirohanga tūturu. Kātahi ka whāia haeretia te whanaketanga me tōna kukunetanga ki roto ki te ao hou me tōna tiputanga ki tōna āhuatanga kai te mōhiotia i tēnei rā. I konei ka matapakitia a Te Whakatōhea me te haka. Anā kai roto i tēnei rangakura, he rangakura motuhake o Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti. Kai roto i tēnei wāhanga ka matapakitia he aha te kapa haka ki a Te Whakatōhea. Ka karia ake te whanaketanga i te reo, ngā tikanga, ngā kōrero ōnehe, mātauranga, ōhanga, mahi, hauora, mana o Te Whakatōhea mā roto mai i te wānanga nei o Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti.

**“Ko te kura nā Tuhaepo”:** Ko Tūhaepō e ai ki te oriori a Ngāti Kahungunu; kai te kōrero a Tarakawa, 1893, p. 222; ka whiua ngā kura nei. Ko ngā ingoa o aua kura nei ko Tu-he-po [Tū-hae-pō], ko Tu-he-ao [Tū-hae-ao].

Ko tāku whakamāori i tā Te Matua tangata tiki mai i a Tūhaepō nei kua whakaritea ki a Tūmatauea i haehaetia ngā ringaringa me ngā waewae o Rangi e tū iho nei me Papa e takoto nei, anā i wehea ai te pō me te ao, i puta ngā tama a Rangi ki te whai ao, ki te ao mārama. Anei rā te ao mārama i wehe mai ai ngā tīpuna i Hawaiki mātotoru me ōna take ka rīriri, kainguha, kaitauā, kaitangata. I tae mai rātou ki Aotearoa, ki te whai ao, ki te ao mārama. Tīhei mauriora

I konei ka titikaha, ka pūtiki, ka pikitūrangitia ngā kura ko konei ngā matapō kite ai, ngā turi rongo ai, ngā whango kōrero ai i ngā hauhaketanga i ngā tūāporo o tēnei tuhikura ka kuramahoratia ki te ao. Ko te pupuri, ko te whakawhanake a Te Whakatōhea ki tōna tuakiri. Ka kitea ngā pepēhītanga i te muranga i te roi o tōna whenua, ko te ā i te iwi ki te noho ki tētahi whenua rāhui anō he iwi taketake nō Amerika. Ko te rironga o ngā tikanga tērā, ko te rironga o te reo tērā, ko te rawakore tērā, ko te māuiui tērā, ko te koremahi tērā, ko te noho a te tūtūā tērā, ko te korewhenua tērā, ko te noho pononga tērā, ko te harakore tērā.

Ka kuramahoratia te pānga o Te Matua tangata ki te pane o Te Whakatōhea e kimi ana i te ara tōtara kia pai ai te noho i te ao nei. Ko te whakapono hai waka mō ngā tūmanako o te iwi ki te paepaekaiāwhātia ngā iHINGA moana, ngā wharenga moana, ngā mararanga moana ki te pupuri i te tuakiri o Te Whakatōhea mā roto mai i ngā tikanga a Te Ringatū. Ko Te Ringatū he waka pupuri tonu i ngā tikanga Māori, a Te Whakatōhea tonu, ko ngā karakia ēra, ko ngā mōteatea ēra, ko ngā whaikōrero ēra, ko ngā karanga ēra, ko te noho Māori tērā ki runga marae, ki rō wharenuī, ko te noho ā hapu, ā iwi, ā waka tērā. E ai ki a Te Kooti; *“Kimihia e te iwi te ara o te tikanga i pai ai te noho i te ao nei”*.

Ka kuramahoratia tēnei kura a Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti me tāna paepaekaiāwhātia ngā iHINGA moana, ngā wharenga moana, ngā mararanga moana ki te pupuri i te tuakiri o Te Whakatōhea mā roto mai i ngā tikanga a Te Whakatōhea me ngā tikanga a Te Ringatū hoki. Ko Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti he waka anō o roto mai i te waka nui o Te Ringatū; ko tāna he waka pupuri tonu i ngā tikanga a Te Whakatōhea tonu, ko ngā karakia ēra, ko ngā mōteatea ēra, ko ngā whaikōrero ēra, ko ngā karanga ēra, ko te noho Māori tērā ki runga marae, ki rō wharenuī, ko te noho ā hapu, ā iwi, ā waka tērā. Ko Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti te kura roa e whakawhanake ana i te reo, ngā tikanga, ngā kōrero ōnehe, mātauranga, ōhanga, mahi, hauora, mana o Te Whakatōhea me te pupuri, tiaki, whakarauora i te tuakiri o Te Whakatōhea mā roto mai i ngā mahi kapa haka, i raro i ngā whakahaunga, whakawākanga o Te Ringatū i āna kupu whakaari. Ka kīa a Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti he whare wānanga.

Ko te putanga mai o te iwi i te ioka whakapononga tangata, iwi, tikanga. Kua mātauranga, kai te Māori ā tikanga, ā whakaaro, ā whakapono ki a ia anō i runga i te ngākau whakaiti, i runga anō i te ngākau whakahīhi ki a ia anō. Ae kua hara mai nei, hai arataki i te iwi i roto i ngā tōrangapū e ora ai te iwi i runga anō hoki i te whakaaro Māori. I puta i Te Matua tangata tana kupu whakaari; *“He kura ahau”*. Anei rā te te kura; *“Pinepine te kura, hau te kura, whanake te kura i raro i Awarua, ko te kura nui, ko te kura roa, ko te kura nā Tūhaepō. Tēnei te tira hou, tēnei hara mai nei”*.

**“Tēnei te tirahou”:** I roto i te oriori a Ngāti Kahungunu kai te kōrero tēnei rerenga mō te tangata tauhou kua tae ake. I roto i tērā rerenga ko te tauhou nei ko te tamaiti o te oriori nei, ko Te Umurangi.

Ki tā Te Matuatanga kai te kōrero tēnei mō te taenga mai o te tira hou, arā te tira i puta ō rātou ihu i ngā urupatu, i ngā raupatu, i ngā muru whenua. Ko ngā mōrehu ēnei hai paepae kaiāwhā mō te iwi i roto i ngā wharenga moana, i ngā iHINGA moana, i ngā mararanga moana. Ana ko tana whakapono tērā, ko Te Ringatū me āna mōrehu nā te rongopai, nā te rangimārie. Kua mutu

tā rātou pakanga mō te mana motuhake, kua hohou i te rongotaketake, engari ko te whawhai mō te mana motuhake i ū tonu, ka ū tonu.

Ka hōparatia makaurangitia ki roto i te tuhikura nei ko ētahi o ngā titonga hou a te kairangakura i titoa i roto i ngā tau e rua tekau mā whā mō Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti hai māhinga mā Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti, hai akoako mā Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti ki roto ki tōna wānanga. Ka hōparatia ki ia wāhanga tuatahi ko tēnā ko te whakamakaurangi i tenei tuhikura kia ātaahua. Tuarua ko te whāriki takapautia ngā titonga nei e hāngai ana hai pikitūrangi mō ia ūpoko, anā ko Te Whakatōhea tēra kia kite i te rautaki a te wānanga nei a Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti ki te whakaako i ana kaihaka, otirā i ana uri o Te Whakatōhea ki a ia anō, ki tōna hītori, ki āna kōrero inā, inā. Ko Te Ringatū tērā kai ētahi titonga hou kua whakateatuatia ki ngā kupu whakaari, ngā kupu tohutohu me ngā kupu whakahau mai i ngā mōteatea me ngā karakia a Te Matua tangata me tā rātou ārahi i a Te Whakatōhea inā, inā. Ko reira tūhuratia ka pēhea ngā akoranga a Te Kooti e whai wāhi ai ki roto i ngā mahi kapa haka a Te Whakatōhea me te whai wāhi o ēnei akoako o te wānanga o Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti ki te tuakiri o Te Whakatōhea inā, inā.

Ko ēnei titonga hou nei ka amokura ake i ngā whakapae o te rangakura nei, kai roto i tēnei tuhikura.

- Kupu Whakaari hai kupu mō te ariā o ia ūpoko.
- Ko Te Titikaha hai kupu mō te whakakapinga o ia ūpoko.
- Ko Te Toihuarewa ko te pātaka kōrero.
- Ko Te Wāua Mai Nei ko ngā whakapuakanga, arā atu anō kua rārangi ki te kaunati hikahika (kuputaka) o muri.

He kurahuna tō ngā kupu nei nō roto mai i te oriori nā Te Kooti; Pinepine te kura. Nāku i whakamāori ēnei kupu kia hāngai ki tāku e whai nei kia eke katoa ki te oriori nā Te Matua tangata mō tōna whakapono hou; *“I tipu ake i te whenua, i titiro iho te tika i te rangi, ā ka hōmai e Ihowā te mea pai ka tukua mai ōna hua e tō tātou whenua”*, arā ko *‘Pinepine te kura’*. Ko te tūmanako anō ōku ka tīkina mai e ngā uri o Te Whakatōhea, e ngā Ringatū tēnei tauira hai *‘Ara Tōtara’* mā ā rātou rangakura, tuhikura hoki. Nō reira ko tāku mō roto i te tuhikura nei kua tīkina atu ko te kupu “kura” hai kupu mō te ūpoko. Anā koinā tā Te Turuki, he whakaturuki i tāna kupu mā ngā mōteatea nei. Kāore e rerekē ake a Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti he rite tonu, he waka pupuri, tiaki, whakarauora i te tuakiri o Te Whakatōhea turuki, turuki, paneke paneke haramai te toki haumi e, hui e, tāiki e!

# Hau Te Kura: Te Toihuarewa

---

## 2.1 Kupu Whakaari

Ka titia ngā paiaka o te Toihuarewa ki a Papatuanuku kia hōhonu rawa mō te kāpui i ngā rangakura mō te tuhikura nei. Hai rāwaru pounaho i ā te Māori tikanga me ā te tangata ka whai wāhi ki tēnei tuhikura otirā te iwi ka whai hua i tēnei rangakura, ko ngā tikanga rangakura kua kawenatatia e te kairangakura. He huhua noa ngā tini rangakura maha kua whakahaeretia e tauīwi i raro i ngā tikanga pakeha taketake ake nei kīhai i aro ki tā te Māori, i arohatia hoki ngā matanā o te Māori. I kino te whakaatu i ngā rangakura a tauīwi o mua ki te whakaatu i ngā hē, ngā hapa, ngā ngoikore me ngā kino katoa o te Māori. Nā konā i whakakeke ai ngā Māori ki ngā kitenga (Hudson, 2004). Hoi anō i roto i te ngahuru o ngā tau kua pahure ake nei, kua uru kahika te tū a Māori ki te whakahaere rangakura mō te Māori anō, ā, kai raro hoki i te korowai Māori. Hai reira e taea ai e te Māori te tino rangatiratanga ki runga ki te kaupapa, arā ko ngā whakahaere me te mana ka mau tonu, ka mau tonu ki roto i te kapū o te mana Māori motuhake. I te tau 1998 i tū ki Te Pūtahi-a-Toi, ki Te Whare Wānanga o Manawatū, ko Te Oru Rangakura, he hui rangakura Māori me te whakawhanake. I te tau 2004 i tū te hui te Tikanga Rangahau Mātauranga Tuku Iho. I whakaatu i te nui o te mahi rangakura a te Māori e whai wāhi atu ana ki te whanaketanga Māori.

Ka matapakitia ngā kaupapa Māori e tēnei ūpoko me ngā tikanga meihā i te kounga o te rangakura me ngā ture i whakahaeretia ki te kohikohi i ngā rauranga mō tēnei rangakura, arā ko te tika whakaaro tēnā, ko te wātaka mō ngā urupare tēnā, ko te hātepe wewete tēnā, ko te tohu i ngā tohunga toi tēnā, ko te tohatoha, ko te koha i ngā hua o te rangakura i kitea.

## 2.2 Rangakura Kaupapa Māori

E taea ai te matapaki ko ngā tikanga rangakura ko te toihuarewa tērā e hongī ai tōu ihu ki tērā o te pae tawhiti. Ko tā te tikanga rangakura he whakatākotokoto haere kia mārāma te titro ki ngā momo whāriki o ngā momo tikanga rangakura, meihā me ngā whakahaere tātari i whakamahia hai urupounamu i te urupare rangakura. I ngā waru tekau o tērā mano tau i kawea mai i runga i te tai o Ruamano, whati ana ki uta rā he tikanga rangakura Māori i ngā taiwhanga rangakura pērā i te Research Unit for Māori Education ki Te Whare Wānanga o Tāmaki, i āro nuitia ai ki te whakawhanake ake i ngā tikanga rangakura Māori e tika ana mō te Māori (Smith, 1999).

E hia kē nei hoki ngā rau tau e hākaritia ana te iwi Māori e ngā kairangakura o tauīwi. Ka aua atu te takahi a ngā tikanga whakaaro o tauīwi ki runga ki te mana o te Māori me te aukati i a

Māori atu ki tawhiti i tōna tuakiri, reo, ahurea, whakapono o te Māori hoki (Durie, 1998). Ko te tūāpapa o te rangakura ki a tauwi e hāngai ana ki ngā tikanga pūtaiao, arā te raraunga ā-rongo me te whakamāhunga whakamātautau (Kuhn, 1996).

Hoi anō koa kai te nui te māharahara o te Māori ki te “interconnectedness that knowledge has with the rest of the world” (Matamua, 2006, p.86). Ka nui te pōhēhē me te hē o te whakamāori i te raraunga i whānau mai i ngā hātepe, ngā kitenga i raro i te mana whakahaere o tauwi (Hudson, 2004; Smith, 1999).

Ko te toihuarewa Māori ki te rangakura ko te whakanana ki te whakahoki mai ki te Māori i te mana ki runga i tōna mātauranga, arā he tīmatatanga ki te whakamāori i a ia anō, āna tikanga, ōna whakaaro, ōna mātauranga, ōna whakapono he mea nui tapu rawa atu ēnei ki te Māori. Ka noho tēnei hai papa mō te rangakura, hai āwhina anō ki te whakaita, ki te whakamau nawenawe hoki.

Ko te rangakura me te kimi i te rongoā mō ngā take Māori me whai i tētahi toihuarewa ka tautoko i ngā whakapono me ngā whakaaro Māori. Kua wātea ngā kairangakura Māori me ngā kaitukukura, i te waihangatanga i te toihuarewa nei, ki te tūhura, whakamāori, me te tuku i ngā mōhiohio e pai ai ki te kairangakura me ngā kaitukukura, otirā kia whai hua te hāpori kai te rangakuratia. Nō reira ka *tautoko* ngā mātauranga o te *Kaupapa Māori* i ngā *tikanga Māori*. Ko tāna e whakaū ana “cultural legitimacy of Māori knowledge and values” (Walsh-Tapiata, 1998, p.249), me ētahi atu momo whiringa ki te waihanga, ki te whakahoki mai me te whakamāori i te rauranga e whakaatu ana i te mātauranga Māori (Smith, 1999).

Ka whakamāramatia e Cunningham (1998) te *kaupapa* rangakura e pēnei ana, he rangakura e whai wāhi ai te Māori ki ngā taumata katoa o te rangakura, kaitukukura, kaiwhakahaere, mana whakahaere me te tātaritanga. He hātepe mā reira he rangakura nō te Māori e mahi ai mō te Māori, ā kua korowaitia ki te tikanga Māori. Ka tohea e Smith tā te *kaupapa* Māori rangakura aro e pēnei ana “concerned with sites and terrains” (Smith, 1999, p.191). Ko tā te hātepe nei he tuku ki ngā kairangakura me ngā kaitukukura Māori te mana ki te tūtaki, matapaki, whakahaere me te tohu ko ēhea ngā kaupapa nunui kai mua i te aroaro o te Māori me te kōwhiri i te hātepe tika e korowaitia ana ngā uara, ngā tikanga, me ngā whakapono Māori e ai ki ngā tikanga ā iwi.

Bishop (1998) ka tautuhi i te rangakura *kaupapa* Māori e ai ki te tūranga whānau, *whanaungatanga* rānei. Ka tautuhia anō e ia e toru ngā rautaki me whakawhanake ki te whakaū i ngā herenga e ai ki tāna “*whānau* of interest” rānei *kaupapa whānau*. Ko te hātepe tuakiri, ko

te kimihanga i te whanaungatanga, hononga o tētahi tangata mā roto mai o te whakapapa, e whakamana ai tā rātou tūranga i roto i te whānau (Mead, 2003). Tuarua me rūmaki te kairangakura i a ia ki ngā āhua katoatanga o te hātepe rangakura, ā tinana, ā tikanga, ā matatika, ā wairua hoki. Ehara i te mea ka aro ki te hātepe o te tikanga rangakura, engari ka aro anō hoki ki ngā ariā pērā i te *manaakitanga* me te *tapu*, he wāhi tapu nui o te hātepe *whanaungatanga* (Mead, 2003). Ko tētahi mea nui mō te kaitukukura ki te rangakura ko te noho mātau ki ngā uaratanga, tikanga me te whakapono (Kingi, 2005a). Tuatoru me tuku te mana whakahaere o te rangakura me tohatoha. Mā te kotahitanga, arā, ko te whai wāhi me te whakahaere ki ngā kaitukukura e taea ai te *tinu rangatiratanga*. Kia mārama ngā kairangakura, ahakoa he aha te rangakura Māori me whai wāhi ki te whakawhanaketanga o te iwi Māori (Kingi, 2006). Kai konā ngā āhuatanga rerekē o te rangakura *kaupapa Māori*, hoi anō ko ngā ōritenga i waenganui i ēnei whāinga e pēnei ana: nā Māori, mō Māori, kai a Māori te mana whakahaere, hai painga mō te Māori, e hāngai ana ki ngā uaratanga Māori, tikanga Māori me ngā whakapono Māori. Nō reira me mātau te kairangakura ki ngā tikanga me ngā whakahaere a te Māori, ina waihanga i ā rātou tikanga rangakura me aro ki tō te Māori tirohanga ki te ao.

## **2.3 Te Tikanga Rangakura a Te Kura i raro i a Awarua**

### **2.3.1 Meiha Kounga Tikanga Rangakura Qualitative Research**

Hai kohikohi i ngā rauranga e hāngai ana ki tēnei tuhikura, i whakakaupapatia ko te hātepe meiha kounga. Mā te whai i te meiha kounga e rūmaki ai te kairangakura ki roto i te rangakura ki te urupare i te urupounamu matua o te rangakura (Bishop, 1999; Lee & Lings, 2008; Minichiello, Sullivan, Greenwood, & Axford, 2003; Morse, 2007). Āpiti atu ki tēnā, kai roto i te tikanga meiha kounga ētahi tikanga e whakatewhatewha i ngā āhuatanga hāpori o te tangata me te awenga o te taiao whānui (Berg, 2007a). Mā te meiha kounga e ngāwari ai te whakamāori mai i tētahi tirohanga ā horopaki i ngā kura huna, te reo me ngā kaupapa e kore pea e puta ake i te tikanga meiha i te nui.

### **2.3.2 Tātari Meiha Kounga Qualitative Analysis**

Ki te tātari i ngā rauranga meiha i te kounga, i whakamahia he tātari kaupapa ā tauira. Ko tā te kaupapa ā tauira he “identifying, analysing and reporting patterns (themes) within data” (Braun & Clarke, 2006, p.79). E taea ai te whakamāori i ngā rauranga mā te tirohanga rauranga, mā te tirohanga ariā, ngā mea e rua rānei i raro i te tātari ā kaupapa (Braun & Clarke, 2006). Ko ngā tātari i puta motuhake i te rauranga e taea ai ngā kaupapa ā tauira te whakatau mai i te rauranga taketake ake kua i ngā ariā kua oti kē te whakatau, i ngā whakapae o mua rānei o te kairangakura (Boyatzis, 1998; Braun & Clarke, 2006). Boyatzis (1998) ka tohe anō e taea ai ngā kaupapa ā

tauirā te whakatauri mai i ngā rangakura o mua, engari me whakamahi ki ngā rauranga e rite anō te āhua.

Ko te taumata tuatahi o te tātari kaupapa ā tauira me noho mārama ki ngā rauranga. I taea ai tētahi wāhanga o tēnei e te kairangakura i tana whakahaere i ngā uiui. Mena he wā anō tōna e taea ai e te kairangakura te rongō i te matū o te kōrerorero he mea matua nui mā te kairangakura tonu e tārua tuhi, e arotake ngā rauranga i kohia. I tāruatia ngā uiui ki te reo tuhi i konā i tīmata te putanga ake o ngā kaupapa ā tauira. Whakatauri ana te kairangakura i ngā tauira whānui puta i ngā rauranga katoa, ko te taumata tuarua ko te arotake me te whakawhāiti i ngā momo tauira ki roto i ngā tauira matua. I tīmata te whakaatu mai he māramatanga hōhonu i ngā rauranga i kohia mai i ngā kaitukukura. Ko tētahi hātepe nui ko tā te kaitukukura etita, whakaae hoki ki ā rātou uiui kōrero kia mātua kore ai te kairangakura e whakaawe the tuhi me te horopaki i kohia ai ngā rauranga. Ko te taumata whakamutunga ko te whakaputa i tētahi kōrero ka tohea, e whakaatu ana i ngā kaupapa ā tauira i kohia mai i ngā rauranga (Braun & Clarke, 2006).

### **2.3.3 Ngā Kaitukukura ki te Rangakura Research Participants**

He mea tino nui ko te tohu ko ngā kaitukukura ki tēnei rangakura. He maringanui nō te kairangakura he uri, he pou rānei nō Te Ringatū, he pou rānei nō te iwi, pou rānei nō Ōpōtiki-Mai-Tawhiti Kapa Haka

Kua hono noa atu te whakapono o ngā kaitukukura ki te kairangakura, arā te hātepe whanaungatanga i tautuhia e Bishop (1999) rāua ko Mead (2003).

Nā tēnei hononga i taea ai e te kairangakura te tautuhi i ōna kaitukukura ko ngā tohunga ihoatua e atua ana ki te tāhuhu kōrero, he ngākau māhaki ō rātou hoki ki te tuku i ō rātou mātauranga ki te katoa.

Ko te whakamātau whakatara ko te kōwhiri i ngā kaitukukura i runga i pirangi, i te hāngai rānei o te kaitukukura ki te rangakura. E taea ai e te kairangakura ki te kōwhiri i ngā kaitukukura e matatau ana kua pakeke mai i roto i tētahi wheako, e whai wāhi tonu ana ki te kaupapa kai te rangakuratia (Berg, 2007b; Morse, 2007). Ka tohe tonu a Patton e mea ana ka aki te whakamātau whakatara i te kairangakura ki te rangakura “information rich cases in depth and detail” (Smith, 1999, p. 1197).

### 2.3.4 Te Ara Tikanga Māori Approach

Nā te āhuatanga o tēnei rangakura i whakauruhia atu ngā tikanga Māori pēnei te karakia, te tapu me te noa, te rongomomoe me te kōrero ā waha ehara i te uiui, engari he tuku iho mai i ngā kōrero mai i ngā ruanuku, ruahine kua mate noa atu. I whakaarohia ake mā te whakauru i ēnei tūāhuatanga tikanga ka tautoko i te tikanga rangakura, te kairangakura ki te kohikohi i ngā rauranga kōrero tuku iho.

Ko te tikanga Māori i mātua arahina tēnei rangakura, ko te tapu, ko te noa, ko te kauuananu ki te tapu o te rangakura nei.

I roto i tēnei rangakura kua toka kē ngā hononga ki ngā kaupapa, arā te iwi Te Ringatū, te kapa haka, ngā tūranga whānau hoki. Ko reira i āhei ai te kairangakura ki te noho ōkawa, ōpaki rānei ki te mahi i ngā rangakura.

Ā i āhei anō hoki te kairangakura ki ngā putunga o te hinu e taea ai e ia te rangakura nei, ngā pukapuka i tuhia e ngā tīpuna o tērā whare rangatira, o tērā whare atua, o tērā whare karioi.

Ko te tohu i ngā kuratoroa i tau atu ai ki runga i te whakapapa, here waka, here iwi, hoa hoki. Engari ko te mea nui rawa atu he maunga, he tīpua ēnei kuratoroa nui ake te matatau i tō te kairangakura, ā, ka whakaae te kairangakura ki te whai i ā rātou tohutohu i te mea kua raupā ngā pāpāringa i ngā hau toko whakaaro, kua hake te tuarā i te amo i ngā kapua kawē tūmanako, kua whango te reo i te taki karakia e whakaū ai i te mauri, te tapu manumea o te wānanga hai whakangungu i ngā rangatira o āpōpō ki te hau. I taea ai e te kairangakura te whakapā atu ki ngā kuratoroa ina pirangi ai, rātou ngā kuratoroa rānei ki a ia, ko ngā kaitahi ērā, ko ngā nohotahi ērā, ko ngā haeretahi ērā, ko ngā taura a roto ērā, ko ngā haora o te ao, ko ngā haora o te pō. I pērā te whanaungatanga, i pērā ai te kura nui, te kura roa, te kura nā Tū-Ao-Pō. Maringanui te kairangakura tokotoru ōna toroakura he ahurangi katoa e pau ai te ao i tō rātou rongotoa. Mai kore ake te *whanaungatanga* hai poutokomanawa ake i a mātou ko aku kuratoroa e kore rawa pea e makuru te hua mai o tā mātou whanake i “*Te Kura i raro i a Awarua*”.

Ko te *manaakitanga*, he poumataaho anō tēnei uaratanga o te rangakura. Mead (2003) ka whakamāramatia te *manaakitanga*, arā ko āwhina, ko te tautoko, ko te kauuananu, aroha tētahi ki tētahi me te poipoi i ngā hononga ahakoa pēhea. I te roto katoa i te rangakura nei i auau te whakaū i te ariā o te *manaakitanga*.

Ko te harakeke i herea ai te kairangakura ki te kaupapa, i whakaaria mai i te pūmautanga, i te kaingākau, i te pono o te kairangakura ki te kaupapa, kia noho ai tēnei rangakura hai takapau mō ngā kura ka hua mai i tēnei rangakura, hai painga mō Te Whakatōhea, hai tūmanakotanga mō te ngākau Te Ringatū, hai mekameka whakapaipai mō te kakī o te Kapa Haka o Ōpōtiki-Ma-Tawhiti, hai whakapaipai ātaahua mō te mātenga ko te tuakiri tērā o Te Whakatōhea mā roto mai i ngā kura e kore e pahemo ka mau tonu, ka mau tonu.

Ka kīa te Māori he iwi whakapono, he iwi wairua, kai te manawa o tēnei taha wairua ko te *karakia*. Ka taea te whakamāori i te kupu *karakia* hai inoi. He tikanga te *karakia* i whakahauhia mai i te tīmatanga ki te mutunga o te rangakura. Me aha kē rā hoki, ko Te Whakatōhea: Te Kura Nui o te rangakura nei, ko Te Hāhi Ringatū: Te Kura Roa o te rangakura nei ā, ko te Kapa Haka o Ōpōtiki-Mai-Tawhiti: Te Kura nā Tūhaepō hai iere i ngā tūmanakotanga ōku mō te iwi ki runga i te hau o te kura kia toherauariki ai a Te Whakatōhea ki te rangi e tū iho nei, ko reira e piki ake, e kake ake i te toihuarewa e whanake i Te Kura i raro i a Awarua, ko te ara o Ēnoka tērā i piki ai a Te Whakatōhea ki runga.

Koinei te hurahi e pai ai ki te Māori ki te wānanga, ki te whakawhiti whakaaro, whakatau kaupapa, ki te pākiwaha noa hoki. Mā te pērā e whai wāhi ai te *whānau* whānui, ko reira i hōhonu ai te wānangatia o te kaupapa.

I roto te rangakura nei kua takotohia e te kairangakura te tikanga e kīa nei ko te rongomomoe (Education Counts, 2010). Ko te rongomomoe ko te meditative state, arā ka rongo te tangata i ngā kōrero i a ia e moe ana, ka mau ki te hinengaro o te tangata. Ka whakatauiratia ko te rongomomoe; ko ngā kōrero ka rongohia e te tangata, i tēnei rangakura i te wā e tamariki ana ko ngā kōrero i rongo ai ki roto i te whareniui, ki runga i ngā marae, i ngā Tekaumārua, ko ngā Rā a Te Hāhi Ringatū ērā, ko ngā kōrero rānei i rongo i te wā e moe ana i ngā tangihanga, i ngā huihuinga rānei a te iwi. Hai ngā pō ka mutu ngā karakia ka haere ngā mihimihi a ngā pakeke ki roto i a Rongo-maraeroa, ka mutu rānei ngā karakia i ngā atapō, i ngā ata hāpara hoki kua oho ngā pakeke i rō pōuri kua taki kōrerorero ana, kua wānanga rānei i tētahi kaupapa mena rānei he whakapapa, he pakanga, he mōteatea me āna whakamārama. I ētahi wā kāore te whare e moe, ko ngā pakeke ēnei, engari kua wānanga, kua akoako karakia, kua akoako mōteatea mō tētahi kaupapa nui, mō tētahi hui nui e haere ai te iwi aoinaake. He tā i te kawa o tētahi whareniui, he aha rānei te momo hui nunui. Anā kua takoto ngā pakeke ki rō pōuri ka akoako. Ka kīa tēnei he Pō-takoto.

Ko te akoako he momo wānanga, he momo kura. Anā ko ēnei kōrero kua mau i te hinengaro o te tangata, i tēnei rangakura ko te kairangakura tēnei. Kāore e mōhio te kairangakura nō hea

ēnei kōrero, engari kai a ia e mau ana me te tika o te kōrero e ai ki a Te Whakatōhea. Kāore kau nō roto i te pukapuka, i te wharepukapuka, i te rorohiko, i te uiui rānei i tētahi tangata, e kīa ana tēnei he rongomomoe. He kōrero kai te mau nō te wā o te moe, o te takoto ā whare rānei.

Ko tētahi atu momo huarahi kai te nanao atu i tēnei rangakura ko te whakauru i ngā kōrero ā waha mai i ngā ruanuku me ngā ruahine kua mate noa atu ki te kairangakura. Ko ēnei ruanuku, ruahine hoki ko ngā tohunga nunui o Te Whakatōhea, o Te Hāhi Ringatū ko ngā pātaka kōrero nō te ao whakamataku o te tapu. Nā rātou ēnei kōrero i tuku iho ki te kairangakura nōna i roto i ngā whare o ēnei Ihorei i ngā tau maha ka huri ki muri. Ko te kairangakura he tauira nā rātou.

Ahakoā he roa nō tēnei hātepe, hoi anō i whakapono te kairangakura he mea matua tērā te mahi kia pau katoa atu ia ki roto ki te ariā o te *whanaungatanga*, i konā hoki i nui ai te rironga o te māramatanga e pā ana ki Te Whakatōhea, Te Hāhi Ringatū te Kapa Haka o Ōpōtiki-Mai-Tawhiti.

## **2.4 Titikaha**

Nā te tokomaha haere o ngāi Māori kua uru ki te mahi rangakura nei kua whakawhanake ake i ngā tikanga rangakura Māori kua whakangungua ki ngā ūaratanga Māori, whakapono me ngā tikanga. Nā te tokomaha haere o ngā kairangakura Māori kua whakamanatia te hira o ngā tikanga rangakura kaupapa Māori. Kua whakakaupapatia tēnei rangakura ki ngā tikanga rangakura kaupapa Māori, i whakaurutia atu ngā ūaratanga, ngā whakapono me ngā tikanga Māori, ana, i tātaritia mā te whakamahi i tētahi tātari kaupapa ā tauira. Ko ngā ūpoko e whai ake nei ka whakaatu i ngā kitenga mai i tēnei rangakura.

## Whanake te kura i raro i Awarua: Te Whakatōhea

---

### 3.1 Kupu Whakaari

Ko te rongopai o tēnei kura ko te hika i te ahi tapu ki te kaunati hikahika a te tipuna nei a Rāwiri i tere i nui ao ka hika i tana ahi kimihia e te iwi te ara o te tikanga i pai ai te noho a Te Whakatōhea i te ao nei. Ko tōna kahupapa ko te whakapuaki i tā ināmata kupu, i tā tūmata tonu nei kupu e whatu kura ai i te huanga mai o Te Whakatōhea hai iwi motuhake ki anamata hoki.

Mā konei ake ai e whakaheke iho i te iho Atua, i te iho ariki o ngā waka ariki, i hua ai ko Te Whakatōhea iwi, i pouwhenuatia ai ko Te Whakatōhea mana whenua, i tokatū moanatia ai ko Te Whakatōhea mana moana, i poutiriaorangitia ai ko Te Whakatōhea mana rangi. Ka kuramahora te korowai o Te Whakatōhea e raupītia ai tōna whenuakura, ōnā tūtohu whenua, ōna hapū, ōna marae me ngā iwi kai te remu o tōna korowai whenuakura.

Ka matapakitia te whatinga mai o te tai Pākehā ki tātahi me ōnā whiunga porotāwhaowhao i pōtukia ki te rae o Te Whakatōhea. Ko te taenga mai o te Atua hohou rongō tērā, ko te riri taua nui tērā, ko te muru whenua tērā ka mutu ka mate tangata, mate whenua, mate wairua, mate tikanga, mate reo, mate ohaoha. Ka huri te titiro ki tā Te Whakatōhea whakangōki mai i a ia anō i te rua o te pōkaikaha me tāna kimi huarahi ki te whakatikatika i ngā whiunga hēanga a te Kāwanatanga ki a ia. Hai pōkai i tēnei ka mātaitia ki Te Whakatōhea ki roto i te ao hou nei, ko ngā kaupapa kai te whakahaeretia e ia i raro i Te Poari o Te Whakatōhea hai painga mō te iwi me te hāpori whānui o Ōpōtiki ā hāpori, ā hauora, ā mātauranga, ā ohaoha me te kerēme a Te Whakatōhea e whakatau ai te murunga whenua me te patunga tangata a Te Kāwanatanga i raro i te Tiriti o Waitangi. Ko tā tēnei kura he whakaruku i te whatukura ki roto i Te Whakatōhea kia mōhio ia ko wai te iwi e kōrerotia nei ki roto i te tuhikura nei.

Ka whārikitia ngā takapau o te karakia, ngā takapau o te whakapapa, ngā takapau o te waiata hai para i te ara tōtara, hai amo ake i ēnei kōrero. Mā konei ake ai e kitea e te iwi te whanake o te kura i raro i Awarua, arā Te Whakatōhea me te ara o te tikanga i pēnei ai tāna noho i te ao nei.

### 3.2 Ko wai a Te Whakatōhea?

Tēnei ahau, tēnei ahau te hōea nei taku hoenga wai, te pounga hoe, te kōrewanga hoe a aku tīpuna i tūaia ai ngā hoe i te ihinga moana, i te wharenga moana, i te rahopēnga moana ki te tuarā o Hinemoana kia whanake te kura i raro i Awarua, kia tohea kuratia te puta a Te

Whakatōhea ki te whai ao, ki te ao mārama, ki te Aotearoa nei. Ko Te Whakatōhea te takere nui o tēnei waka kōrero, tēnei kura hai kawē i tā inamata, i tā tūmata tonu nei hoki kōrero. Ka tātaia ōna iho atua i a Io Matua te kore, te pū, te weu, te aka, te more, te rea. Rea ake nei te aka matua ka maie te tipua, maie te tawhito, maie te kāhui o ngā ariki o ngā waka ariki. Ariki taketake i hua ai ko Te Whakatōhea iwi, i pouwhenuatia ai ko Te Whakatōhea mana whenua, i tokatū moanatia ai ko Te Whakatōhea mana moana, ko te poutirirangitia ai ko Te Whakatōhea mana rangi.

Ko Te Whakatōhea te iwi. Ko tōna whakapapa i heke mai i ngā atua Māori, i heke mai anō i ngā waka maha engari ko ōna waka matua ko Mātaatua tērā, ko Nukutere tērā. Ko te ingoa o te iwi nei i takea mai i te ariki tapairu tonu o runga i te waka nei a Mātaatua i a Muriwai te mātāmua o ngā tamariki a Irakewa rāua ko Wekanui, arā, te tuahine o Toroa, o Puhī, me tō rātou tuakana a Tāneatua. Ko Tāneatua te tuakana o rātou katoa, kotahi te matua ko Irākewa, engari ko tōna whaea ko Wairākewa.

E ai ki a Tīwai Amoamo i te wānanga o Te Whakatōhea ki Terere 1990, he kuia tapu i noho wehe i tana iwi ki Te Ana o Muriwai ki Whakatāne. He kuia tohetohe hoki, nā konā i tapaina ai ana uri ki te ingoa o Te Whakatōhea hai mauharatanga ki tērā āhuatanga o te kuia tohetohe nei.

Ko ōna kiri whanaunga, ko Ngāi Tūhoe ki te tuawhenua, arā, ko ngā uri ēnā o Toroa, o Tāneatua hoki; ko Ngāti Awa ki te uru ko ngā uri ēnā o Toroa; ā, ki te rātō ko Ngāti Te Rangi, ko Ngāti Pūkenga, arā, ko ngā uri o Toroa ēnā; me Ngāti Ranginui ko ōna kāwai matua nō Tamatea-arikinui, nō Tākitimu waka, ko tētahi kāwai ko ngā uri o Muriwai ēnā. Huri whakaterāwhiti ki te urunga mai o te rā ko Ngāti Porou rāua ko Te Whānau-a-Apanui ko ngā uri ēnā o Ūhengaparaoa nā Ūekahikatea i heke mai i a Muriwai. Ka hoki haere mai ki Tōrere ko Ngāti Tai, ā, ko Tainui waka ko ngā kahukura a Hoturoa ēnā, ko te whaea o Tūtāmure ko Hanenepounamu he kahukura nā Hoturoa, hai mokopuna mā te puhī o Tainui, mā Tōrerenuiārua. Ana ka huri whakateuta ki te Raukūmara ko Te Aitanga a Māhaki, ā, ko te ure tārewa nō Te Whakatōhea ko te matua o Māhaki ko Tamataipūnoa, ko te taina tērā o Tūtāmure, me Ngā Ariki-Kaipūtahi. Ki te taiwhakararo ko Rongowhakaata. Ka moe a Rongowhakaata i a Uetupuke ka puta ko Rongopopoia nāna ko Kāhuki ka pakaru mai ko Te Ūpokorehe o Te Whakatōhea. Ko Ngāti Kahungunu ki te tonga nāna i tapa a Tūtāmure ki tōna ingoa. Hai taina a Kahungunu ki a Whaene te tipuna koroua o Tūtāmure. Nā Whaene ko Hāruataimoana ka moe i a Hanenepounamu ka puta ko Tūtāmure. Ka moe a Tūtāmure i a Hīneikauia, te tamāhine a Muriwai, ka pakaru mai ko Te Whakatōhea iwi. Ko te pākuhā tērā o Nukutere waka, o Tainui

waka, o Takitimu waka i a Tūtāmure ki a Mātaatua waka, ki a Tūwhenua waka i a Hineikauia. He hononga whatukura, he hononga māreikura.

Ko te manawapū o Te Whakatōhea ko te taone e karangatia ana ko Ōpōtiki, ki te rāwhiti o te Moana-ā-Toitehuatahi. Ehara a Te Whakatōhea i te iwi nui, tokoono ōna hapū, ko Ngāti Ira, Ngāti Ngahere, Ngāti Patumoana, Ngāti Rua, Ngāi Tama me Te Ūpokorehe. E ai ki te Tari Tatauranga o Aotearoa 2012, 12,072 ngā uri o Te Whakatōhea (Statistics New Zealand, 2013).

### 3.3 Whenua

Ka horahia te korowai o Te Whakatōhea ki tōna rohenga whenua me te whakahuahua i ngā pou whenua e amo nei i tōna whare ki tōna whenuakura. Ka whakaari anō i te pūtakenga maitanga o ēnei ingoa, anā, he aha te take i huaina ai tērā ingoa, nā wai i tapa tērā ingoa, mō wai rānei tērā ingoa. Hai pou pou ake i ēnei kōrero ka takoto i ahau he mahere whenua hai whakaatu i te remu o te korowai o Te Whakatōhea o onamata.

Tuatahi ake ka takoto ko ngā whare wānanga o Te Whakatōhea hai toutou i te ahikāroa o Te Whakatōhea ki runga ki tōna tūrangawaewae. Koia te wānanga, koia te pūkenga, koia te mātauranga ki tōna taketakerau. Ka hoki ki te wānanga tuatahi i te ūnga mai o Mātaatua ki Kākahoroa ki Whakatāne.

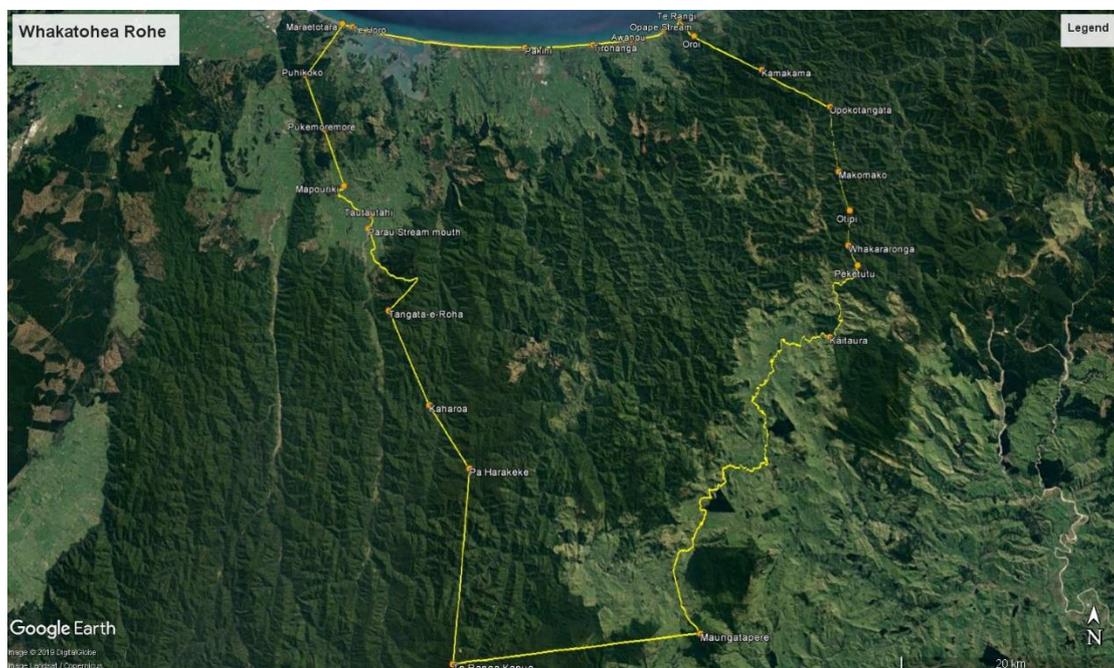
Ko te whare tuatahi ko Tūpāpakurau ko Toroa te tangata o roto. Ka pakarū mai i konā ki Waioweka, ko Te Ika-I-Te-Rangi te whare ko Roau te tangata o roto. Ka pakarū mai i konā ki Mōtūhora, ko Te Whare-Ki-Wānanga te whare ko Tāhu te tangata o roto. Ka pakarū mai i konā ki Waikohu i Matawai ko Pūrangakiritoa te whare ko Marukaho te tangata o roto. Ka pakarū mai i konā ki Hanaia ko te whare ko Kiriteko ko Ruatākenga te tangata o roto. Ka pakarū mai i konā ki a Te Whakatōhea katoa.

I hōmai ēnei kōrero ki ahau e Te Wairēmana Taia i te tau 1990. He kuia tapu tēnei i āta ākona ki roto i te wānanga o Te Whakatōhea ki ngā kōrero tiketike, kōrero tapu a Te Whakatōhea. I tū te wānanga o Te Whakatōhea, anā kāore i tareka e ia te wānanga i te mea kua tūpakeke, kua kaumātuatia. Anā, ka hōmai ēnei kōrero ki ahau hai mautanga atu ki te wānanga. Ko ngā poutāhuhu kōrero ēnei o te iwi.

E ai ki ngā kōrero a Te Hoera Horokai rāua ko Heremia Hoera koinei te remu o te korowai o Te Whakatōhea.

Evidence given by Te Hoera Horokai and Heremia Hoera at Opotiki on 14th July 1920, also describes the geographical boundaries of Whakatōhea.

*"Commencing at Pakihi, at the mouth of the river along the sea coast to the mouth of the Waiotahe Stream to the mouth of the Ohiwa Harbour to Te Horo (a hill) and then turning inland southwards to Puhikoko (a hill) by straight line to Pukemoremore (a hill) then to Mapouriki (a hill) at one time a fighting pa. Then descending to Waimana Stream, Mapouriki being on the bank; following the Waimana Stream toward its source at Tautautahi (a hill) along the banks to the mouth of the Parau stream; then following Parau Stream to Tangata-e-roha (a hill) on to Kaharoa (an old settlement); from Kaharoa to Paharakeke a ridge leading towards Maungapohatu to Maungatapere (a hill) descending into the Motu River to Kaitaura falls to Peketutu (a rock in the river that was an old crossing); leaving the river and up a ridge to Whakararonga (a hill); following the hill tops until it reaches Tipi O Houmea (a peak) descending towards Makomako (another hill) till it crosses Takaputahi Stream to Ngaupoko Tangata (a mountain) following the ridge to Kamakama (a mound resting place); along the ridge to Oroī (a trig station) then turning seawards to Te Rangi on the sea coast (a stone visible on the sea coast at low tide); then along the sea coast to the mouth of the Opape Stream, to Awahou Stream to Tirohanga and back to Pakihi."*



*Mapi 1: Te Whakatōhea: Rohe whenua (Te Whakatōhea Archives).*

### 3.4 Atua

Tēnei rā te hōkai nuku ka hōkai rangi i te poutama a Tāwhaki ki te tiki i te iho Atua o Te Whakatōhea. Ko te hekenga anō tērā o Tāwhaki, o Māui i te rangi hai rarawhi i te iho Atua o Te Whakatōhea ki te whāioio rā anō. Ko Tāwhaki tērā, ko ko Tamaiwaho tērā, ko Māui tērā. Ko tā tēnei he whakapūmautia te Kura-Atua o Te Whakatōhea e ai ki ōna tawatawainga. Ko tā te whakapapa he kurawawawawai i te mana ariki o te tangata, arā te mana atua, ko te mana ariki, ko te mana e whakawhiwhia ai ki te mātāmua o te whanau, o te hapū, o te iwi, o te waka. Ko tā te whakapapa mahi tēnā he kurawawawawai i te iwi. Kāore kē hoki he rerekē ko tā Te Whakatōhea i konei. Ko te whakapapa hoki ka raranga i ngā iho ki tētahi, ētahi atua, tīpuna rānei nui te mana, nā te whakapapa, rānei nā ngā mahi i oti, i tutuki i mana nui ai. I konei a Te Whakatōhea ka tākina tana whakapapa i a Tāwhaki-o-te-rangi nā tana mahi tapu nui ko te tiki i ngā kete o te wānanga e ai ki tā Mātaatua kōrero. Ko te whai wāhi nui tērā o Mātaatua ki te wānanga, ki te mātaurānga, ko te māramatanga. Ko te tākina mai o te whakapapa ki a Māui, arā ko āna whakareretanga iho ina noa atu. Ko te pouwhenua i tērā i Te Ika-ā-Māui-Tikitiki-a-Taranga, he mana whenua, he mana tangata, he tūrangawaewae. Koinei te mana me te tapu o tēnei mea te whakapapa.

#### 3.4.1 Te Whakapapa o Tāwhaki

##### **Te Tau o Mataatua**

*Ko wai rā! Ko wai rā te tangata tūtū taua!*

*Kāore koa ko Hau,*

*ko Nuiho,*

*ko Nuake,*

*ko Manu,*

*ko Weka,*

*ko Toroa,*

*ko Ruaihona,*

*ko Te Tahi o te Rā.*

*Tēnei te maro ka hurua huruhuru nui nō Manu, nō Weka.*

*Ka tū tapori atu, ka tū tapori mai.*

*Wero noa, wero noa ngā rākau whakaiaia nā ngā tīpuna i tīkina mai i rāwāhi hai hōmai mō*

*taku waka mō Waimihia,*

*te mata o ngā rākau a Tūkariri,*

*te mata o ngā rākau a Tūkaniwha,*

*te mata o ngā rākau a Tūkaitaua*

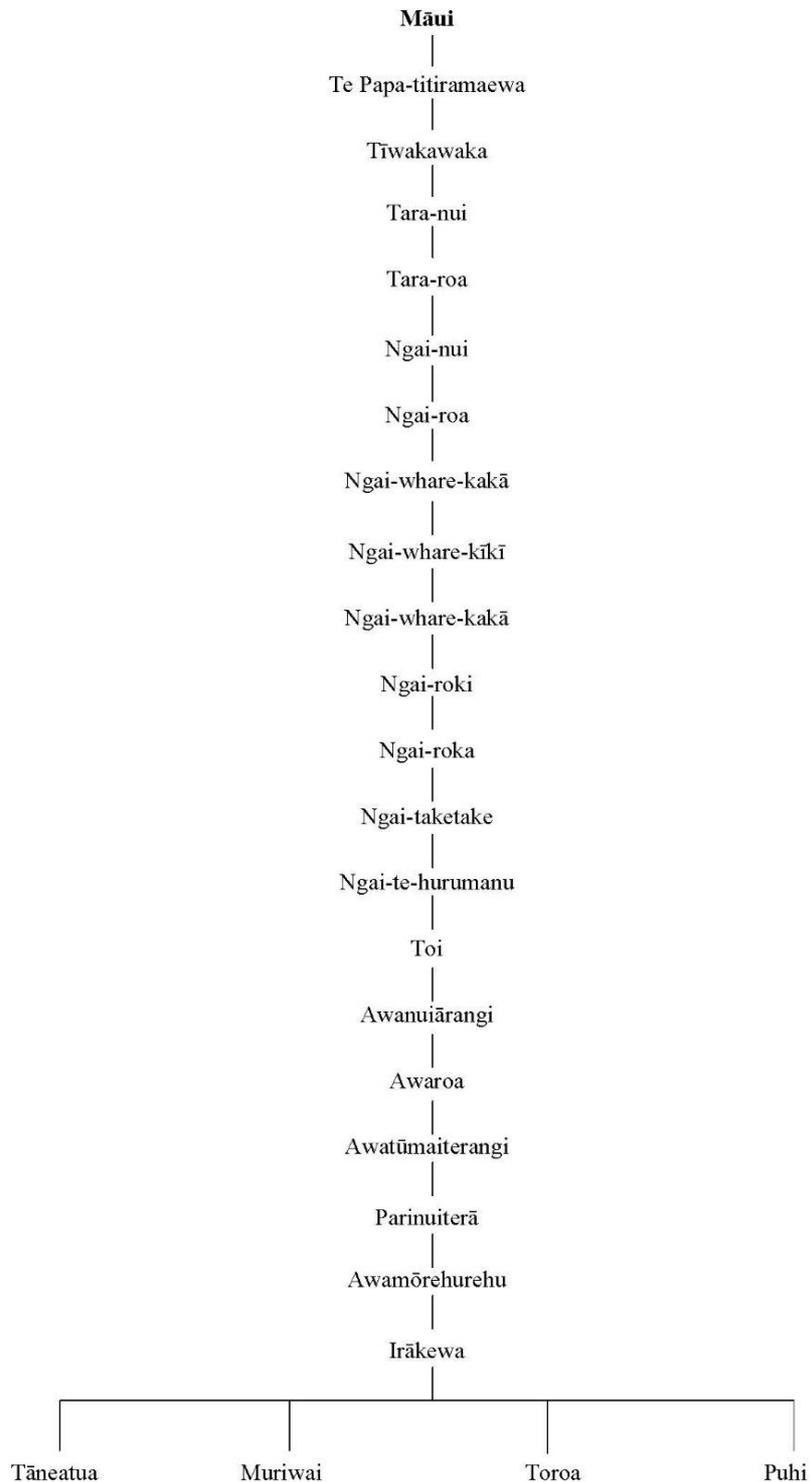
*whāno, whāno haramai te toki, haumi e, hui e, tāiki e!*

E ai ki a Mōnita Delamere ko te karakia o runga ake nei ko te Tau o Mātaatua, kai roto i te karakia nei e tātaitia nei te whakapapa o Wekanui ko te whaea tēnā o Muriwai. E ai ki a Mātaatua, nāna, nā Tāwhaki i kake ngā rangitūhāhā ki te tiki i ngā kete o te wānanga. Anei tana whakapapa e whai ake nei, ka heke mai i a Ranginui rāua ko Papatuanuku, ka heke mai ki a Tāwhaki-o-te-rangi ka heke, ka heke ki a Wekanui, ki a Muriwai te tipuna o Te Whakatōhea me ōna tūngāne ko Toroa-ā-tai-ariki rātou ko Puhi-moana-ariki.



*Whakapapa 1: Ranginui rauā ko Papatuanuku, mana whakaae Whakatōhea Māori Trust Board.*

### 3.4.2 Te Whakapapa o Māui



Whakapapa 2: Maui, mana whakaae Whakatōhea Māori Trust Board

He nui ngā kōrero mō Māui, nāna i here te rā, nāna te ahī i a Mahuika, nāna te kurī tuatahi a Irawaru me te huhua noa o ngā kōrero me tana whakatauirā mai i ā te Māori tikanga me ō te Māori matarau, arā ko Māui - tinihanga, Māui - nukarau, Māui – ātamai me te huhua anō

āhuatanga, he matatini tōna. Ko te kōrero whai wāhi nui ai ki Aotearoa nei, arā, nāna i hī ai Te Ika ā Māui. Hai konā te iwi Māori here ai i ōna kāwai ki a Māui, arā ko te mana whenua tēnei e kōrerotia ake nei. Anā, ko te kōrero a ngā tīpuna mō Te Whakatōhea, kāore he whakapapa. Anei e whai ake nei.

### 3.5 Ngā Waka

Hai tō i tēnei waka kōrero ki uta ka titiro whakatemuri kia kite i ngā riponga wai i whakaterā ai ngā waka nei mai i te whanaketanga maitanga o tēnei kura i raro i a Awarua, arā, te hekenga mai o Te Whakatōhea i Hawaiki, ā tae rawa ake ki te ūnga maitanga ki Te Moana-a-Toi, taea noatia tōna nohoranga ki tōna manawapū ki Ōpōtiki-Mai-Tawhiti me te pākūhā ki te tangata whenua, ā, toherauariki mai ko Te Whakatōhea.

Tēnei ahau, tēnei ahau te hōea nei taku hōenga wai, te pounga hoe, te kōrewanga hoe a aku tīpuna i tīaia ai ngā hoe i te ihinga moana, i te wharenga moana, i te rahopēnga moana ki te tuarā o Hinemoana kia whanake te kura i raro i Awarua, kia puta ai a Te Whakatōhea ki te whai ao, ki Aotearoa.

Inā noa atu ngā whakapapa, inā noa atu ngā waka i takea mai ai a Te Whakatōhea. He maha ngā waka i ū atu ki te rohe o Te Whakatōhea, ko Horouta tērā ko Pawa te tangata, ko Tūwhenua tērā ko Tamatea te tangata te tāne a Muriwai, ko Tauramaitawhiti tērā ko Mōtataumaitawhiti te tangata, ko Rangimātoru tērā ko Hapekitua te tangata, Ōtūrereao tērā ko Tairongo te tangata, ko Pākihikura hoki tērā waka. Ahakoa kāore i te mōhio ko wai te tangata o runga i a Pākihikura, kua tapa te ingoa o Pākihikura ki runga i te wahapū o ngā wai e rua, ko Waioweka me Ōtara. Ahakoa e rua ērā awa kai te karapoti i te taone o Ōpōtiki kotahi tonu te waha ko Pākihikura te ingoa. I ū ēnei waka katoa ki te takutai o Te Whakatōhea mai i Te Koko ki Ōhiwa ki Awaawakino. Kāore he whakapapa ki a Te Whakatōhea, kāore he whakapapa.

Hāunga ēnei waka, kai te au o te tuhikura nei ka hūkeretia ai e te kupu ko ngā waka matua, ka takitakitia ai ko ngā tīpuna ariki o Te Whakatōhea. I herea ai tōna whakapapa, i pouwhenuatia ai tōna mana. Ko Te Aratauwhāiti tērā ko Tīwakawaka te tangata ka heke ki a Toi-Kairākau ko te Tini a Toi te iwi, ko Te Ara Umauma tērā ko Tarawa te tipuna ko Ngāi Tū te iwi, ko Nukutere tērā ko Tautūrangi te tipuna ko Te Wakanui te iwi, ko Tūtāmure te tipuna ko te Panenehu te iwi; ko Mātaatua tērā ko Muriwai te tipuna ka whanake te kura i raro i Awarua, ā ka toherauariki mai ko Te Whakatōhea te iwi.

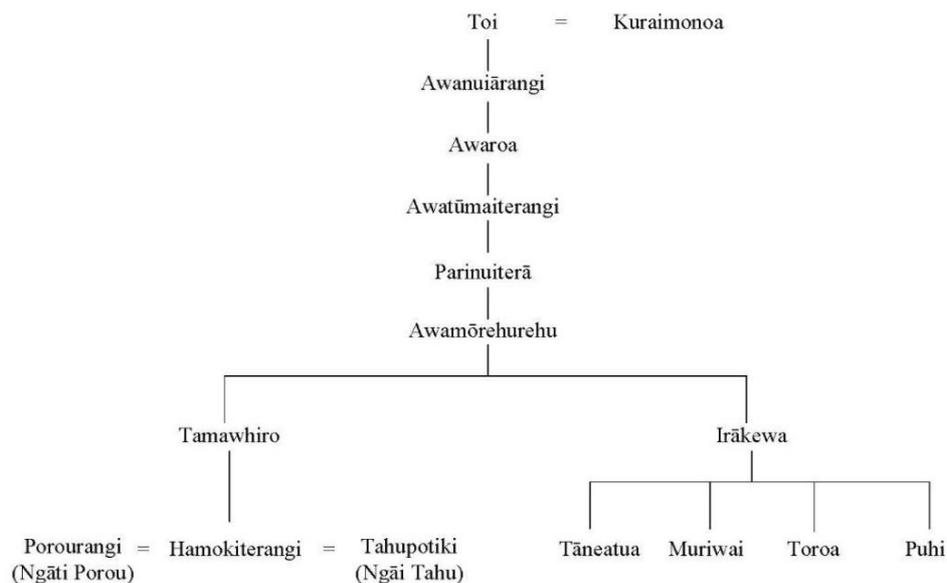
### 3.5.1 Te Aratauwahāiti

Ka tōkihi i taku hoe ki Te Aratauwahāiti, ko te waka tērā o Tīwakawaka nāna i noho te ika nui a tana tipuna a Māui-Tikitiki-a-Taranga. E ai ki te whakapapa ka noho a Tīwakawaka hai mokopuna mā Māui, anā tekau mā toru whakatipuranga ki a Toi-Kairākau. E ai ki a Hamiora Pio o Ngāti Awa; “Ko ngaa taangata o teenei motu ko Maui, i muri ko Tīwakawaka, i muri mai ko Toi” (Biggs, Hohepa, Mead. 1967. p. 104).

*Kapua hokaia i runga o Tawhiti nui a Te Tua  
Ka tataua ana ki runga o Ka-pu-te-rangi, puke i Aotea  
Ko Toi te tangata o te motu ...  
(Best, 1972, p. 722).*

Ko te hekenga maitanga a Toi ki Aotearoa tēnei. Anā i tū te whakataetae hoehoe waka i tētahi rangi ki Pikopikoiwhiti. I uru atu te mokopuna a Toi-te-huatahi ko Whātonga tōna ingoa. Nāwai e hoe ana ka tūarangeranga te moana ka kahakina te waka o Whātonga e te hau ki tawhiti, ā, ngaro tonu atu a Whātonga, ka riro i te au kukume o te moanaroa. Taka rawa te wā ka matika a Toi ki te whai i ngā riponga wai a tana mokopuna a Whātonga. Koiaraka te hekenga a Toi ki Aotearoa, ka tatū rā anō ki te Kākahoroa e mōhiotia ana ko Whakatāne. E ai ki te karakia, anā, Te Tau o Mātaatua i runga ake nei ko te pā o Toi ki Kākahoroa ko Kāpūterangi.

Mā te whakapapa e whai ake nei e whakaatu te kāwai ki a Muriwai, arā te tuahine o Toroa te rangatira o Mātaatua. Nā Muriwai, ā, i toherauariki tūturu mai ki a Te Whakatōhea whānui tonu.



*Whakapapa 3: Toi, mana whakaae Pouroto Ngaropo*

### 3.5.2 Nukutere

*“... Nukutere Te Rangi Awaawakino  
Ngā tainui, ngā tairoa  
Kōpua-pātiki huki te pakakē ...”*

(He pātere nā Te Whakatōhea). I whakaakona mai ki ahau e Tā Mōnita Delamere rāua ko Pāroa Kūrei 1980.

Ka pā atu taku hoe ki te riu tapu nui o Nukutere hai taki i tōna whakapapa. Mā te pātere nei e tia a Nukutere, e ranga a Te Rangi, e ū a Awaawakino. Ko Tautūrangi te tangata, ko Tamaiwaho te atua o runga, ko ngā hoe tapu ko Arapangāteatinuku, Arapangāteatirangi nāna i nuku teretere a Nukutere waka i Te Moana-nui-a-Kiwa ki Aotearoa;

*“Ūtaina atu ki runga i tōu waka tapu i a Nukutere te waka o tō tipuna o Te Whiro-nui,  
mauria ki tō ringa ngā hoe tapu, a Arapangāteatinuku, a Arapangāteatirangi...”*  
(Te Pipiwharaua 40, 1901).

I ū a Nukutere waka ki Awaawakino he kokoru ki te rāwhiti o Ōpape ki te takiwā o Ōpōtiki. He toka āhuru, he toka tipua kai Awaawakino ko Te Rangi te ingoa, he tokatū moana. Ko Te Rangi koiarā te punga o Nukutere. Ko Te Rangi ka pōkia e te ngaru i te ao, i te pō, i konei ka wehe a Te Whakatōhea, ka wehe a Ngāi Tai. Koirā e kīa ai e te pātere o runga ake nei; ngā tainui, ngā tairoa, arā ko Ngāi Tai tērā ka heke mai i a Tainui waka. The Nukutere made landfall at Awaawakino, east of Ōpape, circa 1250 (Walker, 2007, p.14).

He kokoru whakaruruhau a Awaawakino mō ngā waka i ngā moana tūārangaranga, i ngā huaroa o Tangaroa. E whai ake nei te whakaaraara pā, a Ngāi Tama he hapū o Te Whakatōhea kai Ōpape e noho ana, e whakamārama ake ana i te āhuru o tērā wāhi a Awaawakino, a Te Rangi hoki. I whakamahia tēnei whakaaraara pā e te koroua, e Mātenga Biddle hai tauparapara mō ana whaikōrero. He mea hōmai tēnei taonga ki ahau e Paora Brosnan, 2016. Hai mokopuna a Paora mā Mātenga, kua takahi i ngā makenu o tōna tipuna, he pūkōrero nō te iwi.

*Kia mataara! Kia mataara!  
Te ketekete mai te manu te tautara ki Tarakeha  
Kia hiwa rā! Kia hiwa rā!  
Kia hiwa rā ki tēnei tuku! Kia hiwa ki tērā tuku!  
Kia whakapurua koe ki te toto*

*Whakapuru tonu! Whakapuru tonu!*  
*Te tai ki Taipua*  
*Ehara koa ko au e kimi ana, e rapu ana i te oranga*  
*Kai tua, kai Awaawakino, kai Te Rangi*  
*Tihei Mauriora!*

Ko Tautūrangi te tipuna o Te Whakatōhea i haramai i runga i a Nukutere. E ai ki te kōrero tekau mā toru whakatipuranga i mua i te hekenga nui. I tau tapuwae a Tautūrangi i a Nukutere i konei, ki Ōpape. Ka noho a Tautūrangi rāua ko tana wahine a Rangitaka ki Ōpape ki tōna pā ko Taiharuru te ingoa. Anā he maha ngā ana kai tātahi i Ōpape ko Taiharuru tonu te ingoa o aua ana rā. Inā pupuhi te hau whakarua ka kino te moana, ā, ka rangona te tai e haruru ana, ka rere āwhiowhio ki roto i aua ana rā, anā, kua taiharuru. Ka rāngona te hau nei me Taiharuru e ngunguru ana, ā, kua mōhio te iwi kua kohaina mai e Tangaroa āna tamariki hai ō mā te iwi, ko te toetoe tērā, ko te pāpā tērā, ko te whētiko tērā, ko te kākara tērā, ko te koura tērā. I kōrero mai ēnei kōrero mō ngā kai a Tangaroa nei e Rāniera Poihipi, e Pāroa Apanui hoki.

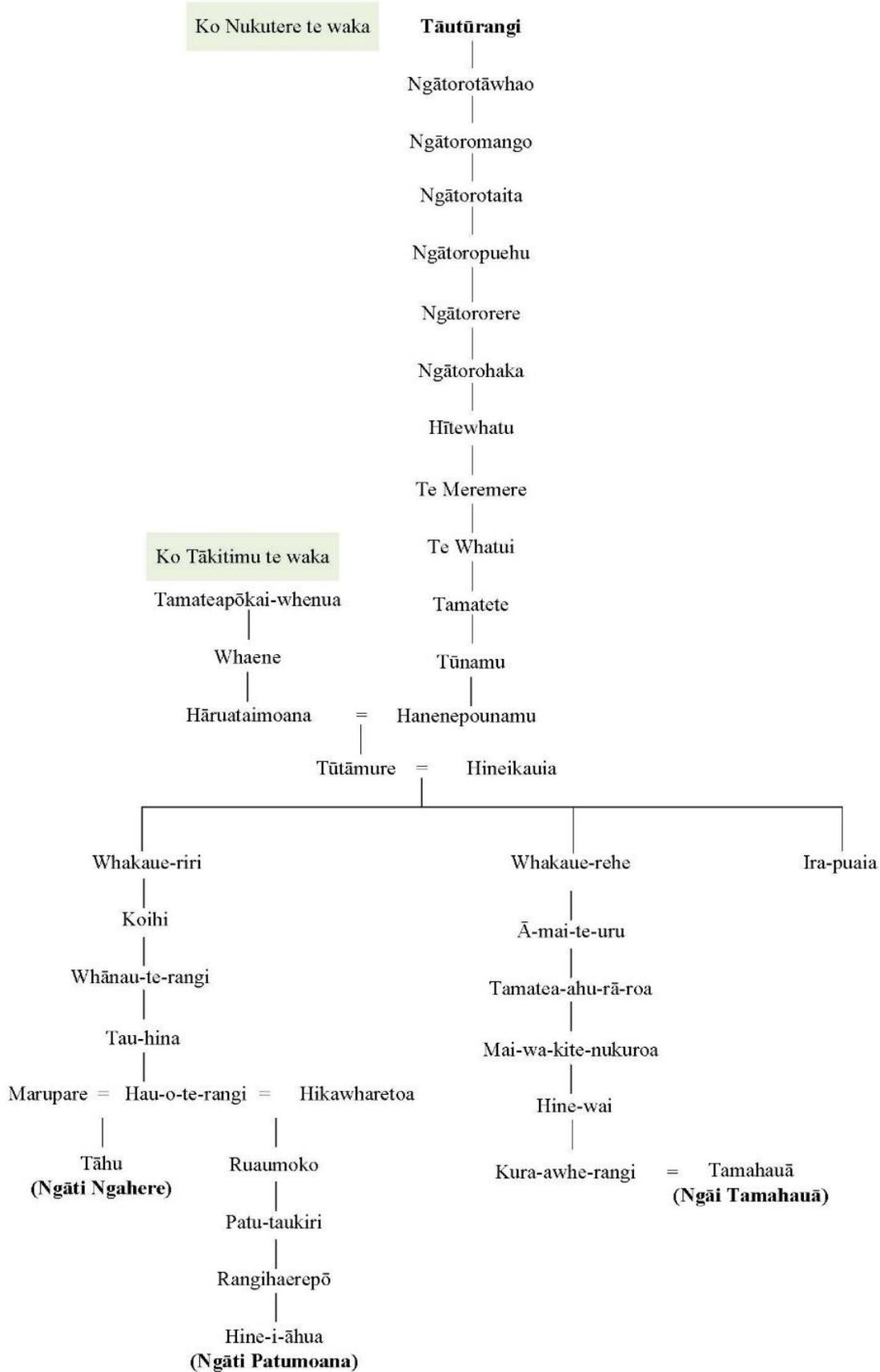
Noho mai i a Tautūrangi te atua a Tamaiwaho, te atua nō runga i a Nukutere waka. Ka tanumia a Tamaiwaho ki runga o Kapua-a-rangi, he maunga ki roto o Waiaua, he tīkouka e tohua ana te wāhi i tanumia ai a Tamaiwaho. Taka rawa te wā i noho ko Tamaiwaho te atua kairiri o Te Whakatōhea, ko te kauwaka kai te mōhiohia ko Punahāmoa te tohunga whaiwhaiā rongonui o Ngāti Ngahere, otirā Te Whakatōhea whānui tonu. He whetū anō hoki a Tamaiwaho, koia te atua i ārahi mai i a Nukutere waka i Hawaiki, ka ū mai ki Awaawakino, ki Aotearoa me te iwi o runga e karangatia ana ko Te Wakanui, hai maharatanga ki a ia anō, ki a Nukutere. Nā Nukutere ka pakaru ko Te Tairāwhiti whānui tonu atu i Te Whakatōhea ki Te Māhia ki roto o Ngāti Kahungunu, Rongomaiwahine, ko Ngāti Porou whānui hoki.

E whāi ake ana ko tētahi wāhi o tētahi oriori nā Te Whakatōhea e whakahuahua ana i te whakapapa i te Atua nei a Tamaiwaho, ka heke haere tonu ki Te Whānau-a-Āpanui, ka heke haere tonu ki a Tamataipūnoa taina o Tūtāmure, ki a Te Tawhoro tīpuna nui o Te Whakatōhea.

*“Pōpōpō kāti rā te tangi whakarongo tō taringa ki ngā whakatakiri a tō tō matarau i a koe.  
Kauaka e pōuri whakaae ake tērā te huarahi te takoto mai rā i te rangi i tō tipuna e ia  
Tamaiwaho ko Ohomatarau, tērā te huarahi tūtata kai runga te Ranginui kai a Wāhiawa  
nāna nei Tūrīrangī, nāna nei Apanui tōna tini noa iho i te mate i te ora. Tērā Taipūnoa  
(Tamataipūnoa) kai runga Waiaua, kai Maungakāhia nāna nei tōna tini noa iho i te mate i te  
ora e... Tēnei Te Tawhoro te karanga tū tata mai nei ko au tēnei, ko koe tēnā ..”*

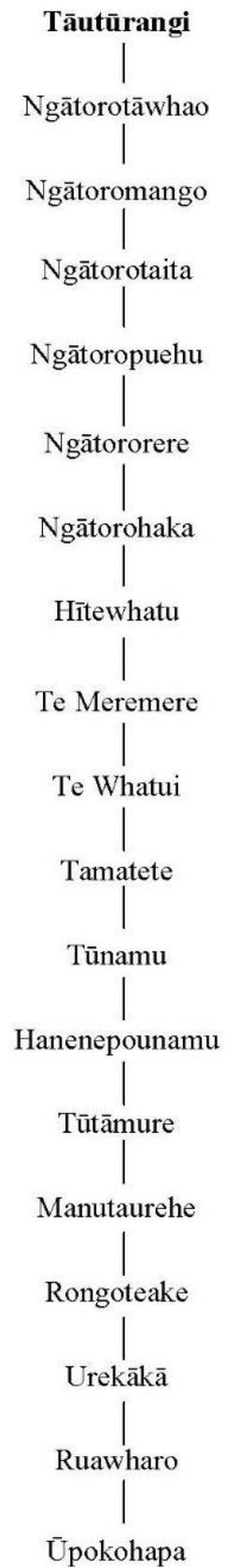
Ko ngā haringa maitanga i runga i a Nukutere ko te taro, ko te tūkouka, ko te karaka. (Walker, 2007). I whakatipungia ēnei rākau ki Ōpōtiki. Hai tā ngā pakeke anō hoki ko te uru karaka i Waioweka tonu, nō runga mai anō i a Nukutere tonu. I kōrero mai a Ngāpō Wehi ki ahau i Tūrangawaewae i tētahi Koroneihana; “I kī mai a Ngākohu ko te kai i hari mai i runga i a Nukutere ko te karaka, koirā e nui te tipu mai o te karaka ki te wākāinga”.

Ana i te nohotanga mai a Tautūrangi ki Ōpape, whāia i nuku tere whakaterāwhiti atu a Nukutere ki raro i te mana o Te Whironui i a Huturangi ko Paikea, ko Ngāti Porou hoki.



Whakapapa 4: Nukutere Waka, mana whakaae Te Riaki Amoamo

## WHAKAPAPA O NUKUTERE WAKA



*Whakapapa 5: Ūpokohapa, mana whakaae Te Riaki Amoamo*

### 3.5.3 Te Ara Umauma

*... Tōia tō hope Hāmatatū timu Te Koko; Ngā Tamāhine a Te Whakatōhea  
Takahia te pipi tahe aku pōtiki, pākihikura ki uta, kura ki waho  
Kapakapa Hukitewai pāra takoto te one; Kōpū e oho!  
Kaikirikiri tuatua Waiāua te kai a te karoro koa! ...*

He wāhanga tēnei o te pātere kai te wāhanga mō Muriwai 3.6.2 kai reira ngā whakamārama mō tēnei pātere.

Ko tēnei terenga o te kupu: “*Takahia te pipi tahe aku pōtiki, pākihikura ki uta, kura ki waho*” Kai te hīa ake ai e tēnei pātere te tipuna nei a Tarawa me te kauhoetia ōna kōrero ki ana ika pōtiki ki rō te hōpua wai ki Pākihikura. Hoi anō kua takahia noatia ko ngā pipi o Waiōtahe ki Te Ahiaua.

E ai ki tā nehe kōrero, i kau mai tēnei tipuna o Te Whakatōhea a Tarawa i te tai o Taritoronga i Hawaiki ki Aotearoa mā te Ara Umauma. I te hekenga maitanga o ngā waka i Hawaiki, i whakarērea atu a Tarawa e Tainui ki Hawaiki. Te aroaroā i a ia i te korenga o tana iwi, ka hanatu ka haere ki te whai tangatatanga mai i Hawaiki, anei e rangatia nei i tēnei o ngā pātere a Te Whakatōhea, e pāteretere iho nei.

*... Taku kura kite hau nāku i tiki i te pōuriuri, i te pō tangotango ia Hinemanuhiri i a Rūaimoko e tuki rā i te whenua i haramai koe i Hawaiki-Mātotoru ki te whai tangatatanga mai i Hawaiki. Taku kōtuku hai titi rae, hai tīepu i runga nei ...*

Ka tangohia ake e Tarawa te paepaekaiāwhā o tōna whare hai whakamānutanga mōna ki runga ki te kare o ngā wai, ka reti mai. E ai ki tā Te Whakatōhea; ko te pūtakenga mai o te tākaro arā, te whakaheke ngaru tēnei, ko Tarawa.

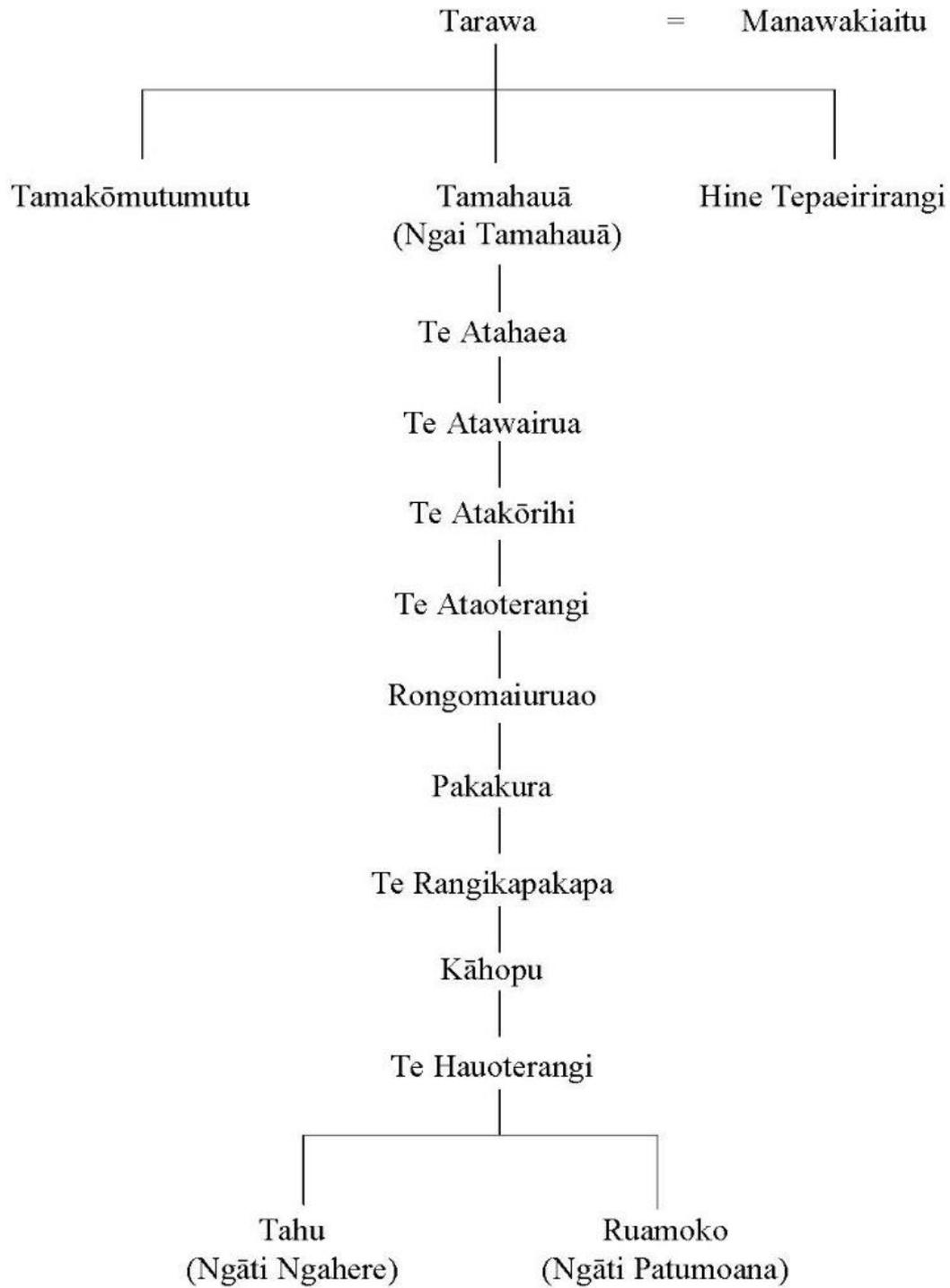
Ū rawa mai a Tarawa ki Paerātā ki te taha uru o te taone e karangatia ana ko Ōpōtiki i tēnei rā. I tētahi rangi, atu i tawhiti i kitea e te tangata whenua tētahi mea ki runga tātahi. I pōhēhē kē rātou he porotāwhaowhao, he rātā kua pae mai i ngā ngaru whatiwhati ki uta (ka kīa e Te Whakatōhea ko te rākau pohutukawa, he rātā). Nāwai rā, rokohinga atu ehara he tangata kē, ko Tarawa e tāpapa ana ki runga i te onekura. Ka tapaina te ingoa o tērā wāhi ko Paerātā, anā kua pae te rātā ki te onekura.

E rua ngā ika mōkaikai a Tarawa, he ika, he tāhanahana, nāna nei a Tarawa i ārahi mai ai i Hawaiki ki Aotearoa. I takahia haeretia e ia te ākau i Waiotahe, arā “*takahia te pipi Tahe ...*” ki Paerātā, ki Te Arakotipū rā ki te rapa nōhanga mō ana mōkaikai, anā, kite rawa ake he hōpua wai ki te takiwā ki Pākihikura. Ka tapaina te punawai ki te ingoa ko Ōpōtiki-mai-tawhiti, arā ko ana ika pōtiki nāna nei a Tarawa i ārahi mai i tawhiti ki Aotearoa.

I hanake a Tarawa ka haere ki te rāwhiti atu i Paerātā ki Awaawakino. I whakangā ia ki runga ki tētahi toka ka tapaina e ia taua toka ki te ingoa ko Te Rangi (ko te punga tērā o Nukutere). Atu i konei i takahi whakatetuawhenua ki Ōroi, ka haere whakaroto tonu ki Mōtū. I konei i tūtaki atu ia ki a Tauwharanui he rangatira nō Te Tini a Toi he tangata whenua. I moe a Tarawa i a Manawakiaitū te tamāhine a Tauwharanui ki Te Wharemaire he kāinga tērā kai Whakapau-Pākihi. Ko Whakapau-Pākihi ko te rohenga whenua tērā o Te Whakatōhea ki te tonga e wehe ai a Te Whakatōhea, e wehe ai a Te Aitanga a Māhaki. E kīa ai tērā whenua ko te Weherua.

Ka hūnuku a Tarawa rāua Manawakiaitū ki Wharekiri ka whakatūngia ki reira tōna whare ko Pōkaikai te ingoa. He kāinga anō tōna i Tapaona, i reira hoki tana māra ko Waihuahua. I Tapaona i whakatūngia e ia he pou i whakairihia ai tōna kākahu, ko Tānemoepuku te ingoa o te kākahu. Ko tēnei tikanga he kākahu i te whenua, arā he tohu tērā i tōna mana ki runga ki te whenua. Anā ko tōna mana whenua mai i Mangatapere ki Ruangāraho.

Nā Tarawa rāua ko Manawakiaitū i pakaru mai ko Te Whakatōhea whānui. Heke rawa ki te uri o Tarawa ki a Te Hauoterangi ko Ngāi Tū te iwi.



Whakapapa 6: Tarawa, mana whakaae Te Whakatōhea Māori Trust Board.

### 3.5.4 Te Aratāwhao

Tērā tētahi tokorua ko Hoaki rāua ko Taukata i kauria mai i te moana i Hawaiki i runga i a Tūtarakauika, tō rāua waka. Ka tau ki runga i a Hineoneone ki Kākahoroa. Ko Rongoatau tō

rāua matua, he rangatira nō Hawaiki. Ko tā rāua he rapa i a Kanioro ko tō rāua tuahine tērā. I moe a Kanioro i a Pourangahua nō Tūranga.

Ka tāpapa a Hoaki me tana taina a Taukata ki tātahi me te ahuahua i a rāua ki te oneone ki te whakamahana i a rāua. Ko te rangatira o Kāpūterangi i tērā wā ko Tamakihikurangi. Ko tana tamāhine ko Kurawhakaata. Ka heke iho a Kurawhakaata i Kāpūterangi ki tātahi ki te kaukau. Te taetanga atu a Kura ki te wai i rokohinga atu ko te tokorua e pāinaina ana me te karakia haere kia whiti mai te rā ki a rāua. E pēnei ana tā rāua karakia (Best, 1904):

*Ūpoko, ūpoko whiti te rā  
Tēnei tō wahine e aitia ana e te ngārara nui, e te ngārara roa  
Ūpoko, ūpoko whiti te rā  
Hai konā rā koe, e te rā tū mai ai  
Tukua atu au kia rere haere  
Tū ki tipua, tū ki tahito, tū ki māneanea  
Ūpoko, ūpoko whiti te rā!*

He ngeri tēnei nā aku tīpuna, e haka tonutia ana e tēnei reinga tangata. Kai tēnei ngeri te pātaka o ēnei kōrero.

Ka haria atu e Kurawhakaata a Hoaki rāua Taukata ki runga ki Kāpūterangi ki tōna matua ki a Tamakihikurangi. Ka pātai a Tamakihikurangi nō hea te tokorua rā me tā rāua whakaatu nō Hawaiki. Ka whakataka te iwi o Tamakihikurangi i ō tuawhakarere kai mā ana manuhiri, he aruhe, he tī kouka, he pikopiko, he miro, he tawa, he tāwhara, he ure, he hīnau, aha atu, aha atu, aha atu. Ko iaraka te whakapapa o te ingoa nei o Toi-kai-rākau, ko te ō a Toi, ko ā Rangomātāne, ko ā Haumietiketike, ko ā Tāne-Mahuta.

Nā te māngaro kore o te ō a Te Tini a Toi, te iwi o Tamakihikurangi, i tonoa atu e Taukata kia utuhia he wai. Ka hutia ake he kao i tana maurea whiritoi ka kōpirotia ki te wai, kātahi ka whāngaia ki te tangata whenua. Ka whakamātautia e Tamakihikurangi, ka whai kupu ki tana iwi, ko te kura tēnei mai i Hawaiki. Ka pātai a Tamakihikurangi mā hea atu ia ki Hawaiki? Me te whakahoki a Hoaki me waka rā anō (Biggs, Hohepa, Mead. 1967. p.106).

Ko te hekenga tēnā a rātou ki tātahi ki te rapa rākau pai hai tārai waka terenga moana ki Hawaiki. Rokohinga atu rā he porotāwhao paenga ā tai. I hāua he waka i te porotāwhao, nā i huaina te ingoa ko Te Aratāwhao. Nga toki i haua ai taua waka ko Manokuha, ko Te Wai-heke,

ko Warawaratai-o-Tane...Ko ngā toki no Hoaki ano, no Taukata. Koia nei te waka o Aotea-roa i haere ai nga tangata o Aotea-roa, he tiki kumara i Hawaiki (Best, 1972, p. 697).

Ko te rerenga tērā o Te Aratāwhao i ngā puke oneone i Te Moana a Toi ki Hawaiki ki te tiki i te kura mai i Hawaiki ko te kūmara i Parinui-te-rā. Nā Tamakihikurangi ngā ruruku me ngā ara moana i taki, ā, ū rawa ake ana a Te Aratāwhao ki Hawaiki. I waiho Te Aratāwhao i a Hoaki i Hawaiki i te rironga maitanga o te kura hai hari mai ki Aotearoa.

I tāraia he waka anō hai hokinga mai mō te iwi i haramai i Aotearoa me Te Whānau-a-Irākewa o Hawaiki, ko Mātaatua. Ko Mātaatua he waka kawē ō, nāna te kūmara ki Aotearoa.

### 3.5.5 Mātaatua

*Tōia te waka e!*

*Tōia te waka e!*

*Tōia i runga i te maunga e tū mai nei*

*E tū mai nei i runga i te ngaro parapara koa!*

*Ā me he tētē waka e!*

*Me he tētē waka e!*

*Me he pītau whakareia!*

Ana koinei te haka i tō ai te rākau i te tuawhenua ki tātahi kia pai ai te hāua o te rākau hai waka. Ko te karakia tēnei a Mātaatua mō ngā toki i whakatoki i a Mātaatua i Hawaiki rawa. Ko Te Apa-ā-rangi me Te Kore-kai-tangata ngā toki.

*Toki uri, toki uri, toki amoamo*

*Ake hoki au i taku toki nei*

*Kia rahirahi to kiki, kia rahirahi to kaka*

*Nohea te toki nei a manihi*

*Nohea te toki nei e manaha*

*Te manaha nui a Tane nui ake, nui ake, nui marire*

*Koia ra. Koia ra*

*Koia ra tutara wiwini*

*Koia ra tutara wawana*

*Nohea i toki ai? No runga i toki ai*

*Oi!*

*Homai taku toki*

*Taku toki nei he riponga, he awhenga*

*Tu mai te toki. Haumi-E*

(Best, 1972, pp. 723-724).

Ko te atua o runga i a Mātaatua ko Rongomai, ko Rongomai tērā ko te auahi tūroa o te rangi nā, ka kite ia whitu tekau mā rima tau, ko Rongomai. Ko Tūtarakauika te taniwhā i ārahi mai i a Mātaatua. Ko ngā manu tipua ko Mumuhau rāua ko Takeretou. Ko te ariki o runga i a Mātaatua ko Toroa, ko te tohunga ko Tamakihikurangi. Ko ngā tāngata o runga i haramai i Hawaiki:

**Ngā tāngata o runga i a Mātaatua waka**

- Toroa (m)
- Rauaihona (t) tama a Toroa
- Puhi-kai-ariki (t) taina o Toroa
- Tāneatua (m) tuakana o Toroa engari he whaea anō tona ko Wairākewa
- Muriwai (w) tuahine o Toroa
- Wairaka (w) tamāhine a Toroa
- Puha-rau-nui (w) wahine a Tāneatua a Toroa rānei
- Tahinga-te-rā (t) mokopuna a Toroa
- Rāhiri (t) tama a Puhi-kai-ariki
- Kake-pikitua (w) wahine a Toroa
- Wekanui (w) wahine a Irākewa
- Nūiho
- Nūake
- Hikaroa
- Whakapoi
- Taka (t)
- Whāre
- Rongomai
- Tarawhata (t)
- Puhi-moana-ariki
- Ruauru (t)
- Manu (t)
- Maheuri
- Hinemataroa (w) wahine a Tāneatua

- Taunga
- Kanioro (w) tuahine o Taukata
- Tūturiwhatu (w) tuahine o Taukata
- Māhanga-i-te-rangi (w)
- Mū
- Waituhi
- Taiaroa
- Tūkapua
- Tītahi
- Akuramatapu (Kurahaupō)
- Turu (Kurahaupō)
- Te Moungaroa (Kurahaupō)

Ko te tokotoru whakamutunga nō runga kē mai i te waka o Kurahaupō.

Ko te terenga maitanga o Mātaatua i Hawaiki ko Tuamatua te ingoa o te waka. He whakamaumaharatanga ake ki te kōrero e pā ana ki a Te Tua he ariki taungaroa me tana tua i tētahi rākau. Te tuatanga ka pō, aoinaake nō te hokinga ki tana rākau kua tū anō. Nō te rua o ngā pērātanga ka huna a Te Tua kia kite ko wai tērā kua mahi hanariki i a ia. Ka kite ake ia he hē nō ana karakia kua tū anō te rākau i ngā manu, i ngā ngārara. Whāia ka haramai he ngārara ko Tuamatua te ingoa ka whakarauina a Te Tua hai tāne māna, whāia ka whānau mai he tamaiti tāne mā rāua ka huaina ko Pōmare te ingoa.

He kōrero tēnei mō te takenga mai o Mātaatua i te moutere o Maukē e ai ki tā te iwi o Maukē wānanga i whakapuakina mai ai ki runga o Whitianga marae ki roto o Te Whānau-a-Tūtawake i te 21 o Oketopa 2017. I tapahia te rākau mō Mātaatua ki runga o Maukē ki Ruatoki-ātea. Tērā tētahi rangatira ko Paikea tōna ingoa e noho ana ki Maukē. I tētahi rangi he tūārangaranga nō te moana ka haere whakawaho a Paikea ki runga ki ngā toka ki waho i a Tangaroa. I reira tana wahine e pōhirihiri ana i a Paikea; “Paikea hoki mai, kai te kino te moana!” E hia ngā pērātanga engari he aha te aha, ka haere, ka haere ka tohetohe tonu a Paikea me te whakaputa haere tonu i a ia ki waho rā anō. E ai ki te kōrero, he mōhio anō nō Paikea, arā ngā waka e whitu kua tata te rere atu i Rarotonga ki Aotearoa. I pīrangi a Paikea ki te whai haere anō hoki. He tohunga a Paikea ki te wānanga o Tangaroa, he tangata mārama ia ki te rere o te au moana, ki te pānui i te moana me ōna kōrero. I tērā rā, he mārama pai nō Paikea ko te au e rere atu ana ki Mangaia me tana mōhio ko te ariki o Mangaia he Mauke. Ehara ka rere a Paikea ka tau ki Mangaia. I reira ka hoatu e te ariki o reira he waka hai hoehoenga mō Paikea ki Rarotonga. Ko te taunga

atu o Paikea ki Rarotonga, ko tōna hekenga mai i Rarotonga ki Aotearoa mā runga i te waka o Mātaatua.

Anei te karakia tope i te rākau mō Mātaatua. Nā Tā Mōnita Delamere i ako mai ki ahau. I whakamahia e ia mō te whakatūwhera whare hou, hai tauparapara hoki mō ana whaikōrero hoki.

*Kotia te pū waiho i uta, kotia te kauru waiho i tai. E ai rā ki te umu a Te Tahi kīhai i tae ki ngā piringa, ki ngā wānanga, matua kuru, matua whao matua tū hoki ai au i te whare*

*hukahuka o Tangaroa*

*Tangaroa e ko wai i kotia*

*Ko Nuku-tai-maroro*

*Orooro te toki a Hinetūahoanga a Tangaroa*

*Ko Hau, ko Hine, ko Rata*

*E kimi ana e hahau ana i tōna waka i whītikia mai*

*I mate ki Maunganui*

*Te kekete mai, te kekete mai*

*He manu whakarongo tipua te manu nei*

*Te tōrea ā uta*

*Te tōrea ā tai*

*Ka kōwhetewhete mai ō ngutu*

*Tū ki taha katau ko Rongo ki taha mauī*

*E tū nūmia, e tū rāwea*

*Whakahotunuku, Whakahoturangi*

*Ko tō manawa e Tāne*

*Ko tōku manawa e Tāne*

*Tēnā whakairihia*

*Whano whano haramai te toki*

*Haumi e! Hui e!*

*Taiki e!*

Nō te tau 1989 ki te wānanga o Te Whakatōhea i whai kupu a Tīwai Amoamo kaumātua o Te Whakatōhea mō te rerenga mai a Mātaatua ki Aotearoa. I mua i te rerenga o Mātaatua i whai kupu a Irākewa ki ana tamariki. Kua tae kē a Irākewa ki Aotearoa. He toka kai te pūwaha o te awa o Whakatāne ko Irākewa tonu te ingoa. He putunga kōhatū kai runga o Maungapōhatū ko Te Tāpapatanga o Irākewa te ingoa hai tohu i te hanatūtanga o Irākewa ki Aotearoa. Ko te kupu a Irākewa ki āna tamariki e pēnei ana, inā tae koutou ki Aotearoa ko te kāinga hai

nohoanga mō koutou kai rahatika o te moana, he tūtohu whenua ōna, he wairere e heke ana i ngā pari kōhatū, ā, he ana anō hoki hai nōhanga mō tō koutou tuahine mō Muriwai. Koia te ariki tapairū, te mātāmua o te whānau. He wahine tapu, me noho wehe ia i te iwi.

E whai ake nei te karakia i whakarewa i a Mātaatua e kīa nei tēnei ko te Tau o Mātaatua:-

*Ko wai rā! Ko wai rā!*  
*Te tangata tūtū taua*  
*Kāore koa ko Hau, ko Nūiho, ko Nūake*  
*Ko Manu, ko Weka, ko Torosa, ko Ruaihona, ko Te Tahinga-o-te-rā*  
*Tēnei te maro ka hurua*  
*Huruhuru nui nō Manu, nō Weka*  
*Ka tū tapori atu, ka tū tapori mai*  
*Wero noa, wero noa ngā rākau whakaiaia*  
*Nā ngā tīpuna i tīkina mai i rāwāhi*  
*Hai hōmai mō taku waka mō Waimihia*  
*Te mata o ngā rākau a Tūkariri*  
*Te mata o ngā rākau a Tūkaniwha*  
*Te mata o ngā rākau a Tūkaitaua*  
*Whāno, whāno haramai te toki*  
*Haumi e. Hui e. Tāiki e.*

Ko te karakia ruruku i a Mātaatua tēnei e whai ake nei e kīa nei ko te Kawa o Mātaatua. Ko tāna e ruruku i a Mātaatua kia kaha i tāna wāhi i ngā ihinga moana, i ngā wharenga moana:-

*Tūtapa, tūtapa, tūtapa mai kawa*  
*Ko te kawa nui, ko te kawa roa*  
*Kōruru mā hea i tuki mai Pou*  
*Pou hoki i te āniwaniwa*  
*Koia rutua ki te toi nuku*  
*Koia rutua ki te toi rangi*  
*Hāmoa hā ko ruru taku rama*  
*Ko te rama nā wai?*  
*Ko te rama nā Tū*  
*Ka ruru ki hea?*  
*Ka ruru ki Waioriki*  
*Ka ruru ki Waioraka*

*Kape tī. Kape tā.*  
*Kape mahuki te marangai tua*  
*I aua kia eke*  
*Eke, eke Tangaroa*  
*Eke panuku*  
*Haumi e. Hui e. Tāiki e.*

He waka hari ō mai a Mātaatua ki Aotearoa; ko te kūmara. Ko te kupu a Hoake ki te Whare o Irākewa i te rerenga mai i Hawaiki; “Narā hauhakatia te kūmara ki Aotearoa patua taku taina a Taukata me te pani anō i ōna toto ki te rua kūmara hai pupuri i te mauri o te kūmara kai hoki te kura ki te toi i Hawaiki.” Ko te rerenga maitanga a Mātaatua tērā.

Ka raruraru a Mātaatua ki Te Korokoro o Te Parata, ko te ūnga tērā o Mātaatua ki Rangitahua ki te whakatikatika i te waka. I reira i kitea e Toroa he whakakitenga, ko te kanohi o te Atua i te rangi. Ā, ka tapaina anō te waka, he ingoa anō ko Te Mata o te Atua, arā, ko Mātaatua.

I Rangitahua i raruraru anō te waka a Kurahaupō, anā, ko te ekenga o ētahi o tēnā waka hai pāhīhī mā Mātaatua ko Akuramatapu, ko Turu, ko Te Moungaroa.

E ai ki te kōrero a ngā pakeke, ko te ūnga mai o Mātaatua ki Taungāwaka he kokoru ki te take o Tihirau ki Whangaparāoa mai tawhiti. Atu i reira ka rere whakaterātō a Mātaatua ka tae ki Tauranga ka hoki whakaterāwhiti. Ka tae ki Kākahoroa ka kitea ngā tūtohu whenua i kīa rā e Irākewa, ko te wairere me te ana hai nōhanga mō Muriwai, e mōhiotia ana ko Te Ana o Muriwai tērā. Ko te ūnga ki Kākahoroa, ka makere ngā tāne ki te taunaha whenua, ki te tapa whenua. Ka pari te tai ka raruraru a Mātaatua. Ko te tūnga ake tērā a Muriwai me te karakia; “Kia tū ake whakatāne au i ahau.” Ana i ora a Mātaatua me tōna iwi anō hoki i runga.

Hoi anō he whakapae anō tāku mō te ūnga maitanga a Mātaatua kai te pēnei; ko te ūngā o Mātaatua ki Taungāwaka i huri whakaterāwhiti kē ki te kimi haere i ngā tūtohu whenua a tō rātou pāpā a Irākewa, arā ki te kimi i te wairere me te ana i rahatika. Anā hai tāku i huri whakaterāwhiti kē a Mātaatua, i ū atu anō ki Whangārāmaita-whiti, anā ki Tūranga i te mea ko te haika o Mātaatua ko Taiau, ko te toka kai waenganui o te awa o Tūranga-nui-ā-Kiwa, e wehea ai a Ngāti Porou, e wehea ai a Te Aitanga a Māhaki ko Te Toka a Taiau te ingoa. Anā i huri whakatetonga o Tūranga ko Muriwai te ingoa. Ka piki tonu ake ki Te Whanganui a Tara ko Tapu-te-ranga, anā he moutere kai reira ko Tapu-te-ranga-o-Mātaatua te ingoa. Ana i pae a Mātaatua ki runga i taua moutere i tētahi ngaru nui i rukea a Mātaatua ki runga. Ko tēnei mea te ranga, ko ngā rākau ka whakamahia ki raro i te waka ki te neke i te waka, he ranga tērā, ki

ētahi iwi he neke. Ana i whakaritea te moutere rā ki te ranga o te waka, anā i whakataputia nā te mea ko Mātaatua te waka. Ko Tapu-te-ranga-o-Mātaatua. Ka riri a Muriwai ki tana tūngane ki a Toroa mō te hē o tāna urungi i a Mātaatua, anā rukea a Muriwai ki te wai, anā ka tāpapa ki runga i tētahi toka, ko Te Tāpapatanga o Muriwai tērā toka. Kai runga ake i te hiwi Palmer Head ki Pōneke ko Rangitatau, ko Rangitatau te tūahu o Toroa i te wā i a Mātaatua i reira. Ko Tītahi anō tētahi i haramai i runga i a Mātaatua, ko Tītahi he kokoru kai te Ūpoko o Te Ika ki Porirua. Kai te kokoru o Pukerua hoki ko Wairaka me Toroa. He tohu whakamaumahara ēnei ingoa ki te ūnga atu o Mātaatua ki roto ki te Ūpoko o Te Ika. Ana i whakataka atu anō ngā tāngata o Kurahaupō ki te takiwā ki Taranaki maunga, ko Akuramatapu, ko Turu, ko Te Moungaroa. Ko te ingoa tawhito o Parihaka ko Rēpanga, ko Rēpanga te tama a Muriwai. Ko taku whakapae koirā ngā iwi o Taranaki ka kī ake kai runga i te Maunga Tītōhea ngā manu mōhio arā, ko ngā kaitiaki o Mātaatua ko Mumuhau rāua ko Takeretou i te mea i reira a Mātaatua. Huri tonu atu ki te moana o Kāwhia, kai reira te koi ko Mātaatua te ingoa. Heke tonu atu ko Te Mānukanukatanga o Toroa tērā e ai ki a Mātaatua, kai ngā pāpāringa o Manukau kai Māngere i ēnei rā te marae o Mātaatua. Kai runga o Māunga-Kiekie ko ngā whakairo a Tītahi, ko ngā māra ērā a Tītahi. Ko Ōwairaka tērā, anā i matewai a Wairaka ka takahia tana waewae ka hīhī ake te wai, ko Te Punawai o Wairaka tērā. Kai reira kai Tāmaki ko te ākau ko Muriwai tērā. Ana heke haere tonu ki Te Hiku o Te Ika ki te raki o Kaitaia kai reira tētahi kāinga ko Awanui te ingoa, ko Awanuiārangi tērā i reira te Tini-o-Awa e noho ana kai reira ōna pā, kai reira ōna kōrero. Ana kai ngā kōrero i ū atu ai a Mātaatua ki te awa o Taiki ki te moana o Te Waitematā. Kai Hauraki ko te moutere ko Rēpanga i reira i whakataka atu a Mātaatua i ōna kaitiaki a Mumuhou rāua ko Takeretou. Ka tau atu ki Te Moana-a-Toi ko Pukehina, ko Te Pukehinahina a Muriwai tērā, ka takoto a Muriwai, a Toroa, ko rātou i tātahi ka kite ake a Toroa i te puke huruhuru o tana tuahine e hina ana, ka tapaina te wāhi rā ko Te Pukehinahina a Muriwai. Ka heke mai ki Te Kaokaoroa, ko Te Kaokaoroa o Toroa tērā. Ana i Matata i rere ai Te Awa o te Atua i a Wairaka, anā ko te mate ā marama tērā. I Te Awa o te Atua i tuku a Muriwai i tana taniwhā ko Tarakura tērā. Ko Tarakura he taniwha kāore ōna uri, he kaitangata. Anā, koirā i puta ai te whakataukī; “Ko ngā mate o Pūtauaki tangihia ki Kōhi, ko ngā mate o Kōhi tangihia ki Pūtauaki.” Anā, he kore nō ngā ope i taea ngā ūhunga, i kaingia rātou i te awa o Tarawera e te taniwha nei a Tarakura. Ana ka tae a Mātaatua ki waho atu o Whakatāne, ka mate anō a Wairaka i te mātē kōhi, ka ingoa te koi rā ko Te Rae o Kōhi. I reira ko te kitengatia o ngā tūtohu whenua ko te wairere tērā, ko Te Wairere te ingoa, ko te ana hai nōhanaga mō Muriwai, ko Te Ana o Muriwai tērā. “Kia tū ake whakatāne au i ahau!”

Ko taku whakapae tērā. He aha rātou i kōpikopiko pēnā i te Ika ā Māui pēnei i te pura piki whakarunga me te heke whakararo, huri atu, huri mai me he heahea? E kao i huri tāiāwhio i te whenua, i tāunaha haeretia te whenua, arā ngā tūtohu whenua, arā ngā ingoa, arā ngā kōrero a

Mātaatua kua pouwhenua rawatia ki te whenua e takoto mai i te hiku, ki te ūpoko, ki ngā paihau o Te Ika nui a Māui.

Ka hoki mai ki Kākahoroa ki Whakatāne ki te ūnga mai o Mātaatua. E ai ki te kōrero kāore i tika te karakia a Toroa i te mawe o Mātaatua. Nā Muriwai anō hoki tērā nāna i tere atu ki te moana me te mānuka, anā i whakatō i te mawe ki roto ki te mānuka, anā koia te Mānuka Tūtahi ko te mauri tērā o Mātaatua e karangatia ana; Te Kūreitanga o Mātaatua. I tū Te Mānuka Tūtahi ki Makaka (Best, 1972).

I whakatūngia e Toroa tōna whare maire ko Tūpapakurau te ingoa. Ko te whare wānanga tuatahi tēnei o Mātaatua waka ki Aotearoa, ko Toroa te tohunga o roto. I whakatikaina e rātou te māra hai rūmaki i te kura mai i Hawaiki, arā te kūmara ko Matirerau te ingoa o te māratautāne ki a Rongomātāne. Ana i patua a Taukata ki roto i te rua kūmara me te panipania o tana toto ki te rua, hai pupuri i te mauri o te kūmara, kia kore ai te kura mai i Hawaiki e hokia e ai ki te tikanga i takoto i a Hoake. Koia nei te takenga mai o Mātaatua i Hawaiki me tāna ō ko te kūmara.

Hai tō i tēnei waka kōrero ki uta ka titiro whakatemuri kia kite i ngā riponga wai i whakaterea ai te waka nei mai i te whanaketanga maitanga o tēnei kura i raro i a Awarua, arā, te hekenga mai o Te Whakatōhea i Hawaiki, ā tae rawa ake ki te ūnga maitanga ki Te Moana-a-Toi, ko Te Whakatōhea i a Muriwai ki Kākahoroa, ki Whakatāne ki Te Mānuka Tūtahi. Ka tuia ngā kīato, ka tuia ngā rauawaawa, ka tuia ngā haumi ki te takere o tēnei waka kōrero, ā, i te ūnga ki uta ka herea te tauihu ki Tokataiau arā ki te punga o tēnei kōrero.

### **3.6 Ngā Tīpuna Ariki**

Ariki taketake i hua ai ko Te Whakatōhea iwi, he ariki nui, ariki roa, ariki rau i pouwhenuatia ai ko Te Whakatōhea mana whenua, i tokatū moanatia ai ko Te Whakatōhea mana moana, ko te poutirirangitia ai ko Te Whakatōhea mana rangi. Ka kuramahora te korowai o Te Whakatōhea e raupitia ai tōna whenuakura, ōnā tūtohu whenua, ōna hapū, ōna marae me ngā iwi kai te remu o tōna korowai whenuakura. Hakoia tokomaha ngā ariki, ngā tīpuna mana nui, pakihīwi kaha, whakaihuwaka. Mō tēnei tuhikura tokorua ngā amokura iho ariki aho tapu ko Tūtāmure rāua ko Muriwai ka whakarākeitia ki ō nui, ki ō tiketike, ki ō tapu nara i pouwhenuatia ai ko Te Whakatōhea mana whenua, i tokatū imoanatia ai ko Te Whakatōhea mana moana, ko te poutirirangitia ai ko Te Whakatōhea mana rangi.

### 3.6.1 Tūtāmure

*Te tangata nāna i noho Whakarua*

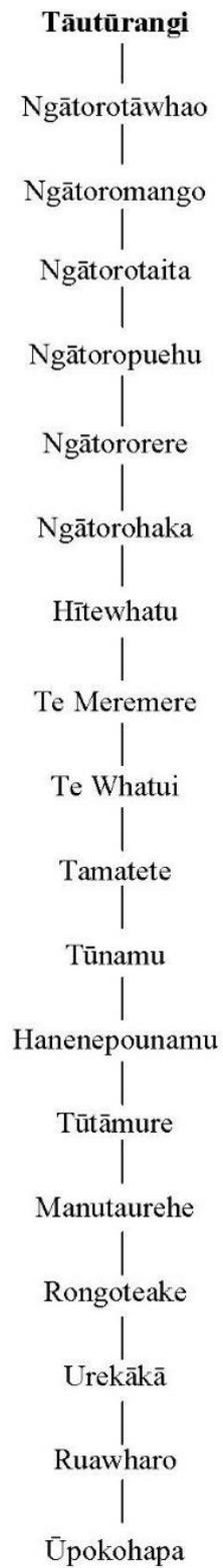
*Kārangaranga te muri ka tutū ngā tamatea o te moana e*

*E ko au, ko au, ko au tēnei ko Tūtāmure.*

He ngeri nā Tūtāmure i te wā i whakaekea a Manga-ā-Kahia e ia ki te patu i tana tipuna koroua a Kahungunu hai ngaki i te mate o tana tuahine a Tāneroa. Ko te roanga o te kōrero kai te whai ake nei. I whakaakona ahau ki tēnei ngeri nōku e tamariki ana tekaumārua taku pakeke e Tā Mōnita Delamere (1979), i tana noho ki a māua ko taku kuia a Kaaterina Maxwell ki te whare o taku kuia. Hai kaihanga a Tā Mōnita ki taku kuia me taku māmā a Matirerau.

Ko Tūtāmure he ūpokoariki, he toa. Pō te ao i a ia, he ngārara, he weriweri, he pakanga tāna kai. Ko Tūtāmure te ūpokoariki o tōna iwi o Te Wakanui. He rongo toa nō Tūtāmure, te kīanga kotahi i tōna ingoa, i ngāoko ai te whenua, tūtū ana ngā tuatara o tāmure ki te moana puta noa ki Te Tairāwhiti whānui tonu, huri whakaterātō hoki ki roto o Te Arawa, ki Te Moana hoki o Tauranga. Ko ōna tawatawainga ko Nukutere te waka, ko Tautūrangi te tangata, ko Tainui te waka, ko Tōrerenuiārua te puhariki, ko Hoturoa te tangata, ko Takitimu te waka ko Tamatearikinui te tangata, ko Whāene te tipuna.

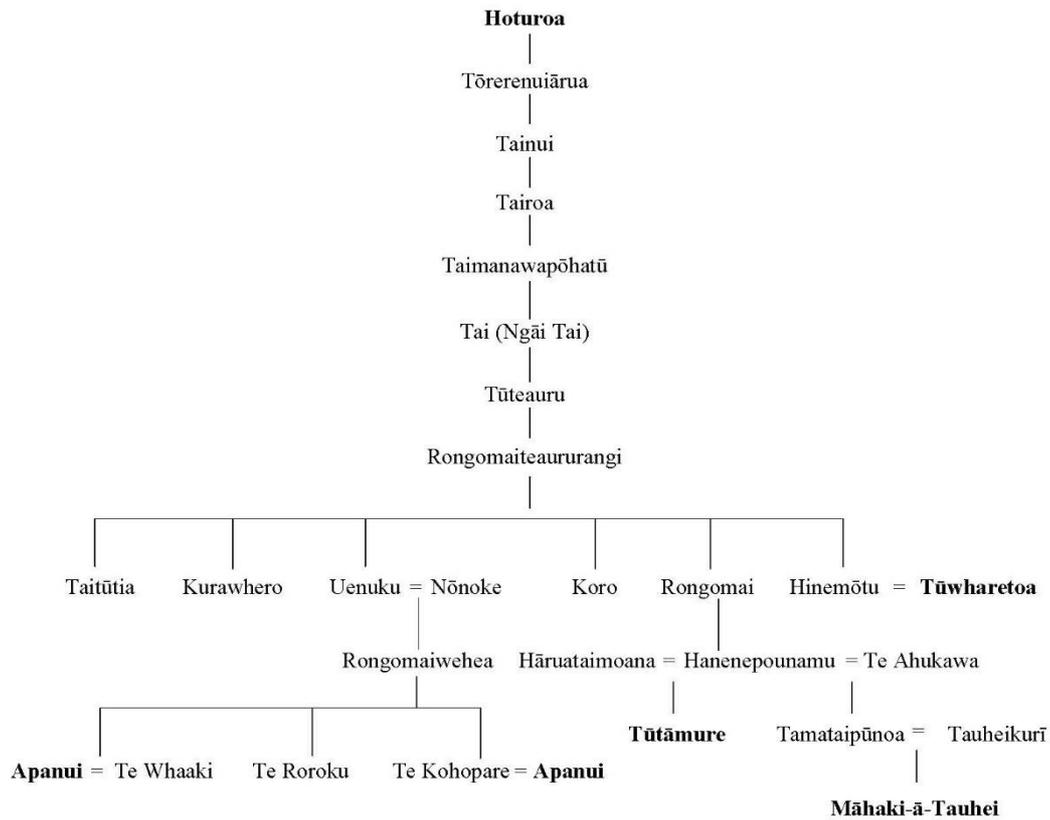
## WHAKAPAPA O TŪTĀMURE KI A NUKUTERE WAKA



*Whakapapa 7: Tūtāmure Nukutere Waka, mana whakaae Te Riaki Amoamo.*

Ko te whaea o Tūtāmure ko Hanenepounamu, ko tōna whakapapa i heke mai i a Nukutere waka ki tana matua ki a Tūnamu. I ū rawa mai a Nukutere ki Te Rangi, ki Awaawakino. Ko ōna tawatawainga i a Nukutere waka, ko Ngāti Porou, ko Rongomaiwahine.

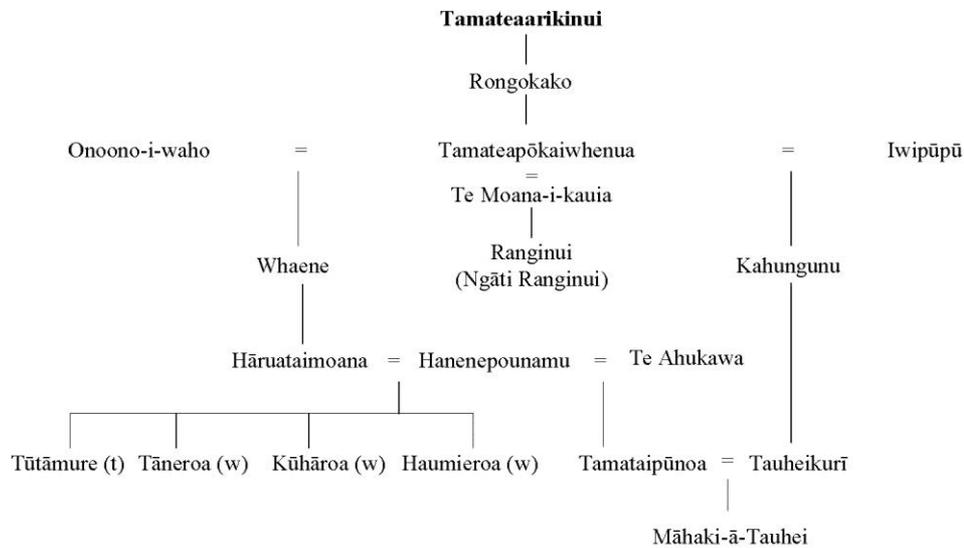
### WHAKAPAPA O TŪTĀMURE KI A TAINUI WAKA



Whakapapa 8: Tūtāmure Tainui Waka, mana whakaae Wiremu Maxwell.

Ki te taha ki te whaea o Hanenepounamu ko Tainui te waka. I whānau mai a Tūtāmure ki te kāinga nei ki Tōrere tonu ki te pā e karangatia ana ko Ōtūtāmure. Ko ōna tawatawainga ko Ngāi Tai, ko Te Whānau-a-Apanui, ko Tūwharetoa ki Kawerau, ko Te Aitanga-a-Māhaki, Ko Tainui waka nui tonu.

## WHAKAPAPA O TŪTĀMURE KI A TAKITIMU WAKA



*Whakapapa 9: Tūtāmure Takitimu Waka, mana whakaae Wiremu Maxwell.*

Ki te taha ki te matua o Tūtāmure ko Takitimu te waka. Ko te matua o Tūtāmure ko Hāruataimoana tama nā Whaene te mātāmua a Tamateapōkaiwhenua. Ko ōna tawatawainga ko Takitimu waka whānui tonu, ko Ngāti Kahungunu, Ngāti Ranginui ki te moana o Tauranga, ko Te Aitanga a Māhaki, ko Ngāti Kahu ki Muriwhenua.

Ko te ingoa o Tūtāmure nō runga tonu i a Takitimu waka. Nā Kahungunu ia i tapa ki te ingoa nei a Tūtāmure. Hai taina a Kahungunu ki a Whaene te tipuna o Tūtāmure.

I ngā rā o mua i noho a Kahungunu ki te moana o Tauranga tētahi pā ko Mangatawa te ingoa. Ko taua pā nō Tamateapōkaiwhenua. Tokotoru ngā tama a Tamateapōkaiwhenua. Ko Whaene te mātāmua, ko Ranginui tōmuri, ko Kahungunu te mātāmuri. I tētahi rangi i haere te tokotoru a Tamatea ki Otira ki te hao ika. Nō te mutunga o ngā mahi ka rere te ringa o Kahungunu ki te tango mai i te ika rarahi o te katoa māna. Tahī ka paoa e Ranginui te ūpoko o Kahungunu ki te tāmure, te take, ko tōna tikanga ia mā tō rāua tuakana, mā Whaene kē te ika rarahi me ngā ika papai katoa, koia te tuakana. Hoi anō i kauparengia atu e Kahungunu te tāmure nei ki tana ringa. Hoi anō i taotūtia tōna ringa ki ngā tuatara o te tāmure rā. Ka pōuri whakamā a Kahungunu ka haere whakaterāwhiti ki Ōpōtiki i reira tana irāmutu a Hāruataimoana e noho ana. Tae rawa ake ia ki Ōpōtiki kua hapū te wahine a Hāruataimoana, ko Hanenepounamu. Ka mea a Kahungunu ki tana tamaiti; ki te whānau mai he tāne, tapaina ki te ingoa Tūtāmure hai

whakamaumaharatanga ake ki te tūtanga o te ringa o Kahungunu ki te tuatara tāmure, anā,  
Tūtāmure.

*Ko wai te rangatira o te taua nei?  
'Te tangata nāna i noho Whakarua  
Kārangaranga te muri  
Ka tutū ngā tamatea o te Moana  
Ko au! Ko au tēnei, Ko Tūtāmure'!  
Huakina mai te tatau o Tauranga  
Kia kite au i a Maungatawa  
Ki Kawhainui e tū nei  
I Āhaha! I Āhaha!  
Ko Tamatea-arikinui  
Nāna ko Rongokako  
Nāna ko Tamatea-pōkaiwhenua  
I Āhaha!  
Nāna ko Whaene  
Tō muri ko Kahungunu  
Tō muri ko Ranginui  
Te tokotoru a Tamatea-pōkaiwhenua  
Ki Otira ngā tamatoa  
"Whaakautia te kaharoa"  
Kapakapa huki te wai i te tini mai i te Puna i Rangiriri  
Tangohia wareatia e Kahu te ika nui  
Mō Te Ahi-parapara, Te ika ka iri,  
Ko te mau a Tangaroa  
Ka hū a Whakaari i te puku o Whaene  
Ūpokokōhua Kahu  
Hahau tōna ūpoko ki te mau a Tangaroa  
Ka tū tōna ringa i te tuatara tamure  
"He taotamure e taea te parepare  
He taokupu tē taea te parepare"  
Ānō he kāhu e āniū atu rā  
Tau atu Ōpōtiki  
Ko Hāruataimoana, ko Hanenepounamu  
Me te ewe i te āhurutanga mōwai  
"Tēnā Hanene;*

*Ki te whānau he tāne, tapaia ki te tūnga o taku ringa i te tuatara tāmure”.*

*Huakina Huaki-pouri*

*He toa! He toa! Haramai ra he toa!*

*Ko Tūtāmure*

*I tohia ki a Tama-i-waho*

*Whakangungu rawa ki ngā rākau matarua a Tū-kaitaua*

*I haria ki te paepae tūruma*

*Whakangau rawa ki te heketua,*

*I Āhaha!*

*Paoro te rongo, Paoro te rongotoa*

*Ko wai rā te tangata tutū taua*

*‘Taua i te huata, taua i te ake*

*Kau tango, kau mai te ariki a Tamakore*

*Kānapanapa rā runga o Mākeo*

*Pakō! Pakō!*

*Ka ora nei tāua ka nenehu te Panenehu’*

*‘He ngārara hoki koe ko Tūtāmure’*

*‘He Weriweri, He weriweri*

*Ko Tūtāmure’*

*Hī!*

(Haka: Tūtāmure, Te Kahautu Maxwell, performed at Te Matatini, Auckland, 2003)

He haka tēnei i fītoa hai whakanui i a Tūtāmure e te kairangakura i te tau 2001. Kai roto i te haka ko te whakapapa o te ingoa o Tūtāmure ko tōna rongotoa, he rākaukawa ki te mau rākau, ki te ārahi taua. Kai roto i te haka nei ko ōna whakatauaāki hoki.

Ko te rongotoa o Tūtāmure i puta i tana whakaeke ki runga ki te pā o tōna tipuna a Kahungunu, ki Manga-ā-Kahia (Maungakāhia) mō te patunga o tana tuahine a Tāneroa e tana tāne a Rongomainōtai nō roto o te rohe o Tūranga. Ana i pau i a Tūtāmure a Tūranga te patu kātahi ka tahuri whakatetonga te titiro ki te pā o tana koroua o Kahungunu kia ea ai te mate o Tāneroa. Ko te ingoa o te pā ko Manga-ā-Kahia (Maungakāhia). Kīhai i taea a Manga-ā-Kahia e te tangata ahakoa te toa, ahakoa te iwi. Engari rā ia a Tūtāmure. Anā hinga i a Tūtāmure a Manga-ā-Kahia engari i ora a Kahungunu i tana pātaitanga; “*Ko wai te rangatira o te taua nei?*” Ko te whakahoki a Tūtāmure; “*Kāore koe i rongu mō te tāngta nāna i noho Whakarua kārangaranga te muri ka tutū ngā tuatara o tāmure. Ko au, ko au, ko Tūtāmure!*”

Mārama marika a Kahungunu ki te whakapapa hai mokopuna a Tūtāmure māna, anā ka rautakitia e Kahungunu e ora ai a ia me tana iwi, i tukuna tana tamāhine a Tauhei hai wahine mā Tūtāmure hai whakamoe i ngā maunga, hai pākūhā, hai paepaetehe. Engari i pōhēhē a Tauheikurī ko te taina o Tūtāmure a Tamataipūnoa kē a Tūtāmure i te mea koia te tangata pūrotū o rāua. Ka pukuriri a Tūtāmure ka titiro ia ki roto i tētahi hōpua wai, e karangatia ana ko Te Waiwhakaata o Tūtāmure ka kite ia i tōna weriweri, ka puta i a ia te whakatauki; “He ngārara hoki koe ko Tūtāmure.” Ka moe te taina a Tamataipūnoa i a Tauheikurī ka puta ki waho ko Māhaki, nāna ko Te Aitanga a Māhaki.

Hai tatau pounamu i te riri i waenganui i a Tūtāmure me tana iwi a Te Wakanui me Kahungunu me tana iwi ka whakamoea ngā tūāhine o Tūtāmure a Kūhāroa rāua ko Hamieroa ki a Te Aomatarahi tētahi o ngā toa o Kahungunu. Ko Te Aomatarahi rāua ko Taraia ngā rākaukawa o Kahungunu nāna nei i muru te whenua mai i Te Matau-ā-Māui ki te Wairārapa, ko Taraia ki uta, ko Te Aomatarahi ki tai.

Ko te waiata e whai ake nā te kairangakura e whakapapa haeretia ana ko te pākūhā o ngā tūāhine o Tūtāmure a Haumieroa rāua ko Kūhāroa ki a Te Aomatarahi o Ngāti Kahungunu. Ko te pākūhā nei hai tatau pounamu mō te patunga o Tāneroa, tuahine anō o Tūtāmure i a Kahungunu. I titoa i te tau 2016.

*E kī ana au Tāneroa<sup>10</sup>*

*He tamāhine ia nā koe nā Hāruatai runga rā e<sup>11</sup>*

*I patua ia rā ki Nukutaurua*

*He toto ia nā koe nō Tamatea-ariki-nui*

*Ngaro noa atu koe e te puhi*

*Māku e tangi ki te kuru Waiwharangi<sup>12</sup>*

*Ki taku toki hei whakahoki mai*

*Te hiakai<sup>13</sup>*

*Ka tae kau te rongu ki Kapakaparaoa*

*Tēnei au ko Tūtāmure*

---

<sup>10</sup> Tāneroa: Ko Tāneroa te tuahine o Tūtāmure.

<sup>11</sup> Hāruatai: Ko Hāruatai, ko Hāruataimoana te matua o Tāneroa me Tūtāmure.

<sup>12</sup> Waiwharangi: He tokipoutangata tērā i riro i a Te Whakatōhea i te pakanga Te Ahi Tarakihi ki a Ngāi Tai.

<sup>13</sup> Te hiakai: Ko te hiakai tēnei a Tūtāmure ki te rānaki i te mate o tana tuahine, o Tāneroa.

*Kotahi au i mate ai*  
*Ko tō whare Kahungunu*  
*Ko te waha i pā mai kei Titirangi<sup>14</sup>*  
*He whakaminenga ki Kapakaparaoa*  
*Ka tū au ki runga rā Maungakāhia ka paenga kotakota koutou<sup>15</sup>*  
*Kāti rā matā! Kāti rā motā!<sup>16</sup>*  
*Kawekaweau! Kawekaweau!<sup>17</sup>*  
*Ka tutū ngā tuatara a Tāmure<sup>18</sup>*  
*Kōpehupehu!<sup>19</sup>*

*Taua i te huata!*  
*Taua i te ake*  
*Ka ora nei tāua ka nenehu te Panenehu<sup>20</sup>*  
*Pekepeke hauaitū te manu-waero-rua te hau e tū nei*  
*Kōpehupehu!*  
*Tangohia waretia e koe te ika kapakapa nui a Tūmatauenga*  
*Kānapanapa a Tamakore ki runga o Maungakāhia*  
*Tāoro! Tāoro!<sup>21</sup>*

*Ko wai te rangatira o te taua nei?*

---

<sup>14</sup> Titirangi: he pā ki roto o Tūranga, ko Titirangi ko te puke o Kaiti e mōhiotia ana i tēnei rā.

<sup>15</sup> Paenga kotakota: Ko te hiakai o Tūtāmure kia rite te takoto o te tūpāpaku ki te ākau ki te paenga o te kotakota te rite ko ngā anga pipi ērā.

<sup>16</sup> Kāti rā matā! Kāti rā motā!: Ko te whakaeke tere tērā o te taua, ka mau ohore te hoariri kāore e tāea te aha. I pērā te whakaeke a Tūtāmure me tana ope taua ki runga o Maungakāhia kihai a Kahungunu i mōhio, i horo te pā.

<sup>17</sup> Kawekaweau: He ngārara nui tēnei mokomoko, he ngārara kaitangata.

<sup>18</sup> Ka tutū ngā tuatara a Tāmure: Ko tēnei kōrero e ai ki te kōrero a ngā tīpuna 5000 te nui o te hokowhitu a Tūtāmure. E whā mano i haere mā te ara riri whakauaua, o riri whakanekeneke, anā, kotahi mano i haere mā te tuarā o Hinemoana. Ko tēnei kōrero e mea ana ko te rite o ngā waka taua e rua teka mā rima e paenga ana ki uta i runga i a ngaru nui, ngaru roa, ngaru whatiwhati ko tōna ritenga ki te kauterenga mai o ngā tuatara ki uta. He whakamatakū.

<sup>19</sup> Kōpehupehu: Horoa te pā kia hinga.

<sup>20</sup> Nā Tūtāmure ēnei kōrero whakatauaākī nei; “Taua i te huata, taua i te ake...” E ai ki te kōrero nā te kaha nui o te whawhai a Tūtāmure i whati i a ia tana taiaha me tana huata. I reira i tangohia mai tana kotiate he paraoa, ko Tamakore te ingoa me tana kī; “ka ora nei tāua ka nenehu te panenehu.” Arā, ahakoa kua pakaru i a ia ana rākau whawhai ka nehua tonutia e ia me tana ope taua ngā pane o te hoariri nehu i te pane, panenehu. Ko te ingoa o te iwi i te wā i a Tūtāmure ko Te Wakanui, ko te maharatanga tērā ki tō rātou hekenga mai i Hawaiki i runga i a Nukutere waka tekau mā toru whakatipuranga i mua i a Mātaatua. Taka rawa mai ki Te Ūpokohapa mokopuna a Tūtāmure i hurihia te ingoa o te iwi nei ki a Te Panenehu.

<sup>21</sup> Tāoro: Horoa te pā kia hinga.

*Te tangata nāna i noho Whakarua  
Kārangaranga te muri ka tutū ngā tamatea o te moana  
Ko au, ko au tēnei Tūtāmure!*

*Ka hoki anō i a koe te ope taua nei?  
Kāore e ora te rapa o taku patu. Ka paoho te rongu.*

*Kahungunu kai hea koe?*

*Nau mai e tama ka moe tāua  
Koi mau ana te waituhi o taku hinenga<sup>22</sup>  
Kia aropiri mai ai ki a au nei  
Ka whanatu au ka haere i te one whakakoakoa ngākau o Tūaro-papaki e<sup>23</sup>  
Te Hautāruke<sup>24</sup>  
Pouwharekura<sup>25</sup>  
Kahungunu kai raro te kai  
He pipi, he tuangi, he kuku  
Ngā tamāhine a Te Whakatōhea<sup>26</sup>*

---

<sup>22</sup> Hinenga ko te aroaro tēnei o te wahine.

<sup>23</sup> Te one whakakoakoa ngākau o Tūaro-papaki: Ka mōhio te iwi noho taha moana ki tēnei kōrero me tēnei wāhi te one ki tātahi. Ko te one whakakoakoa ngākau, ko te one e koa ai te ngākau i tā te tāne mahi, i tā te wahine mahi ai. Ko Tūaro-papaki, ko te papakitanga o te aro o te tāne ki tō te wahine i te kaha koa, i te kaha reka o te mahi.

<sup>24</sup> Hautāruke: Ko Te Hautāruke he tipuna nō Te Whakatōhea, koia te wahine tuarua a Kahungunu. Ka moe a Kahungunu me Te Hautāruke i te wā i noho a Kahungunu ki reira me tana tamakēkē i a Hāruataimoana te tama a Whaene te tuakana o Kahungunu. Kua hapū te wahine a Hāruataimoana ko Hanenepounamu tōna ingoa. Ka tonu a Kahungunu ki te whānau mai he tāne tapaina ki te ingoa o Tūtāmure hai whakamaumaharatanga ki te tūnga o taku ringa ki te tara o te tāmure. I Mangatawa ki Tauranga e noho ana a Tamateapōkaiwhenua me ana tama tokotoru ko te mātāmua ko Whaene, ko Kahungunu me Ranginui. Ka heke atu te tokotoru nei ki te hao ika. I te mutunga o te haotanga i pokanoa a Kahungunu ki te ika nunui, ko tōna tikanga mā te tuakana kē tērā mā Whaene. Ka hopukina e Ranginui taua tāmure nunui rā ka hāua ki te ūpoko o Kahungunu, ka kauparea atu e Kahungunu mā tōna ringa ka tū ki ngā tara o taua tāmure rā. Koiarā ka tapaina te ingoa ko Tūtāmure. Nō reira te tūtākitanga me te moetahitanga o Kahungunu ki a Te Hautāruke ka pakarū mai ko Te Whakatōhea iwi.

<sup>25</sup> Pouwharekura: Ko Pouwharekura te wahine tuawaru o Kahungunu. He uri a Pouwharekura nō Whaene hoki. Hai mokopuna tuarua a Pouwharekura mā Kahungunu. Ko Pouwharekura te wharekai kai Maromahue tētahi marae o Te Whakatōhea, ko te tipuna whare ko Te Poho-o-Kahungunu.

<sup>26</sup> Ngā Tamāhine a Te Whakatōhea: Ko Ngā Tamāhine a Te Whakatōhea ko ngā pipi, ko ngā tuangi, ko ngā kuku kai roto i te Moana a Tairongo, Ōhiwa. Ki te kōhitingia ēnei ko tōna ritenga ko te hinenga (puapua) o te wahine. Ana ko te moetanga a Kahungunu i ēnei uri a Te Whakatōhea.

*Kōhitingia mitimitingia*

*Te Aomatarahi kei hea rā koe?*<sup>27</sup>

*Nau mai e tama āku ka moe tāua*

*Koi mau ana te wāituhi o taku hinenga*

*Kia aropiri mai ai ki a au nei*

*Ka whanatū au ka haere i te one whakakoakoa ngākau o Tūaro-papaki e*

*Kūhāroa*<sup>28</sup>

*Haumieroa*

*Te Aomatarahi kai raro te kai*

*He pipi, he tuangi, he kuku*

*Ngā tamāhine a Te Whakatōhea*

*Kōhitingia mitimitingia*

*Māu e piu ō mata, māku e karipi*

*ka rawe au i konei*

*Ngā mahi a Rēhia rāua ko Harakoa e i*

*Eke ki runga, eke ki raro*

*Ngā taha e rua*

*Te Pākūhānui o Kahungunu hī!*

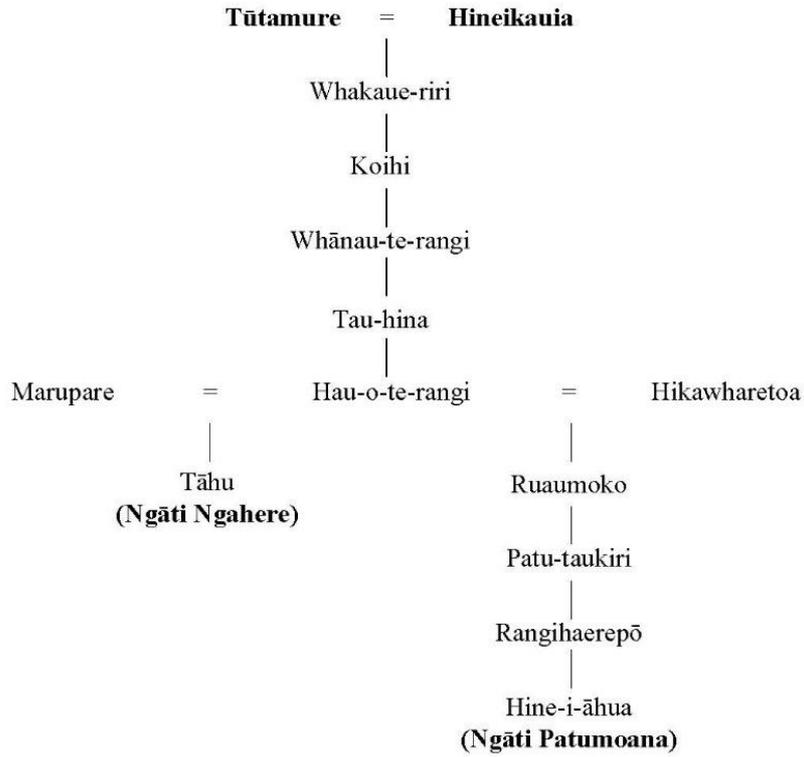
Waiata: Tāneroa, Te Kahautu Maxwell, composed 2016)

Ka moe a Tūtāmure i a Hineikauia te tamāhine a Muriwai, anā, ka pakaru mai ko Te Whakatōhea whānui tonu.

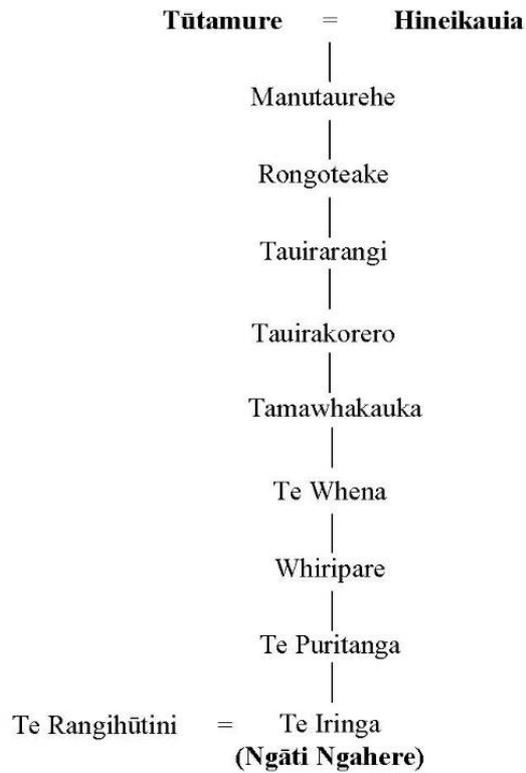
---

<sup>27</sup> Te Aomatarahi: Uri a Kahungunu, toa whawhai o te iwi.

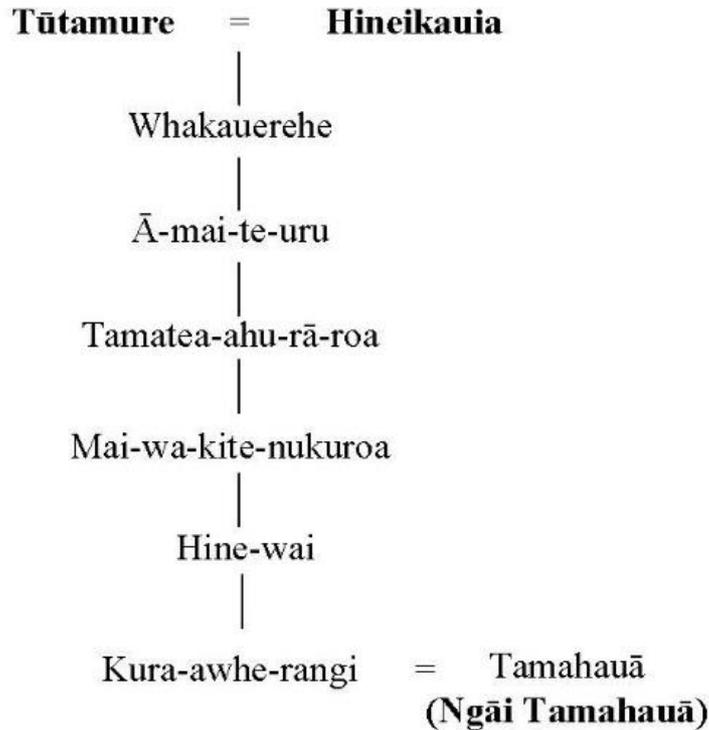
<sup>28</sup> Kūhāroa, Haumieroa: Ko ngā tūahine o Tūtāmure ēnei i paepaetehetia ki a Te Aomatarahi hai pākūhā i te riri mō te patunga i a Tāneroa.



Whakapapa 10: Tūtāmure me Hineikauia 1, mana whakaae Whakatōhea Māori Trust Board.



Whakapapa 11: Tūtāmure me Hineikauia 2, mana whakaae Whakatōhea Māori Trust Board.



*Whakapapa 12: Tūtāmure me Hineikauia 3, mana whakaae Whakatōhea Māori Trust Board.*

### 3.6.2 Muriwai

*Maruhia atu i runga o Tirohanga te tohu Whakaari,  
Whakarērea atu te whaiwhaiā te mate tonu atu,  
Whakaihu Moutohorā tāpapa ana Te-Rae-o-Kōhi,  
Te mate te whakamā e patu.  
Ana Waimuri tō ringa te waka,  
Hiko te uira haruru te rangi ngaoko te whenua ikahuirua,  
Tapu te wai, tapu te tai ki te rātō Awa-te-Atua eke Arawa.  
Whakaheke matamoe Waipiko hurihia Rūrima tū tūtara noa mua iho koe,  
Rukuhia te hā Puku-te-Wheke tapu te moana,  
Tōia tō hope Hāmatatū timu Te Koko; Ngā Tamāhine a Te Whakatōhea,  
Takahia te pipi Tahe aku pōtiki, pākihikura ki uta, kura ki waho.  
Kapakapa Hukitewai pāra takoto te one; Kōpū e oho!  
Kaikirikiri tuatua Waiaua te kai a te karoro koa.  
Tapu te paru, Nukutere Te Rangi Awaawakino,  
Ngā tai nui, ngā tai roa Kōpua-pātiki huki te pakake.  
Minohia atu ngā wai Waiomahau hā te mure Tokaroa kai waho kai uta Parinui,*

*Tātahi whatawhata kahawai, pāraharaha ika iti Ōhinemōtū, Aukati-pāhau, Pou tū ana te ure,  
Tapu te awa o Hēkōpara.*

*Tōtōia atu, tōtōia mai; Mai Ngā Kurī a Whārei ki Tihirau,*

*Ei te tapu o Muriwai e!*

(Ngeri: Te Whakatōhea Iwi, kāore e mōhio nā wai i tito me te wā i tito.)

Mā te ngeri nei a Te Whakatōhea tangata, a Te Whakatōhea iwi e whakaatu nō hea ia, anā, nā wai hoki rā ia. Ko te korowai o te pātere nei ka korowaitia a Te Whakatōhea iwi, a Te Whakatōhea whenua hoki. Nō te tau 1981 i whakaakona ahau ki tēnei ngeri ki Te Poari o Te Whakatōhea e aku kaumātua e Tā Mōnita Delamere rāua ko Te Pāroa Kūrei. He kākā-haetara, he kākā-tarahae nō Te Whakatōhea. I kite ahau i ēnei tohunga e karawhiu ana i tēnei ngeri i runga i ngā marae. Nā te kairangakura i whakaako a Te Whakatōhea mai i roto i ngā kura roa o Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti; e whakamahia nuitia nei e Te Whakatōhea hai ngeri ki runga marae ki ngā ūhunga, ki ngā hui nui a te iwi, ki runga rānei i ngā marae o iwi kē. Kai roto i te ngeri nei ka whakairo te tapu nui o Te Whakatōhea i a Muriwai, i ngā tīpuna me ōna onematua, onekura, whenua taurikura.

*Ko Mākeo te maunga*

*Ko Waioweka te awa*

*Ko Tūtāmure te tangata*

*Ko Muriwai te tipuna*

*Ko Mātaatua te waka*

*Ko Te Whakatōhea te iwi*

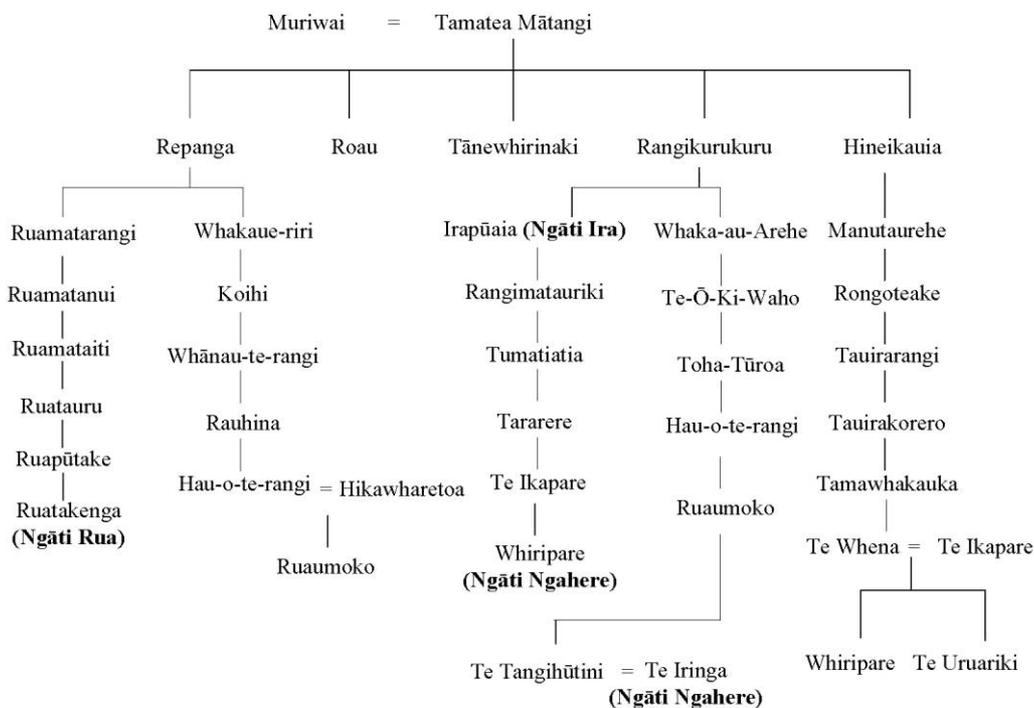
Ko Muriwai te tipuna o Te Whakatōhea iwi. Koia te ariki tapairu i runga i a Mātaatua waka. Ko tana pāpā ko Irākewa, ko tana māmā ko Wekanui. Kua kōrero ngā kōrero nunui mō Muriwai i ngā kōrero puhikura mō Mātaatua. Koia te mātaamua o ngā tamariki a Irākewa rāua ko Wekanui, tō muri ko Toroa, tō muri ko Puhimoanaariki. Nā konā i tohungia anō hoki e tana matua, ko te ana hai nōhanga mōna, ko te Ana o Muriwai. Ahakoa ko Muriwai te mātaamua, kīhai i taea e Irākewa te hoatu i te mauri o Mātaatua ki a ia he wahine hoki, hai konā i tukuna ki a Toroa ki te uretārewa hoki.

Ko te rohe o te waka o Mātaatua nā Muriwai hoki. I tētahi rā i haere te iwi mā runga waka ki te hao ika. Ana i tahuri tō rātou waka, anā tokorua ngā tama a Muriwai i toromi ko Tānewhirinaki rāua ko Roau. Ana i rāhuitia e Muriwai te moana, Mai i Ngā Kurī a Whārei ki

Tihirau. Ana koinā te rohenga whenua o Mātaatua i tēnei rā tonu. Ko te tapu tēnei o te tipuna nei o Muriwai, kai roto i te pātere o runga ake nei.

Nā Muriwai tonu te takenga mai o te ingoa o Te Whakatōhea. Ana i tētahi rā i pōhēhē te iwi he taua kē tērā e haramai ana i tātahi, engari ko te iwi tonu i haere ki te hao ika kē tērā. Ka whakaaraara i te pā engari kīhai a Muriwai i oreore. Ka karanga anō; e kui Muriwai, he taua, he taua. E toru ngā pērātanga, engari nōhea te kuia rā i aro, nōhea tonu i oreore. Kātahi ka karanga ake te kaiwhakaaraara, kātahi te kuia tohetohe ko koe. Ana koina te ingoa kai runga i te iwi nei e mau tonu ana i ēnei rā, ko Te Whakatōhea. Ehara tēnei ingoa i te ingoa tipuna, engari he kupu whakarite kē ki te tohetohe o te kuia nei o Muriwai.

Ana ka moe a Muriwai i Tamatea Mātangi, nāna ka pakaru mai ko Te Whakatōhea iwi.



Whakapapa 13: Muriwai me Tamatea Mātangi, mana whakaae Whakatōhea Māori Trust Board.

### 3.7 Ngā Hapū

E ono ngā hapū o Te Whakatōhea i tēnei wā. Ahakoa he nui noa atu i te ono ngā hapū i mua. Nā te kāwanatanga i whakaititia iho i muri mai i te muru whenua. He mea whakanohonoho haere ngā hapū katoa o Te Whakatōhea e te kāwanatanga ki tētahi whenua rāhui pēnā ki tā te tangata whenua noho ki Amerika, he whenua rāhui. Ko te poraka whenua e karangatia ana ko

te Ōpape Reservation. Kai te taha rāwhiti o te awa o Waiaua tēnei whenua rāhui. Katoa ngā hapū kai roto i tēnā whenua, ko Ngāi Tama, Ngāti Rua, Ngāti Patumoana, Ngāti Ngahere, Ngāti Ira, Ngāti Muriwai me Te Ūpokorehe. Nā reira i hutihuti ake i ngā hāpu i ō rātou whenua tipu, ā, i whakanohonoho haeretia ki runga ki ngā whenua tipu o Ngāti Rua.

Ko Ngāi Tama noho mai ki Ōpāpe, ko Ngāti Ngahere kai Ōtānemutu ōna pānga whenua, Ngāti Rua kai runga tonu i ō rātou whenua ake, kai Ōmarumutu, ko Ngāti Patumoana noho mai ki Waiaua ki te take o Mākeo maunga, ko Te Ūpokorehe, kai runga o Mākeo ōna pānga whenua me Ngāti Muriwai kai roto i tēnei whenua. Ko Ngāti Ira kai runga i tāna whenua tipu kai Waioweka. Ko Ngāti Ngahere kai runga i ana whenua ake ināianei kai Terere, ko Te Ūpokorehe kai runga i ana whenua ake kai Ōhiwa.

Nā te mahi pērā a te kāwanatanga, e hia nei ngā whakatipuranga kua tangata whenua te noho a Ngāi Tama me Ngāti Patumoana ki te whenua rāhui i Ōpape kua wareware i ā rātou ake pepehā i te mea ka aua atu te noho ki te whenua tipu o hapū kē.

### 3.7.1 Ngāti Rua

*Ko Kapūārangi te maunga*

*Ko Waiaua te awa*

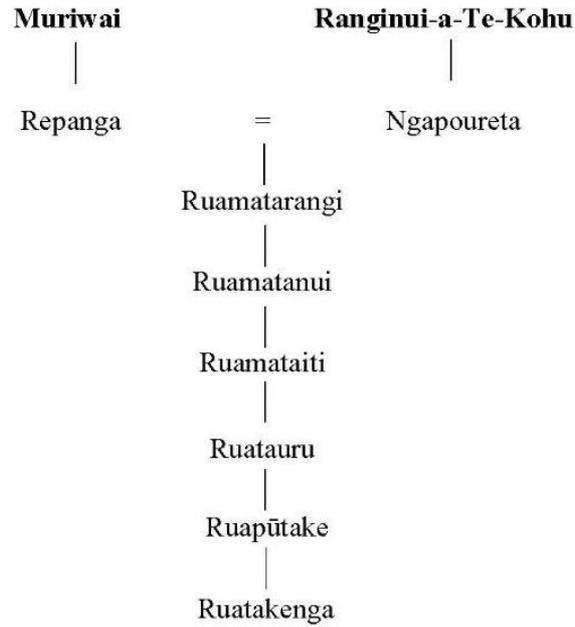
*Ko Mihimarino te marae*

*Ko Tūtāmure te tipuna*

*Ko Ngāti Rua te hapū*

*Ko Nukutere, ko Mātaatua ngā waka*

Kua kōrero kē ngā kōrero mō Tūtāmure. Ko te roanga o te ingoa o Ngāti Rua, ko Ngāti Ruatakenga. Ko tēnei tipuna a Ruatakenga i heke mai i a Repanga te mātāmua a Muriwai o te waka o Mātaatua, ā, i heke mai hoki a Ruatakenga i a Ranginui-a-Te Kohu nō Te Tini a Toi. I tētahi rangi ka kake a Repanga ki runga o Kāpūterangi i Whakatāne ka kite ia i te pawa ki te rāwhiti. Ka hanatū ia ka haere. Ana ka tae ia ki te Kohipawa ki te pā o te rangatira a Ranginui-a-Te Kohu. Ana ka moe ia i tana tamāhine a Ngāpoupereta. E ai ki te kōrero i mau a Ngāpoupereta i te moko rangipāruhi ko tā te toa tēnā moko. I mokotia katoatia tōna kanohi. I tāmokotia ki runga i tētahi toka ki te awa o Tirohanga, ko Tāmoko te ingoa. Ko te moetanga tēnei a Mātaatua i Te Tini a Toi.



*Whakapapa 14: Ruatakenga. mana whakaae Whakatōhea Māori Trust Board.*

Hoi anō ko te hapū nei ka hoki nei ōna nei kōrero ki a Nukutere rā anō. Kua oti kē i runga ake nei ngā kōrero mō Nukutere waka, mō Tūtāmure tangata, hoi anō ko te ingoa o te iwi nei mai i te ūnga mai o Nukutere ki Awaawakino ko Te Wakanui, hai whakamaharatanga ake ki a Nukutere. Mau tonu i te wā o Tūtāmure tonu ko Te Wakanui te iwi. Engari i te wā i a Ūpokohapa ka huri te ingoa o te iwi ki a Te Panenehu, hai whakamaharatanga ake ki te whakatauākī a Tūtāmure ki runga o Manga-ā-Kahia; “Tāua i te huata, tāua i te ake, ka ora nei tāua ka nenehu te panenehu.” Kāore i te mōhio nōnāhea i Ngāti Rua ai, engari i tēnei wā ko te ingoa o te hapū nei ko Ngāti Rua.

### 3.7.2 Ngāti Ira

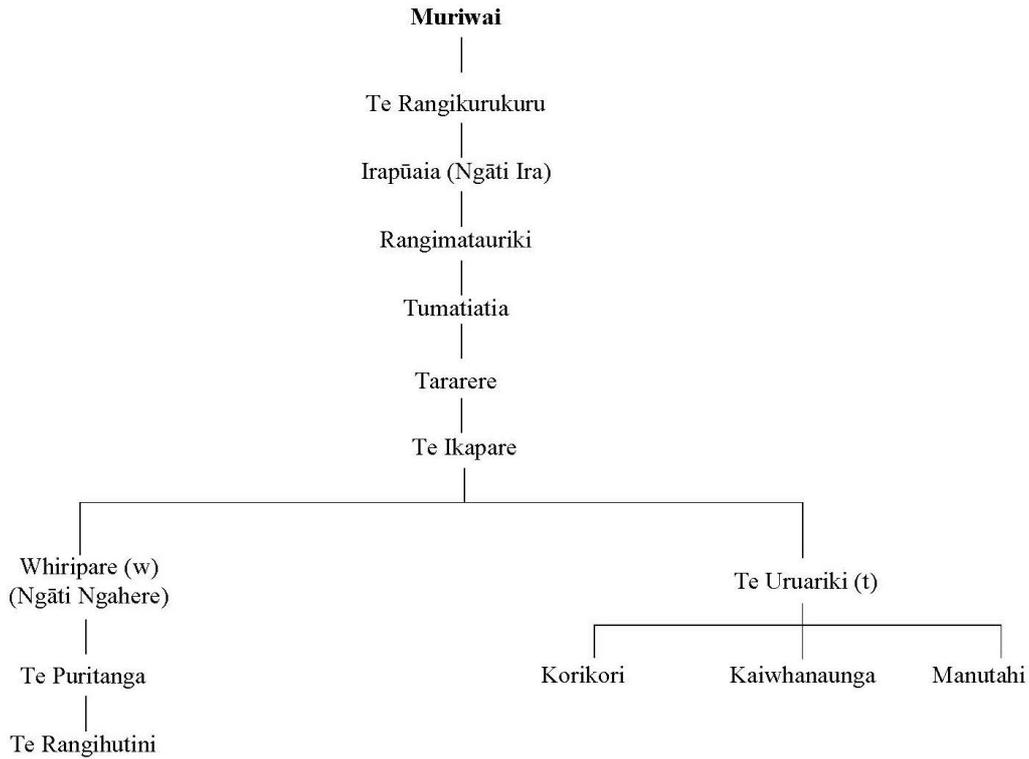
*Ko Mātiti te maunga*  
*Ko Waioweka te awa*  
*Ko Irapūaia te tipuna*  
*Ko Ōpekerau te marae*  
*Ko Ngāti Ira te hapū*  
*Ko Te Whakatōhea te iwi*  
*Ko Mātaatua, ko Tūwhenua ngā waka*

Ko Ngāti Ira tētahi o ngā hapū nui o Te Whakatōhea. Kai te noho tonu rātou ki runga i ō rātou whenua ake ki Ōpekerau i tēnei rā ko tō rātou marae. Ko te whenua o Ngāti Ira ki te tapā whenua

o Te Whakatōhea ko te rohenga whenua ki a Ngāi Tūhoe ki te uru, ā, ki a Te Aitanga a Māhaki ki te tonga. Ko Irapūaia te tipuna o Ngāti Ira te mokopuna tēnā a Muriwai rāua ko Tamatea.

Ko Tūwhenua te waka ko Tamatea te tangata. I tae mai a Tūwhenua i mua i te hekenganui o ngā waka. Ko ngā tāngata i te nōhia te whenua ki Mōtū i tērā wā ko te iwi o Tauwharanui. Ko te hoenga mai o Tūwhenua ki te awa o Waioweka kai reira kua huri kōhatū te waka nei ki tētahi wairere. Ka taunaha haeretia te whenua e Tamatea ki roto i te awa o Waioweka ko te toka tērā ko tōna rite ki te ‘heru’ ko Te Heru a Tamatea tōnā ingoa. I ngā wā o mua i reira tētahi toka ko tōna rite ki ngā hūhā o te wahine. Anā i reira i huihuia ai ngā kōeaea anā he wā tōna i tūwhera te puta, i konā i kuhu atu ai ngā kōeaea ki ngā hūhā nā, anā i reira anō he wā tōna ka kūwhera anō kua rere mai hai īnanaga. I tapaina tērā toka ki te ingoa ko Ngātaierua ki te ingoa o te tamāhine a Tamatea. He wāhi anō i tapa ki te ingoa o tērā o ana tamāhine ko Te Tuhi ko reira ko te onewhero, anā ko te hōrū. Kai te awa anō he toka anō ko tōna rite ki te ‘karoro’ ko te Karoro a Tamatea te ingoa. He mā te kōhatū nei, anā ka rere te wai ki runga ki te toka nei ka weherua, ka pohutū me te mea nei ko ngā parirau ērā o te karoro. He waiiti anō kai reira e rere ai ki te Waioweka ko Tataweka te ingoa. He ingoa anō tō Ngāti Ira mō te awa o Waioweka ko Te Awa a Tamatea te ingoa.

E ai ki te kōrero a Ngāti Ira i haere ai a Tamatea ki Whakatāne ki reira moea ihotia ai ko te kuia nei a Muriwai, anā ka puta mai ko Te Whakatōhea iwi.



Whakapapa 15: Te Rangikurukuru, mana whakaae Whakatōhea Māori Trust Board.

### 3.7.3 Ngāti Ngahere

*Ko Maunga-ā-Rangi te maunga*

*Ko Ōtara te awa*

*Ko Te Iringa te tipuna*

*Ko Terere Moari te marae*

*Ko Ngāti Ngahere te hapū*

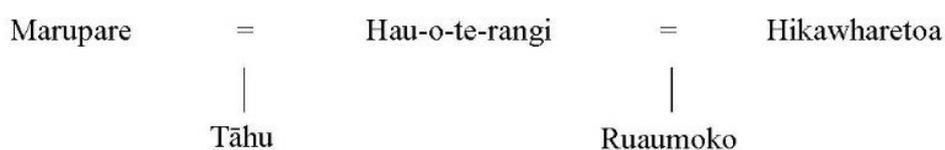
*Ko Te Whakatōhea te iwi*

*Ko Mātaatua, ko Nukutere ngā waka*

Ko Te Hau-o-te-rangi te tipuna nāna i noho te rohenga whenua mai i Ōhiwa kuhu whakateuta ki Tāhora, ki Mangatāpere, ki Ōamaru, huri whakaterāwhiti ki Whakapaupākihi, ki Te Urutawa, ka whai haere i te pāpāringa matau o te awa o Pākihi puta atu ki te awa o Ōtara. Ko Ngāi Tū te ingoa tawhito o Ngāti Ngahere i mua rā anō i te wā i a Tarawa rāua ko Manawakiaitū. Nō Te Hau-o-te-Rangi rāua ko Whatupe ngā mana i runga i te whenua o Ngāi Tū.

Tokorua ngā wāhine a Te Hau-o-te Rangi ko Marupare tana wahine matua nō Te Whakatōhea ia, ko tana wahineiti ko Hikawharetoa nō te iwi o Te Whakatāne. I patua a Hau-o-te-Rangi e tana taokete e Te Uru Hapainga o Te Whakatāne. I tonoa a Ruamoko te tama a Te Hau-o-te-

Rangi rāua ko Hikawharetoa ki te tiki i ngā kōiwi o tana pāpā, te take, he uri a ia nā Te Whakatāne. Ko te hokinga mai a Ruamoko, ko te ringa anake o tōna pāpā i toe mai. Ko te ringa i whakamahia hai iringa kete kūmara mā Te Whakatāne. I te patunga a Te Hau-o-te-Rangi i whakairihia tōna tinana ki runga i te rākau ki roto i te ngahere. Ana i reira i hurihia te ingoa o Ngāi Tū ki a Ngāti Ngahere.



*Whakapapa 16: Hau-ote-rangi, mana whakaae Ngāti Ngahere.*

I whakatū taua a Ruamoko rāua ko tana tuakana a Tāhu, ka hanatū ka haere ki te rānaki i te mate o Te Hau-o-te-Rangi, ana i hinga a Korotahi he pā nō Te Whakatāne. I tono a Rangiwhāwhā te rangatira o Te Whakatāne he whenua hai nōhanga mōna, anā i whakanōhia ia me tana iwi ki Maraetahanui i te rātō o te awa o Waioweka.

I riro i a Ruamoko te mana whenua o te awa o Waioweka ki te takiwā o Ōpōnae, hoki whakaroto ki Tāhora (Lyall, 1979). I nohoia e Tāhu me tana irāmutu a Pākira rātou ko Hikawharetoa i te taha rātō o te rohe, i mōhiotia rātou ko Te Tokotoru a Ruamoko.

I puta rawa a Ruamoko i te rohe, nā Te Matahou i tātaki ngā ope taua ki Tūranga me Te Mahia rā anō. I puta anō a Te Iringa ki te whenua ki te rānaki i ngā mate. Nā Te Iringa rāua ko Kotikoti o Ngāti Ira i takoto te rohe whenua i waenganui i a Ngāti Ngahere me Ngāti Ira.

Ko te whare wānanga o Ngāti Ngahere ko Whare-Ki-Wānanga ko Tāhu te tangata o roto i tū ki Mōtūhora.

### 3.7.4 Ngāti Patumoana

*Ko Mākeo te maunga*  
*Ko Waiaua te awa*  
*Ko Ruamoko te tipuna*  
*Ko Ngāti Patumoana te hapū*  
*Ko Te Whakatōhea te iwi*  
*Ko Mātaatua te waka*

Ko te hapū o Ngāti Patumoana ko tō rātou tipuna ko Ruamoko ko te tama a Te Hau-o-te-Rangi ko Ngāi Tū, ā, ko Ngāti Ngahere hoki. Taka rawa mai ki ngā whakaekenga a Ngā Puhi ki runga i a Te Whakatōhea i ngā tau 1820 - 1830. I whakarauhia a Hineiāhua he puhiariki o Ngāti Ngahere, koia te tamāhine a Te Rangiharepō nāna i tāmoko Te Tiriti o Waitangi ki Ōpōtiki i te tau 1840. Ana i patua a Hineiāhua ki waho atu o Whakatāne. Nā reira i tapa te ingoa ki runga ki tēnei wehenga o Ngāti Ngahere, ko Ngāti Patumoana hai whakamaharatanga ki te patunga o Hineiāhua ki waho kai te moana.

*...Whakaheke tonu ki Pūhārāki*

*Hāngai te titiro ki Te Ana o Muriwai*

*Ki te taumututanga o te tara o Hineiāhua ki te Puke-ki-Hawaiki...*

(He wāhanga o tētahi nā Te Whakatōhea)

I hōmai tēnei ngeri ki ahau e Mātenga Biddle i te tau 2006 hai haka mā Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti ki ngā whakataetae ki Pāmūtana 2007. Ko te ngeri nei i whakamahia nuitia e te koroua nei hai tau mō ana whaikōrero i ngā tangihanga. I ēnei rā ka whakamahia e ahau hai tau mō aku whaikōrero ki ngā tangihanga.

### **3.7.5 Ngāi Tama**

*Ko Tarakeha te maunga*

*Ko Hairini te awa*

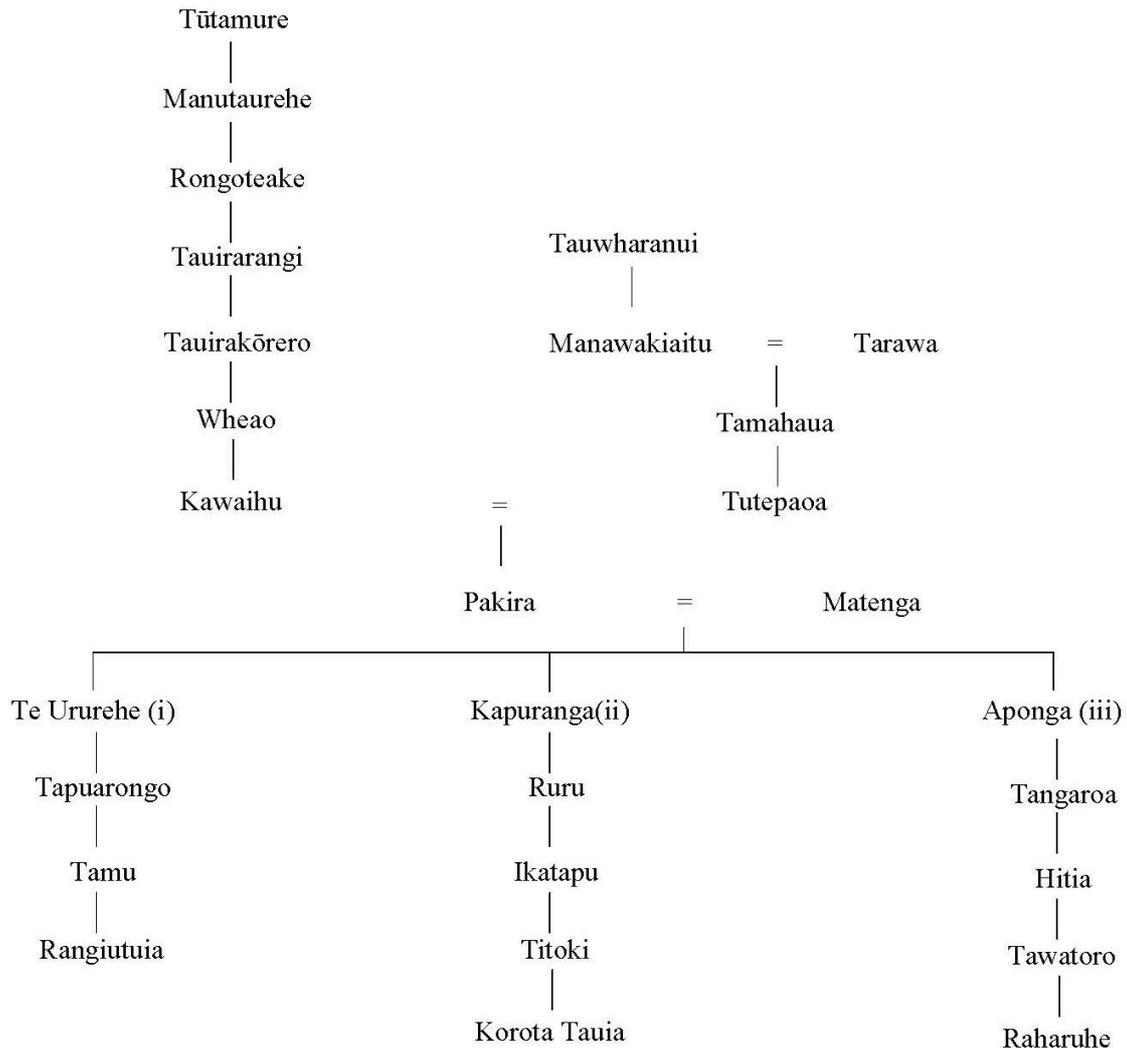
*Ko Tamahauā te tipuna*

*Ko Ngāi Tamahaua te hapū*

*Ko Te Whakatōhea te iwi*

*Ko Mātaatua te waka*

I heke mai a Tamahauā i a Ngāi Tū, i a Te Panenehu hoki, arā i a Tauwharanui ki tana tamāhine ki a Manawakiaitū i moe i a Tarawa ka puta ki waho ko Tamahauā (Lyll, 1979).



Whakapapa 17: Pākira me Mātenga, mana whakaee Whakatōhea Māori Trust Board.

I te whakapapa i runga ake nei ka heke mai i a Aponga ka heke ki a Tawatoro nāna i haina te Tiriti o Waitangi.

I ngā pakanga a Te Whakatōhea ki a Ngā Puhī i marere a Te Whakatōhea ki ngā hau e whā. Nā Tītoko i whakahoki mai ngā mōrehu o Te Whakatōhea i noho marere ki Tauranga i te rerenga i Haohaowhenua, he pakanga i tū tata ki Kemureti. Kātahi ka puta anō te rongu kua tata anō te whakaekē o Te Whakatōhea e Ngāpuhi. Ka whakakaotia a Te Whakatōhea e Tītoko. Ka whakahuihuitia a Te Whakatōhea me Ngāti Rua ki Tarakeha ki te takiwā ki Ōpape. I reira ngā rangatira a Te Rangimātānuku me Te Ikiōterangi e noho ana ki ngā pā o reira ko Māeaea me Tarakeha ki Awaawakino. Ko te take o te hui a Tītoko me hoko pū ki te whakatūtataki te riri ki te riri kia kihi ki a rāua te pū me te mate. Ka heipū atu a Te Waharoa rangatira o Ngāti Haua nō roto o Waikato ki taua hui me tana ope taua. Ko tāna kōrero, kai Matamata te pū hai hoko

mā Te Whakatōhea. Hoi anō ko te pīrangi o Tītoko ko te haere ki Tauranga ki reira hokopū ai i te mea he tata ake ki Ōpōtiki, he tawatawainga, he hononga here whakapapa hoki kai rerira. Seven generations down from Rangipoupou, Rangitama returned to reside in Ōpōtiki at Hikutaia on the west side of the Waioweka River. He had cultivations at Waitangi, the site that is now the Ōpōtiki cemetery. Rangitama's son was named Hikutaia after the land. The Ngāiterangi chiefs Tomika and te Puru also lived there from time to time. In the summer months Rānapia made gifts of kiekie fruit to Tōmika because they were related. Tōmika's wife was Te Whakatōhea and owned land in Ōpōtiki. Te Puru's uncle was te Āporotanga and that bond was made stronger by his marriage to Āporotanga's sister (Walker, 2007, p. 46).

Anā ka haere a Tītoko, a Te Rangimātānuku me Te Whakatōhea ki Ōtūmoetai noho ai i a Tōmika he mahi hāpine harakeke te mahi hai hoko pū. I reira ka puta te tono a Waikato ki a Te Whakatōhea me Ngāiterangi ki te haere hai haumi mō Waikato ki te pakanga i a Ngāti Maru. Ka hinga a Marutūahu i Taumatawīwī. In about 1832 one Haramiti led a party of mixed Ngā Puhī and Rarawa in a raid to obtain utu for an offence against some children of his tribe at Kororāreka – he alleged that some Ngāiterangi relatives (Adams, 1969).

Ka hanatū a Ngāiterangi me Te Whakatōhea ki te mura o te ahī. Ehara kua tae kē ki Mōtītī a Te Haramiti. I konā i hinga a Te Haramiti me tana taua i a Ngāiterangi me Te Whakatōhea. He mea mekemeke kino nui a Te Haramiti ki te meke a te ringa kia mate. He Wehi nō te iwi ki te toto o te Haramiti, he tapu rawa. I reirā i riro i a Tītoko te waka taua o Te Haramiti ko Tōnangaua te ingoa e iwa tekau pūtu te roa. I riro i a ia hoki te pūrepo ko Te Haramiti tonu te ingoa. I reira ka tono a Tītoko ki a Tōmika rāua ko Te Puru mō ā rāua pānga whenua ki Hikutaia, ki Ōpōtiki hai whenua hokinga mō ngā uri o Te Whakatōhea ka aua atu e noho tāwharau ana i a Ngāiterangi. Ko te kupu a Tōmika ki a Tītoko:

*“E Toko taku pakihīwi kaha ko Taurangawhenua hai utu mōhou. Nōhia! Nōhia!” I puta i a Tītoko te whakataukī; “He hoa ki te whenua e taea te kite, he hoa ki te moana tē taea te kite”.*

Ana ko tōna tikanga ahakoa kai te hoki tonu ia ki tana ūkaipō me te whakahoki i tana iwi i marara roa ki roto o Tauranga i te pakū a te pū i a Ngāpuhi, i noho tāwharau i a Ngāiterangi nā runga i te tipuna paihere i a Te Whakatōhea rāua ko Ngāiterangi ko Rangipoupou. Nā runga i tērā i takohaina atu e Tomika ki a Tītoko he pū, he paura me ngā waka e toru ko Kākahu, ko Horokākā, ko Horomiro mō tāna awhina i a Ngāiterangi ki Taumatawīwī me Mōtītī. Ana ko aua waka hai hokinga mō Tītoko me tana iwi o Te Whakatōhea ki te wākāinga.

### 3.7.6 Te Ūpokorehe

Ko te Ūpokorehe ko te kuku mau toka ki te taiuru o Te Whakatōhea ki te Moana o Tairongo. Ko Hape-ki-tua ko Rangimātoru te waka, ko Te Hapūoneone. Ko Tairongo ko Ōtūrereao te waka, ko Te Ūpokorehe. Ko Kahuki te whakakaitoa, te kukū-ā-mata ki te whakakaitoa i te riri. Ko te pāpā o Kāhuki ko Rongopopoia, ko tana matua ko Rongowhakaata. Ka moe a Rongowhakaata i a Uetūpuke, anā ka hapū ia. Ka tipu mai he āhuatanga ki waenganui i a Rongowhakaata rāua ko Uetūpuke, ka rere a Uetūpuke ki ana whanaunga ki Ōpōtiki noho atu ai. Ka whai kupu a Rongowhakaata ki a Ūetūpuke; “Ki te whānau mai he tāne tapaina ia ki te popoia o taku taringa;” anā, ka whānau mai ko Rongopopoia. Ka waiho a Rongopopoia i konei mō tēnei wā, ka tiki mai anō.

Tērā tētahi tipuna ko Tuamutu te ingoa, ko tana pāpā ko Rēpanga te mātāmua a Muriwai rāua ko Tamatea-Matangi. Kua kōrero kētia a Rēpanga i ngā kōrero mō Mātaatua waka me tana moe i a Ngapoupereta. Ko tā rāua tama ko Tuamutu i moe i a Ani-i-waho te tamāhine a Tairongo, ka puta ki waho ko Te Ūpokorehe.

I tētahi rā i te whakatākaro ngā tamariki o Te Ūpokorehe i ā rātou manutukutuku, anā kua whakataetae. Ka kāhakina e te hau tā tētahi tamaiti tāne. Ka kāhakina, ka kahakina ki runga o Te Māwhai te pā o Tuamutu. Ka whakatākarotia te manutukutuku e Tuamutu hai whakawaia te tamaiti rā, he whakapoapaoa. Whāia ka riro te tamaiti rā i te whakawainga a Tuamutu. Ka kake te tamaiti ki runga o Te Māwhai, anā i mau i te kati a Tuamutu, ka patua te tamaiti ka kainga.

Hai rānaki i te mate i whakaekea a Te Māwhai, te pā o Tuamutu e Rongopopoia. Te urutomokanga ki roto kua whakarērea kētia te te pā e te iwi, anā i mahue mai ko Rēpanga anake te pāpā o Tuamutu. Kua kaumātuatia rawatia te koroua nei i tērā wā. Anā, i patua kia mate e Rongopopoia.

Ka noho, ka noho a Tuamutu ki te whakatakoto tika ki te ngaki i te mate o tōna pāpā. Anā, ki runga o Te Māwhai ka tareka te kite atu i te Ahiaua, ko te pūwaha tērā o te awa o Waiotahe. Ko te Ahiaua te māra pipi a Te Whakatōhea, kai reira te mahi a te pipi. I Te Māwhai ka whānau mai te kara a Tuamutu hai whakaea i te mate o tana matua, o Rēpanga. Ka noho a ia me tana iwi ki te raranga i tana kaharoa, arā he kupenga. Ko ngā kaharoa o ērā wā he kaitā, he rarahi, he roroa. E kī ana kai te kotahi kiromita te roa, nui atu hoki. Ka oti i a Tuamutu tana kupenga ka whakaritea te rā e whakahorohoro i te tapu o tana KAHAROA. Tērā tikanga ko te whakanoa i te kupenga me te tukunga ki waho ki te moana, he tikanga nui, he rā nui e whakahuihui ai te

iwi. I konā ka karangatia e Tuamutu te iwi o Rongopopoia ki te whakanoa i tana kupenga. He kara tā Tuamutu e ea ai te mate o tana pāpā o Rēpanga.

Ki te rarangatia he kupenga ka rarangatia kia oti kātahi ka whiria te taurā ki te harakeke, ko te taura o runga me te taura o raro. Ko te taura o runga he poitō ōna, ko te taura o raro he karihi ōna.

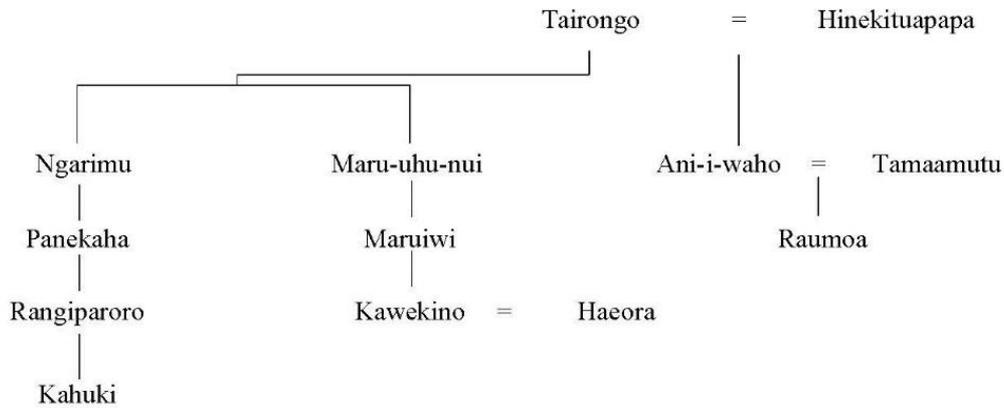
Ko ngā poitō hai pōteretere mō te taha whakarunga o te kupenga i runga i te wai. E ai ki a Danie Poihipi, ka hangaia tēnei mea te poitō ki te rākau hauama. He pai te hauama he ngohengohe a roto. Ana ka karokaro o roto hai mahi hōru ka noho hai poitō. Ka werohia te taura o runga o te kupenga ki te poitō, kātahi ka takaia ki te harakeke ki te taura o runga kia kore ai e reti.

Ko ngā karihi he taumaha e mau ai te kupenga ki te papa moana. Ka hangaia te karihi ki te kōhatu. Ko aua kōhatu he hōru o waenganui ka kite i runga tātahi. Ko ngā hōru ka mahia mai e ngā ngārara o te moana ka kaitia. Ka noho ērā kōhatu hai karihi. Ka werohia ki te taura o raro ki te karihi, kātahi ka takaia ki te harakeke ki te taura o raro kia kore anō hoki e reti. I kōrero ā waha mai ēnei kōrero ki ahau e taku matua-kēkē e Rāniera Poihipi he tohunga raranga kupenga, he tohunga hī ika hoki.

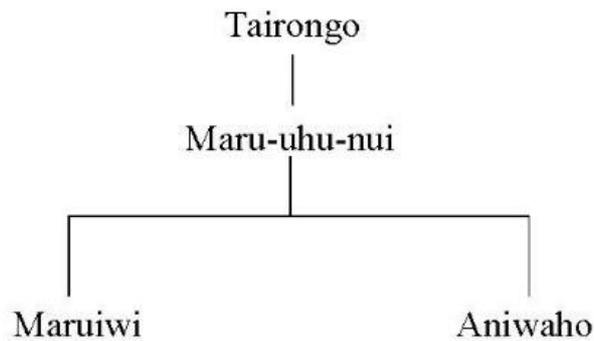
Ka hoki mai ki te kupenga a Tuamutu me tana kara hai whakaea i te mate o tana pāpā o Rēpanga. He mea āta mahi te kupenga nei me te kore he karihi, i āta waiho kia pērā tōna hanga e ai ki tana rautaki. Ana, ka tae ki te rā e whakahorohoro ai i ngā tapu o te kupenga me te tuku i te kupenga, ka tonoa ko Rongopopoia me tana iwi ki te tū i te taura o raro hai karihi mō tana kūpenga. Ka whakahāweatia a Tuamutu mō te taewaru ōna ki te mahi kaharoa. Ka noho ko Tuamutu hai take pukukata mā te iwi o Rongopopoia. Kātahi ka whakaaetia ki te tonoa a Tuamutu.

Ina kē te nui o te kupenga a Tuamutu he kaitā rawa. Nō te tukutanga i te kupenga rā ka tōia haeretia te taha whakarunga e te iwi o Tuamutu ki waho rā anō. E ai ki a Danie Poihipi ko te kupu whakahau a Tuamutu i tana iwi i pēnei nei; “Haere ki kō atu, ki kō atu, tōia whakawahotia, whakamoanatia. Ki waho, ki waho!” He pai ngā mea o runga ko te iwi o Tuamutu tērā e tōia whakamoanatia ana te kupenga, engari rā ia te iwi o Rongopopoia ko rātou ngā poitō i te taha whakararo o te kūpenga. Kātahi ka rite te kupenga me te kara a Tuamutu ka karangatia ake; “Anā pōtaetia! Ka rere mai te iwi o Tuamutu ka pōtaetia te iwi o Rongopopoia ki roto ki te kupenga ka patua te iwi rā me Rongopopoia kia mate. Ka ea te mate o Rēpanga i konā. Ka kīa tēnei pakanga ko Te Karihi Pōtae. I kōrero mai tēnei hītōria mō Tuamutu ki ahau e Tā Mōnita Delamere me ngā pakeke o Te Whakatōhea. Kai te kōrero tonutia ēnei kōrero i tēnei rā.

I te patunga i a Rongopopoia i reira tāna wahine a Rangiparoro i te hapū kē ia. I waiho ia kia ora te take he whanaunga tata rāua ko Tuamutu.



Whakapapa 18: Tairongo 1, mana whakaae Whakatōhea Māori Trust Board.



Whakapapa 19: Tairongo 2, mana whakaae Whakatōhea Māori Trust Board.

Ka whānau mai te tamaiti a Rangiparoro he tāne ka tapaina ki te ingoa ko Kāhuki. I te wā i puta mai a Rangiparoro i te whare kōhanga ka takina ngā karakia hai hiki i te tapu i te māmā me te pēpē. I reira a Tuamutu i te tikanga whakahorohoro tapu. I reira i taikaha a Tuamutu ki te mōhio mena he tāne, he wahine rānei. Mōhio tonu a Tuamutu mena he tāne ka pakeke te tamaiti rā, tērā te wā ka haramai ia ki te rānaki i te mate o tana pāpā o Rongopopoia. Nara te mōhio o te whaea ki ngā nekeneke a Tuamutu he mūrere, mena tana tamaiti he tāne ka patua e Tuamutu kia kore ai e eke tērā whakaaro ōna. I mua i te rā whakahorohoro tapu i herea e Rangiparoro te rehe o te ure o Kāhuki, anā, i kukume whakamuritia ki te whakawahine i a Kāhuki. Nō te kitenga o Tuamutu i te āhua o Kāhuki i mauritau, anā i waiho te tamaiti kia ora. Ko te rerenga tērā o Rangiparoro ki Kaharoa ki roto o Waioweka. Nō te rerenga ka mahue tana maro ki muri ka kīa tērā kāinga ko Maromahue.

He wāhanga tēnei o tētahi poi i titoa e te kairangakura nei i te tau 2016 hai whakaako i ngā kōrero mō Tuamutu me Kāhuki, (Poi: Raupō, Te Kahautu Maxwell, performed at Te Matatini, Auckland, 2017),

*Taku poi whakarongo kōrero*

*Rongo i te a, rongo i te e, āe<sup>29</sup>*

*Rongo i te a, rongo i te i, ai*

*Rongopopoi<sup>30</sup>*

*Herea te rehe o te ure o Kāhuki*

*Ūpokorehe<sup>31</sup>*

*Tō Kutarere<sup>32</sup>*

*He rau, he rau, he pō, he pō, takitaki nō pī, takitaki nō pā*

Ka moe anō a Rangiparoro i a Haeora. Ka pakeke ana mai a Kāhuki ka taunutia ia e ngā tamariki o te pā he pōriro kē a ia. Ko te pātaitanga āna ki tōna whaea ko wai tana matua, ka kīa atu e tōna whaea ko te kōrero mō te patunga o tana matua.

Ka pakeke a Kāhuki i raro i ngā tohutohu a Haeora ka whakangungua ki te kahikātoa, ki te tūmatakuru, ki te taraongonga, arā ki ngā rākau a Tūmataunga kia tū ia hai rākaukawa. Nāwai rā, ka taka te wā ka uru a Kāhuki ki ngā kairiri. He wā anō kai runga, he wā anō kai raro. Ka rite te wā ka hoki haere mai ia ki Whitiwhiti i te taiuru o Ōhiwa ki ōna whanaunga. Ka rongo ia i Onekawa a Tuamutu e noho ana. Ka tū i a Kāhuki tana taua ka whakaekea a Onekawa ka mate i tērā kairiri ko ngā tama tokorua a Tuamutu, engari i rere a Tuamutu ka ora. He rākaukawa nō Tuamutu ka tū i a ia tana taua ka rere tana waka taua ka whakaekea te pā o Kāhuki ko Te Whitiwhiti. Engari kāore i hinga a Te Whitiwhiti he kaha nō te pāpā o Rangiparoro a Panekaha rāua ko Kāhuki. Ānō he matakahi ka wāhiruatia te ope o Tuamutu kātahi ka hawaiki-pēpeke,

---

<sup>29</sup> Rongo i te ā, rongo i te e, āe: Ko ngā rongo ēnei ka rongohia e te raupo i te moenga o te aroha. Ko ngā aaa ērā, ko ngā uuu ērā a te wahine me te tāne nō rāua e aroha ana tētahi ki tētahi.

<sup>30</sup> Rongopopoi: Ko Rongopopoi he hapū o Te Whakatōhea, ko te whareniui ko Rongopoi. Ko Rongopoi tipuna he mokopuna nā Rongowhakaata. Ko tōna whaea ko Uetūpuke.

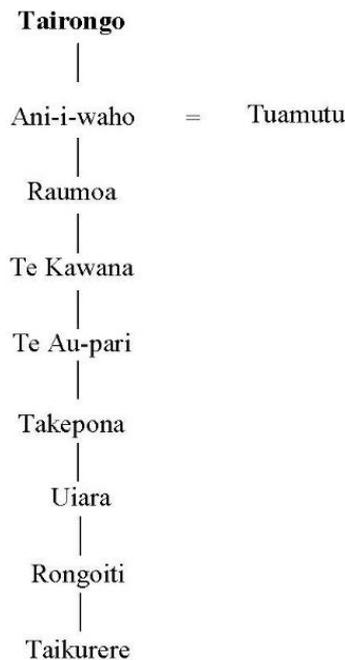
<sup>31</sup> Ūpokorehe: Ko Te Ūpokorehe he hapū nō Te Whakatōhea. Ā koiarā ko Rongopoi hoki.

<sup>32</sup> Kutarere: Ko Kutarere tētahi o ngā marae o te hapū o Te Ūpokorehe. Ko te ingoa Kutarere i takea mai i tētahi tipuna wahine ko Te Huinga o Te Ao. I tana omanga i whakarere i a ia tana maro i whatuhia ki te kuta. Ko te kuta he momo otaota pai mō te raranga, mō te whatu. Ka tipu tēnei otaota ki rō wai. Ko te tipuna whare ki Kutarere ko Te Poho o Tama-te-rangi. Ko Tama-te-rangi he tipuna nō Kahungunu, nāna te kōrero; “He ao te rangi ka ūhia, mā te huruhuru te manu ka tau.” Ko Maromahue anō tētahi marae o Te Ūpokorehe. Ana ko taua kōrero anō tēra mō Te Huinga o te ao, arā i mahue i a ia tana maro. Ko te wharetipuna ko Te Poho o Kahungunu ko te wharekai ko Pouwharekura te wahine tuawaru me te whakamutunga a Kahungunu.

ka mura-ahi a Tuamutu ki Ōhiwa. I whakaeke anō a Kāhuki ki ngā pā o Tuamutu ki Paerātā me Waiaua engari i rere anō Tuamutu ka ora.

Ka takoto anō i a Kāhuki he kara ka hangaia he waka taua ko Ruaraeroa te ingoa. Nō te whakamānūtanga ka tōia te waka ki te wai ka tangi orooro te waka ki runga i te kirikiri i te tōtanga; e ai ki te kōrero he tohu pai tērā, ka toa. Kātahi ka hūpeke a Kāhuki ki runga me te haka; “*Ko Tuamutu rā tāu tangata, e taoho ai koe. Taoho! Taoho!*” Ka hoea te moana ki waho ki Whakaari ka whakaruruhau ki reira i moe iho te pō. Auinaake ka whakatīkoki a Kāhuki i tana waka taua me tāna ko tana taua i huna i roto me te mea nei kua tahuri kē te waka me te rere Māori noa ki runga i te au o te moana. Ka kitea mai e Tuamutu i tana pā ko Motuotu i te waha o te awa o Waiotahe ka kauria te moana me āna tāngata i runga i ō rātou waka me te kore he rākau whawhai. Nara kua eke haere te kara a Kāhuki, anā i haere i runga i te pokanoa. Ka kātata ake ngā waka ka rāngona ō rātou reo e kaha haere mai ana, kātahi ka tarapeke atu ngā toa o Kāhuki ka paoa ki ō rātou hoe ngā tāngata a Tuamutu kia mate. Ka whakatata atu a Kāhuki mā runga i a Ruaraeroa ka patua a Tuamutu kia mate.

Koinei ētahi kōrero mō Te Ūpokorehe. He nui ngā kōrero mō tēnei hapū.



*Whakapapa 20: Tairongo 3, mana whakaae Te Riaki Amoamo.*

Mā tēnei whakapapa e whakaatu i te pakarutanga mai o Te Ūpokorehe whānui hai hapū ki roto o Te Whakatōhea iwi.

### 3.8 Te Pākehā

Ka matapakitia te whatinga mai o te tai Pākehā ki tātahi me ōnā whiunga porotāwhaowhao i pōtukia ki te rae o Te Whakatōhea. Ko te taenga mai o te Atua hohou rongo tērā, ko te riri taua nui tērā, ko te muru whenua tērā ka mutu ka whakatauākītia ai e Te Whakatōhea; *'Ka mate tangata, mate whenua, mate wairua, mate tikanga, mate reo, mate ohaoha.'*

I tere kaumoana ki Te Moana a Toi a Kapene Kuki mā runga i tōna waka te Endeavour i te tahi o Noema 1769. I konā ka huaina e ia te moutere a Whakaari ko White Island, nā tana puia. I tere kaumoana ngā waka taua o Te Whakatōhea ki te titiro he aha tēnei atua, rokohanga he waka tāngata me ngā Pākehā o runga ka tīmata tāna tauhokohoko i konei. He kuku tāna i tauhokohoko atu ai ki a rātou. Ka eke a Te Whakatōhea ki runga ki te Endeavour ka tangohia tētahi rīnena kikorangi me tētahi kōhua. I riro te haki i a Ngā Puhī i tētahi puta i tū ki Te Whakatōhea i te tau 1823 e rima tekau mā whā tau i muri mai. Ko te kōhua i kitea ki Maungapōhatū hai tao pea i a Te Whakatōhea i roto i ngā tini pakanga katoatanga ki ō mātou huanga i a Ngāi Tūhoe.

Ko Kapene Kuki tērā i te tūtakitanga tuatahitanga ki te Pākehā 1769 i whai muri iho te whakapono hou, ko te Atua hou ko te tae maitanga o te Rongopai, ko Te Tiriti o Waitangi tērā, ko ngā pakanga ērā, ko te muruwhenua tērā. Ko ēnei take katoa i rerekē ai te noho a Te Whakatōhea ki roto i tōna anō ao, e kore ā muri e hokia.

#### 3.8.1 Te Rongopai

In early 1828 the Rev Henry Williams sailed out of the Bay of Islands in the schooner *Herald*, coming eventually to the eastern bay where he went ashore at Whakatāne. On the 11 April he entered Ohiwa harbour which he examined with interest for its future usefulness and discribed as an important discovery (Lyll, 1979, p. 150). Mā runga waka taua anō i pakarū a Te Whakatōhea ki waho ki te tūtataki atu ki te Herald ki te tauhokokoko. I tēnei wā ko tō rātou pīrangi he paura. Kua tae noa mai a Ngā Puhī ki a Te Whakatōhea i raro i a Hongi Hika, Pōmare, Te Wera Hauraki mā i te tau 1823-1830. I konei i parekura nuitia a Te Whakatōhea.

I te tau 1823 i horo ngā pā ki te riu ki Ōtara i a Ngā Puhī ki raro me ana pū, ko Te Ika-a-Te-Kite tērā, ko Te Toiroa tērā, ko Horomanga tērā, ko Pāinanga tērā. I Te Ika a Te Kite ko reira i riro ai i a Ngā Puhī te rīnenga kikorangi nā Kāpene Kuki. Anā, i te tau 1825 ka hinga anō ko Te Whakatōhea ko te pā Takutai tērā i horo.

Moka Kainga-mataa (1790s–1860s) was a [Māori rangatira](#) (chief) of the [Ngā Puhi iwi](#) from [Northland](#) in [New Zealand](#). He was distinguished in war and an intelligent participant in the [Treaty of Waitangi](#) process. Moka and his two brothers Te Wharerahi and Rewa participated in the bloody [Musket Wars](#) of the 1820s-1830s, which caused wholesale destruction across the North Island, resulting in numerous deaths, slavery, and the displacement of a large number of people. 'Moka, also known as Te Kainga-mataa, was...a distinguished chief among Hongi's ([Hongi Hika](#)) warriors... Moka took part in numerous battles, such as Mokoia, Te Totara, Matakitaki, and Te Ika-a-ranganui (where he was shot but recovered). During one of these Ngapuhi war raids to the Bay of Plenty, Moka took a wife, Noho Kupenga Tipare, a [Whakatōhea](#) chieftainess from [Opotiki](#) ([Bay of Plenty](#)) and they would have three sons and a daughter; Te Ahitapu, Rewiri Tarapata, Taawhi, and Hoki 'Peata' (Moka Te Kainga-mataa, n.d).

Nō te tau 1830 ko Ngāti Maru o Hauraki tērā i raro i a Te Rohu i horo ko Te Papa he pā ki te awa o Waioweka ki te takiwā kai reira te Piriti o Waioweka i ēnei rā. Anā, i reira i mauhereheretia ai a Te Whakatōhea, anā i mauheretia ai ki Haohaowhenua ki te taone o Kemureti i tēnei wā. He wā tōna i horo a Haohaowhenua i a Te Waharoa ka marere ai a Te Whakatōhea ki a Te Waharoa, i marere hoki ki ō rātou whanaunga ki Tauranga hoki (Lyll, 1979).

I auau te totoro a Williams i Te Moana a Toi, anā i uru mai te pīrangī ki a Williams ki te whakatū mīhana ki Whakatāne, rānei ki Ōpōtiki. Tekau mā tahi tau i muri mai ka tae atu te mihingare a Rev John Wilson ki Ōpōtiki i te 30 o Tīhema 1839. I tūmeke ia i tana taenga atu i tūtataki atu ia ki Pākōwhai ki te iwi e karakia ana i ngā karakia karaitiana. I taea ai e ētahi te pānui, nā Taumata-ā-kura i ako. I whakarautia a Taumata-ā-kura i ngā kairiri ki a Ngā Puhi, anā i reira ia i ako ai ki ngā karakia karaitiana.

Nō te 24 o Maehe 1840 i tae ake a Bishop Pompallier me tana hari mai i te whakapono o Te Katorika. I konei i tōtara wāhirua a Te Whakatōhea ko ētahi i kūpapa ki raro i te Mihingare, ētahi ki te Katorika. E ai ki ngā pakeke o Te Whakatōhea i te mutunga ko te nuinga i kūpapa ki te Katorika i te mea i taea e Te Hāhi Katorika te whakapapa ki te Āpōtoro a Te Karaiti tama a te Atua ki te Āpōtoro a Pita, engari ngā Mihingare kīhai i taea. Ka hangā whare karakia ngā Mihingare mō tō rātou hēpara, anā nui ake tō te Katorika hangā i tō rātou, i konei ka pakaru mai te riri nui ki waenganui i a Te Whakatōhea ka hinga nui ngā uri mō te whakapono te take.

### 3.8.2 Te Tiriti

Nō te 27 o Mei 1840 i hainatia te Tiriti o Waitangi ki Pākehikura, Ōpōtiki. Tokowhitu ngā rangatira o ngā hapū tokoono i tāmokotia te Tiriti o Ōpōtiki:

*Ripanga 1: Tiriti o Waitangi, mana whakaae Whakatōhea Māori Trust Board.*

Rangatira	Hapū
Tauatoro	Ngāi Tama, Ngāti Ngahere
Rangimātānuku	Ngāti Rua
Rangihaerepō	Ūpokorehe, Ngāi Tama
Takahi	Ūpokorehe
Aporotanga	Ngāti Rua
Te Ake	Ngāti Ngahere, Ūpokorehe
Whakiia	Ngāti Ira

Tokotoru ngā rangatira i pīrangi kia tohua ko wai o rātou he Pikopō (Katorika) mā te waitohu i te rīpeka ki te taha ki ō rātou ingoa; ko Te Rangihaerepō tērā, ko Te Rangimātānuku tērā, ko Tauātoro tērā. “The Crown agent was James Fedarb, a trader and master of the *Mercury*, had been commissioned by Governor Hobson to the chiefs in the Bay of Plenty to sign the Treaty of Waitangi.” (Walker, 2007. p. 58).

Kāore e mōhio mehemea i āta wānangatia atu te tikanga o Te Tiriti o Waitangi ki ngā rangatira o Te Whakatōhea, pērā i tā Hōpihana ki ngā iwi o Ngā Puhi i tā rātou tāmokotanga. Ko taku whakapae kīhai a Te Whakatōhea i mōhio ko wai te Kāwana, he aha rawa rānei tēnei mea te Kāwana i te mea, he iti noa, he kore rānei tana whai wāhi ki a Te Whakatōhea. I te korenga o te Āpiha Kawanatanga ki tōna rohe i mahi tonu a ia i tāna, ko te whakawhanake i tāna ōhatanga me ana pākihi mā te tauhokohoko atu ki Tāmaki, ki Poihākēna, ki te iwi Pākehā. Ko te whāngainga i ō tauwi minamina.

Ko te rua tekau tau i muri mai i te hainatanga i Te Tiriti he wā o te hua nui, o te makurutanga mō Te Whakatōhea. Ko te huihuinga tērā o ngā hapū o Te Whakatōhea, ko te hūnukutanga tērā ki Ōpōtiki ki te mahi ōhanga. Ka hanake mai ngā hapū i te remu o tōna korowai, i Tāhora, i Mōtūhora, i Matawai, i Whitikau, i Mōtū, i Ōpape, i Ōmarumutu, i Waioweka, i Te Rāhui, i Toatoa, i Waiaua, i Tirohanga. Ka noho ko Ōpōtiki te manawapū mō Te Whakatōhea i te mea i reira te wāpū, te tauranga waka mō ngā kaupuke o ngā hapū o Te Whakatōhea, o ngā Pākehā hoki. Ko te mahi he tauhokohoko atu ki Ākarana, tauhokohoko mai ki Ōpōtiki. Ka nōhia e ngā

hapū o rātou papatipu ki Ōpōtiki tonu, ka hangaia e ngā hapū o Te Whakatōhea ko ōna whare rūnanaga ki te manawapū hoki.

Ko ēnei kōrero e whai ake nei i tangohia mai i te pukapuka a Mei Tamihana he wahine rangatira o te hapū o Ngāti Ngahere. Ko tāna he kōrero i ngā nohotanga o ngā hapū ki roto o Ōpōtiki me ō ratou papa whenua me ō rātou tīpuna whare me ō ratou ingoa.

He whakamārama tēnei i te noho a Te Whakatōhea i Ōpōtiki. I noho a Ngāti Ngahere i te Mataraupō<sup>33</sup> tae noa mai ki Mātangipūhia<sup>34</sup>. Ko te Mataraupō i kō mai i a Ngāti Rua i te kāinga o Wirehe Kīngi, i te kāinga o Te Popo mā, nō Pacone tērā wāhi. Ka ahu atu ki te toa a Pauata rā he whare nō Ngāti Ngaho ko Tātaia. Kai reira te urupā o Rere Rākau. Kai kō ake te toa a Hōri Pota i a Ngāti Ira, he wharenuī i reira te ingoa ko Te Hokowhitu, i tō Kateruri i a Ngāi Tama he wharenuī i reira ko te Piritoriuma. I Whitikau rā i a Ngāti Ngahere anō he wharenuī i reira ko Āraiteuru. Ka ahu mai ki Taranga i a Ngāi Tama katoa whiti atu ki Pēria tae tonu puta noa ki Manawaiwai. Ka mutu mai, ka haere atu ki te Houhi i a Ngāti Ira ka ahu atu ki te papakau i te kāinga o Hāka i raro i te pā i ngā Hiona rā i Ngāti Kahu whakawhiti tonu atu ia ki Kahutara haere tonu atu ki Ueahu ka mutu mai i te Awaroa i te Pirirākau a reira ki te kāinga o Paera i a Ngāti Ngahere ko Tarupua haere tonu atu ki Ōrongoiti ki Manukatihitihi ka huri ki Pāpakanui ka huri haere mai ki Tīoreore i a Ngāti Ngahere ka ahu mai ki Te Ngāio i a Ngāti Rua i tērā one i a Ngāti Ngahere anō tae noa mai ki te kāinga o Mākaio haere tonu ki Koropana i a Ngāti Rua ka haere atu ki Kohipawa i a Ngāti Ngahere ki te Mataraupō katoa tae mai ki te show ground tētahi pito tae noa ki Whitikau ki tētahi taha.

---

<sup>33</sup> Ko te Mataraupō kai reira te Poari o Te Whakatōhea i tēnei wā.

<sup>34</sup> Kio Mātangipūhia kai reira ngā whare kaumātua o Te Whakatōhea.



Mapi 2: Te Whakatōhea: Papa kāinga (Te Whakatōhea Archives).

Kua rūmakitia ngā whenua papatahi, i whakatiputia ngā raurau punua poaka hai tauhokohoko ki te Pākehā mō ngā parau, ngā hoiho, tūpeka, kākahu; mō ngā taonga a te Pākehā.

I pākauroha e Te Whakatōhea ōna ringaringa kia noho mōkaikai ngā Pākehā he painga ōna mōna ko ngā hangarau hou ōna hai oranga mōna.

“Whakatōhea welcomed the handful of European settlers who brought new skills in shipbuilding. The first shipyard was established in Ōpōtiki in 1846 to build ships for the coastal trade. By 1853 there were six shipyards operating ... (Walker, 2007. p. 63).

In 1844 Rangimātānuku of Ngāti Rua bought a schooner, the *George & Katherine* in exchange for 200 pigs. The ship was dubbed “hoko poaka” (bought with pigs). By 1847 Whakatōhea rangatira owned five coastal vessels. In the next decade another fourteen vessels were added to the Whakatōhea fleet (Walker, 2007).

“Hira Te Popo of Ngāti Ira was one of Te Whakatōhea’s most successful entrepreneurs. He owned a cutter named Hira for transporting his produce to market. He cultivated wheat on the Waioweka flats. Te Popo built a flour mill at the cost of 800 pounds to grind his own wheat. The mill was some distance from the waterfront, so he built a road and bridges for carts to transport the flour to his ship. This operated into the 1860s and stood testament to Whakatōhea’s rapid adjustment to modernity. The mill was destroyed by the military invasion in 1865” (Walker, 2007).

Kai te mārama te kitea i konei ko te pakari o Te Whakatōhea ki te nanao atu ki ngā taonga a te Pākehā me te ātawhai i ngā pūmanawa o te Pākehā ki te kuhu i a ia anō ki roto i te ao ōhanga. I matakitetia e ia te māketete ko tana mārama ki te takoto o te whenua, arā, ko te tauhokohoko kia riro mai ai ngā taonga me ngā hangarau Pākehā hai whakapakari i a ia kia ora anō ia i tōna mātau anō, i tōna pakari anō.

### 3.8.3 Te Wākana

Nō te Ākuhata 1861 i tae ake a Carl Sylvius Volkner (Te Wākana) o te Church Missionary Society ki Ōpōtiki hai pirihi mō Te Hāhi Mihingare. Nāna ka tū te whare karakia St Stephens i te tau 1864. He nui te aro o Te Whakatōhea ki tō ratou pirihi hou he Tiamana. Nō te tau 1864 hoki kua whakatumatuma atu a Kamerana (Cameron) ki a Kīngi Tāwhiao me Waikato. I puta te tono i a Kīngi Tāwhiao ki ōna iwi kia rauhi ki runga o Waikato hai parepare i te ope taua a Kuini Wikitōria. Ko te kōkiri tērā a Te Whakatōhea hai haumi mō Kīngi Tāwhiao i te ope taua o Te Tairāwhiti ko Te Whakatōhea, ko Ngāti Porou, ko Te Whānau-a-Apanui, ko Tūhoe me Ngāti Awa. “A party of Whakatōhea joined the Tai Rawhiti expedition comprised of Ngati Porou, Tuhoe, Te Whanau a Apanui and Ngāti Awa. The expedition was led by Apanui to support the Waikato Tainui tribes” (Lyll, 1979, p.154).

E ai ki ngā kōrero a ngā tīpuna he pūrahorua a Te Wākana nō Kāwana Kerei i ngā nekeneketanga a Te Whakatōhea me tāna tautoko i te Kīngitanga. He mea hāhāri kōrero, he kawekaweau mā Kerei.

“Volkner wrote seven letters to Governor Grey informing him of the movements of the Tai Rawhiti expedition and the number of warriors at its disposal. He asked his name not be revealed. In February 1864 Volkner informed Grey that three parties from Kawhia had come to Ōpōtiki over a six month period for supplies of gunpowder.” (Walker, 2007).

I parekuratia te ope taua nō Te Tairāwhiti me Te Whakatōhea ki ngā kairiri ki ngā manemanerau me Te Arawa ki Tapuwaeharuru, ki Maketū me Te Kaokaoroa ki Pikowai. Ko te nuinga o Te Whakatōhea i hinga ko te rangatira a Hira Te Popo me ētahi atu o Te Whakatōhea i ora.

Nō te 2 Pepuere 1865 i tae te whakapono hou ko te Paimārire ki a Te Whakatōhea. Ko ngā apataki ko Kereopa Te Rau, ko Pātara Rakatauri. I tae atu rātou i runga te whakahau a Te Ua Haumēne kia whakakao i Te Tairāwhiti ki tana whakapono hou, ā, me hohou i te Paimārire me

te hohou i te rongu. Hoi anō he ngaki mate kē te take a Kereopa, i wera tana wahine me ā rāua tamāhine tokorua ki te ahi i te whare karakia i te pakanga ki Rangiaohia nō te 21 Pepuere 1864. Ko te ika i whāia e Kereopa ko te ika a te Atua, ko Te Wākana.

Kāore a Te Wākana i Ōpōtiki i te taenga atu o Te Paimārire, kua haere kē, kai Ākarana. I konei i tuku reta whakatūpatu atu a Pātara ki a ia kia kaua ia e hoki atu ki Ōpōtiki he mate e tatari atu ana ki a ia. Ko te whakapae he kaikawe kōrero ia mā te Kāwana mā Hori Kerei. Kīhai a Te Wākana i aro atu, nō te 1 o Maehe i ū atu ai a Te Wākana i runga i te kaupuke te Eclipse ki Ōpōtiki. Nō konā i mauhereheretia ai a Te Wākana. Nō te 2 o Māehe i tāronatia a Te Wākana ki te mate i runga i tētahi whiro tangi.

*‘Me kawē ki tawhiti hai homai mō te mekameka te rerenga otirā ko te Kāwana kai Ūropi māna e kī mai me tau au ki te tauati’.* He wāhanga tēnei o te waiata a Mokomoko i waiatatia e ia i te wā i tāronatia ia kia mate ki Mautini. Mā ngā kupu e whakaatu te āhua tonu o tana matenga. Ko te tauwati ko tā nehe momo wati nā ngā tāne. He mekameka tōna ka tautau i te pūkoro o te hāketē hutu o te tāne. Ana e whakarite ana i te āhua o tana matenga ki te tautau o te tauwati. E mea ana anō hoki ia ko ngā mana e taea ai te unu i ōna hara ko tērā i a Kuini Wikitōria i Ūropi.

Tūtaki rawa ake a Te Whakatōhea ki te Pākehā me tana Atua hou me ōna whakapono hou i houhia ai te rongu ki Te Whakatōhea me ōna hapū, ā, i tōtara wāhiruatia ai hoki te whare o Te Whakatōhea i te whakapono me te Atua hou nei. Ko te Mihingare tērā, ko te Katorika tērā, kotahi atua, e rua whakapono, anā, ko Te Whakatōhea tērā kotahi iwi, e rua ngā hāhi ko te Paimārire ka toru. E toru, e toru ngā whakapono kua pakanga

#### **3.8.4 Muru Whenua**

*“Tēnā koutou Pākehā mā e mate harakore ana ahau, hai aha?”*  
(Amoamo, 1990).

Ko te kupu o runga ake nei nā, i tangohia mai i te waiata a Mokomoko i mua i te tāwharonatanga i a ia e te karauna.

Nā te patunga i a Te Wākana e Kereopa Te Rau ka pā he aituā nui ki a Te Whakatōhea, i aituā ko te tangata, i mate ko te tāngata. Ahakoa he rāwaho a Kereopa Te Rau nō Ngāti Rangiwewehi kē, ahakoa nāna a Te Wākana i patu ko Te Whakatōhea kē te papa o ōna hēnga, haranga. I whakapae tekatia e te Karauna nā Te Mokomoko he rangatira nō Ngāti Patumoana; nāna i patu

a Te Wākana. Ko te take i pērā ai ko te taura. Rite tonu te taura a Te Mokomoko ki tērā i tāronatia ai a Te Wākana. Ahakoa i mōhio te Karauna nā Kereopa Te Rau i patu, ka whakapae teka tonutia ai nā Te Mokomoko nā te mea nāna te taura. E ai ki ētahi o taua wā e kī ana nā Wī Hura kē o Ngāti Awa te taura rā. Hoi anō ko wai ka hua, ko wai ka tohu?

Ahakoa te taura kīhai a Te Whakatōhea i whakaae ki te whakapaeteka nei. He mea kōrero e ia tonu ehara i a Mokomoko. Ana kua mōhiohia whānuitia i taua wā tonu me i ēnei rā nā Te Kereopa. Ko te kupu tēnei nā Wiremu Te Pahi a Te Whakatōhea:

“I saw Wi Hura carrying the rope behind Mr Volkner. Wi Hura got the rope from Mokomoko’s horse which he tied some distance away. He was told to get it away from there... I did not see Mokomoko at all while Mr Volkner was coming from my house. Nor when they were leaving the church.” (Walker, 2007, p. 112).

Nō te Oketopa i te tau 1865 i tuku a Te Mokomoko i a ia ki te Karauna mō ngā whakapae nei kia hāmenetia ia e te ture. Ana i kawea atu a Te Mokomoko ki Ākarana mauhereheretia ai ki Mautini (Mt Eden). I reira i hāmenetia ai ia i te 27 o Maehe 1866. Ana i mau te Karauna ki ngā whakapae teka mō Te Mokomoko e mea ana i reira ia i te tāronatanga i a Te Wākana ana nāna te taura, ahakoa kāore ia i here te taura i te kakī o Te Wākana nā tētahi tōkorua kē i mahi. E kīa nā Wī Hura rāua ko Pokeno Te Awanui kē i here te taura ki te kakī, anā i mauherehere anō hoki rāua. Ahakoa ēnei whakapae, tuki atu, tuki mai i tārona tonutia a Te Mokomoko i te 17 o Mei 1866 ki Mautini.

Ana i raro i te ture New Zealand Settlements Act 1863 i murua te 144,000 eka a Te Whakatōhea. He mahi mūrere kē tā te Karauna ahakoa nā wai i patu ko te whenua mōmona a Te Whakatōhea tā rātou rautaki. I urupatutia ngā mira, ngā kaipuke, ngā māra i huhūtia ake, i takatakahia e te hoiho, ngā kararehe i murua hai kai mā ngā hōia, hai tīmata i ngā pāmu ake a rātou. I kōhurutia ngā Whakatōhea i ngā pakanga whenua ki Te Tarata i te 4 o Oketopa 1865. I kōhurutia ngā wāhine me ngā tamariki, i tūkinotia ngā wāhine me ngā tamariki. I whānako te whenua, i whānako te ōhanga i noho pōkaikaha ko Te Whakatōhea, e tangi nei hoki ko Te Whakatōhea.



Mapi 3: Te Whakatōhea: Te raina raupatu (Te Whakatōhea Archives).

Nā tēnei mahi nukarau ka maru ahiahi te noho a Te Whakatohea ki te pō hurihuri i ngā pōtatututanga i te ringa kōhuru o Te Karauna. He ao i ariki, he ao i ariki whenuakore. Ko wai e kite ake i te whiu a te Atua, he iwi harakore. I whakatauākītia ai; ‘*Mate tangata, mate whenua, harakore.*’ He whakatauākī tēnei nā Te Whakatōhea kai te poutūārongo kai roto i a Ruamoko te wharetipuna o Ngāti Patumoana hapū o Te Whakatōhea. I tangohia mai i te kōrero a Mokomoko i te tāronatanga i a ia me tana poroporoaki ki te iwi Pākehā me tana kī i te mate harakore ana a ia. Ko te whakamārama o tērā whakatauākī e mea ana; nā te matenga o te tangata kotahi i mate ai te whenua, arā i raupatutia te 144,000 eka me te patunga o te tokomaha o te iwi i ngā riri whenua, i ngā matekaitanga, i ngā pōtatututanga, i ngā pōkaikahatanga.

*Tangohia te taura i taku kakī kia waiata ahau i taku waiata!*

*Kāore te tākiri e tute nei ki te moenga,*

*Kai te hori te tangata tēnei au kai te raweke,*

*He pono te kī nei taku rauika ki te moenga.*

*Koia kai te tangata mate kau au ki a te uira whakarewha te titiro,*

*Te huinga mate i a hamuti he wareware noa te eke noa i te kaipuke.*

*He ahi mumura te pānga mai o te whakamā.*

*Me kawe ki tawhiti hai homai mō te mekameka.*

*Te rerenga otirā ko te Kāwana kai Ūropi māna e,*

*kī mai me tau au ki te tauwati.*

*Hai tūtaki ake mō te kūaha o te pouaka,*

*Haramai, nei au ka tūraki mate ki te moenga e...*

Koinei te waiata tangi a Mokomoko mōna tonu i mate harakore i te 17 o Mei 1866 ki Mautini. Ana, kua herea kētia te taura ki tana kakī, ka pātaitia ia e te Pirihi mena he kupu whakamutunga tāna. Ko tana whakahoki ko te waiata nei, arā kia tangohia te taura i tana kakī kia pai ai tana waiata poroporoaki ki te ao me te tangi anō ki a ia. Ana, i waiatatia tēnei waiata, ā, e waiata tonutia ana e Te Whakatōhea i ēnei rā.

### **3.9 Maru Ahiahi**

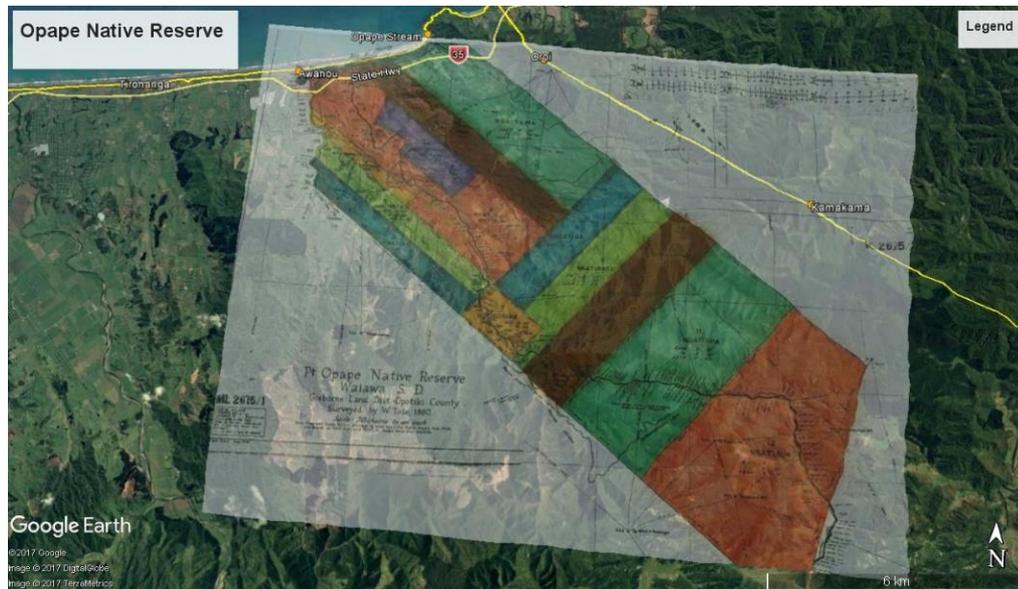
Ko te maru ahiahi ko te hekenga o te rā ki tōna rua, ko te tautanga o te pō hurihuri ki a Te Whakatōhea. Tau rawa iho te puehu kua tīhaehaetia te korowai whenua o Te Whakatōhea. Kua whārikitia te takapau wharanui o mate i muri i te rau whaitanga o te patu ki te roi o te whenua o Te Whakatōhea. I hūtia ake ngā pakiaka o Te Whakatōhea. I mua i te murunga whenua he mana motuhake tō te iwi, he maunga tō tēnā hapū, he awa tō tēnā hapū, he rohe whenua, he mana whenua, he mana moana, he mana rangi, he mana tangata. Auinaake kua murua, kua raupatutia katoatia me ōna tikanga, tōna reo, ōna hītoria, ōna wharetīpuna kua tahuna ki te ahi, pau monemone ki te pō. Mehe kararehe ka ātia e Te Kāwanatanga a Te Whakatōhea me ōna hapū e ono ki runga ki te whenua o Ngāti Rua tētahi o ngā hapū o Te Whakatōhea. Ka karangatia tērā whenua, ko te Ōpape Reservation. Nā te ā pērā ki runga i te whenua rāhui i hūtia ake ngā hapū i ō rātou pakiaka i ō rātou whenua taketake, i whānakotia ō rātou maunga tipua, ō rātou awa tipua, i wehea mai i ō rātou taniwha, ō rātou tauranga ika, tauranga manu, māra ngāherehere katoa atu. Ehara i te mea i murua ko ō rātou whenua, engari i murua ō rātou hinengaro, mahara, whakapono, tikanga, kawa me ō rātou tapu. I whānakotia ō rātou tuakiri me ō rātou whēako ā tāngata, ā hapū, ā iwi.

E whārikiriki ake nei i ngā makenu o Te Whakatōhea i tohenihorautia ai e ia kia puta i te pōuri ki te māramatanga. E taea ai taua māramatanga, i āta noho a Te Whakatōhea i tōna tohekura, arā ko tōna rautaki kia whiwhi ai ki taua māramatanga, ko tōna rautaki ki tōna orange. Ka tohe a Te Whakatōhea i tōna mate, ka tohe i tōna ora.

#### **3.9.1 Te Petihana**

Ka hia tau ka hori ka rūnangatia e Te Whakatōhea te huarahi e whakatika i te waka kua tīkoki i ngā pīkaunga taumaha e pēhi tonu nei i a Te Whakatōhea. Nō te 14 o Hepetema 1914 i tāpaetia e Te Whakatōhea ki te Whare Pāremata te petihana tuatahi ki te parekuranui nei ko te muru whenua. Ko Mēhaka Wātene, ko Tauhā Nikora rātou ko Paora Taia ngā rangatira nā rātau nei te petihana.

“Opape Reserve was returned to the hapus (sic). Past Governments have heard the great lamentations of this division of the Māori people on account of the sterility of the land – broken hill country with numerous cliffs and gullies – only about 200 acres of Ōpape Reserve being ploughable – this being for the 6 hapu of Whakatōhea” (Walker, 2007. p. 175).



*Mapi 4: Te Whakatōhea: Ōpape Native Reserve (Te Whakatōhea Archives).*

Kāore i whai hua tēnei petihana ahakoa tana kiko he tono kōmihana hai tūhura i ngā whakapae a te petihana nei, me ngā whiunga taumaha. Hoi anō ko ōna tūmanakotanga o te ngākau i whakairotia ki roto tonu i taua petihana tuatahi rā. I kohikohia e Te Whakatōhea he hāwhe karauna he mea tāke ngā tāngata o Te Whakatōhea hai whakaterere i te kaupapa nei. He rawakore nō te iwi. I tākengia hoki ngā wāhine i te hapū i taua wā, arā he tāke hoki i ngā whakatipuranga kāore anō i whānau noa mai. I rīkoatatia ngā ingoa o ia tāngata.

Nō te tau 1915 te petihana tuarua nā Paku Eruera. Kāore hoki tēnei i whai kaha.

The confiscation line 12 miles inland and running parallel to the coast for 35 miles encompassed almost 300,000 acres. This was an excessive punishment because of the hapū of Te Whakatōhea did not plan the death of Volkner. The culprit Kereopa who was from another hapū of Te Arawa...

The Ōpape Reserve of 22,000 acres that the Crown returned to Whakatōhea for the tribes subsistence was exceedingly small (Walker, 2007).

Nō te 1917 te tuatorutanga o ngā petihana i a Whaiora Renata i tāpaea atu, i te korenga o te whakahoki i Te Kāwanatanga. Ko tā tēnei petihana ko te whakahoki mai i te Opotiki Block. I whakataua te Native Affairs Committee he kaupapa here tēnei mā te Kāwanatanga. “The Native Affairs Committee decided the petition was policy matter for the Government.” (Walker, 2007).

Ko te tuawhā o ngā pitihana ko Harihari Ranapia te kaitāpae mō Te Whakatōhea i te tau 1923.

“[A]fter due consideration of all the papers, maps, arguments and evidence [it] reported that the Whakatōhea tribe had been too heavily punished for the sins they may have committed in the days when the Hauhaus (sic) were inflaming and exciting the Māori people...too much of the Whakatōhea lands had been confiscated and too little returned to them.

The petition asked for a tribunal to determine what relief the Government saw fit to award Whakatōhea and the appointment of persons to receive the settlement” (Walker, 2007. p.181).

Te petihana tuarima ko Te Riaki Amoamo rāua ko Ngākohu Pera ngā kaituku ki te Pāremata. I whakakorikoritia te mahara o te Karauna ki ngā whakataua a ngā Kōmihana e rua ko tā Jones me tā Simms. Ka kitea ake i tohenihorautia e Te Whakatōhea tana raupatu kia puta mai tana ihu; i roto i te pōuri te māramatanga e whiti ana. Ko ngā tūmanakotanga ko ngā takutaku, mā te inoi anake mā te nohopuku. I pau i a Te Whakatōhea ōna katoa ki ngā petihana e rima, kia utua te kino ki te pai. Petihana atu ka tahi, Petihana mai ka rima i auautia te mahinga. “*Nā te waha i kī, nā te ringa i paepae.*” Ko tēnei kōrero a Te Whakatōhea i tangohia mai i tētahi pātēre āna e kīa ana he ngāwari te kōrero, engari ko te whakatinana i aua kōrero, ā, he kōrero anō. I takoto pēnei tēnei kōrero i te mea, e rima ngā petihana a Te Whakatōhea me ngā Kōmihana Rōera e rua, ahakoa ngā kitenga me ngā whakataunga a te Karauna kāore tonu i tutuki te whakarongoā i te whiunga tāimaha i pēhia Te Whakatōhea e pēhi tonu nei i a Te Whakatōhea tae noatia ēnei rā.

### **3.9.2 Ngā Kōmihana**

Ko te whakautu a te Karauna ki ‘ngā pīkaunga taumaha a te iwi e pēhi tonu nei’; ko te kōhuru harakore i a Mokomoko mō te patunga i a te Wākana 1865-1866, ko te Muru Whenua 1866, ko Ngā Petihana e rima, arā ko Ngā Kōmihana e rua ko tā Jones me tā Simms. Ko te Kōmihana Roera tuatahi ko Robert Noble Jones te Kaikōmihana mō tērā rīpoata 1920. Ko tāna i hauhake

ai ko te kaha nui o te nukarau a te Karauna me te Kāwana a Tā Hōri Kerei ki te patu tāngata, ki te patu whenua ahakoa te harakore o Te Whakatōhea.

The Commissions report tabled on 20 November 1920 was a resounding critique of unbridled use of power by Governor Grey. The New Zealand Settlements Act 1863 allowing the confiscation of land from rebel tribes was reserved for Her Majesty's approval on well defined conditions:

- The act to have a duration of two years
- Making known at once the position and amount of land to be confiscated
- Appointment of a commissioner to inquire into what land to be forfeited
- Ensuring the lands of innocent people were not affected
- Oversight by the Governor to ensure the confiscation was just and moderate.

Kāore i pono tā Kāwana Kerei ki tā te ture nei; The New Zealand Settlements Act 1863. I raro i te ture nei i tareka e ia te karawhiu, te kore rānei e karawhiu. Ana i karawhiua te rau o te patu, i whenuakoretia a Te Whakatōhea, i te murunga whenua a Kerei. Hai tā te rīpoata:

“As far as we learn only the Ōpape Block 20,326 acres ...and about 2,000 acres of other lands ...were returned to Whakatōhea ... Whakatōhea have including the land returned to them, a total area of 35,449 acres ... the land sold was the inland portion of the land left, and which was not so useful as ...the former settlements from which they have been removed to Ōpape.

In our opinion, the fact that punishment inflicted on Whakatōhea by the punitive expedition of 1865 and the actual offenders were captured and dealt with according to civil law, should have had some effect in lightening the punishment that was imposed on the tribe by confiscating their land. But as fact the lands were actually cut up and partially sold before the principal offender [Kereopoa] was brought to justice” (Walker, 2007).

Ahakoa te harakore o Te Whakatōhea i kīa atu te Karauna e te Kōmihana he kaha rawa nō te hātepe i te kakī o Te Whakatōhea. Kīhai i pono ki tā te The New Zealand Settlements Act 1863 me āna tikanga.

I whakawehewehetia ngā whenua a Te Whakatōhea ki a rātou anō ki ngā Pākehā me ngā iwi kūpapa i mua i te whakawākanga i a Kereopa. Anā, ka kitea kua mārō kē tā Kāwana Kerei i tāna rautaki, he whānako whenua, he kōhuru tāngata.

“Patu tangata; Patu whenua; Harakore”. Ko tēnei whakataukī nā Te Whakatōhea e hāngai tonu ana ki tā te Karauna rautaki, ahakoa he harakore nō Te Whakatōhea i kōhurutia tonutia a Mokomoko, ngā tamariki, wāhine me ngā tāne i ngā pēneti me ngā pū, anā he patu tāngata. Ko te patu whenua e kōrero ana mō te whānako whenua ahakoa te harakore o Te Whakatōhea.

Nā te Kaikōmihana Tā William Alexander Sim te Kōmihana Roera tuarua. He rerekē tā Sim whakapae e mea ana, ae he kaha te whakawhiu i a Te Whakatōhea engari kīhai i pērā “rawa” te kaha o te whakawhiu a te muru whenua. Ana i whakatau iho te Rīpoata Sim he utu ā tau £300 mō te mātauranga.

“In the case of the Whakatōhea tribe it [confiscation was excessive, we think but only to a small extent, and we recommend that a yearly sum of 300 pounds should be paid for the purpose of providing higher education for the children of the member of the tribe” (Fergusson, 1928).

Ka kati tēnei wāhanga ki tētahi whakataukī nā Te Whakatōhea kua tuhia ki te wharetipuna o Ruamoko, Ngāti Patumoana, ki roto o Te Whakatōhea.

*“Patu tangata; Patu whenua; Harakore”*

### **3.9.3 Te Kerēme a Te Whakatōhea**

Ko tēnei wāhanga he titiro, he matapaki i ngā kerēme take Tiriti a Te Whakatōhea. E kitea he huarahi roa neke atu i te kotahi rau e rima tekau mā rua tau a Te Whakatōhea e hoki auau ana ki te Karauna kia tau rā anō tēnei kaupapa. Ko wai a Te Whakatōhea ka hua, ko hea ka hua, ko hea ka tau? Ko te Atua tō tātou piringa ka puta ka ora (tongikura nā Tawhiao).

No te Hepetema 1946 i tūtaki atu ngā rangatira o Te Whakatōhea ki te Pirimia Peter Fraser ki te wānanga i te whakataunga mō te take Raupatu, arā te utu ā moni. Ko tā te Karauna whakataunga utu e £20,000. He rerekē noa atu ki ngā ara whakatau kerēme o nāianei. Nāna ake, nā te Karauna i hui, nāna anō i whakatau e £20,000. Ināianei, ka noho tahi ngā tarakete o te iwi me te Karauna ki te whakawhitiwhiti take, kaupapa, whakaaro, hiahia, katoa atu e pā ana ki te kerēme e ai ki tā te iwi. Kātahi ka whakahokia atu ki te iwi ki te hui, ka tahi ka pōtitia.

Mena rānei te iwi whakaae, kāore rānei kai te pai. Ko te mea nui kua whai wāhi te iwi, ka kōrero te iwi. Kai te iwi te mana ki te whakaae, whakahē rānei, engari ko te mana nui tonu kai te Karauna. Kāore tēnei whakataunga i pērā.

Nō te 1 o Oketopa 1946 i tuhi atu ngā rangatira ki te Pirimia me te whakaae atu ki te e £20,000. Nō reira tēnei kerēme i whakamana ā turetia i raro i te Tekihana 2 o te Ture Finance.

Nō te 1975 i whakatūtia ko te Rōpū Whakamana i Te Tiriti o Waitangi (Taraipiunara) ki te whakarongo ki ngā mahi hē a te Karauna i tāna tānoanoa, takahi i te tapu me ngā oati a ngā iwi e rua i Te Tiriti o Waitangi. Ko te mahi a te Taraipiunara he whakarongo ki ngā mahi hē, mahi kikino e ai ki ngā iwi.

No te Mei o te tau 1989 i tāpaetia te tono a Te Whakatōhea e te Hiamana o Te Poari o Te Whakatohea e Karauria Edwards (Eruera) ki te Taraipiunara ki te whakarongo, tūhura, whakatewhatewha i ngā whakawhiu taumaha a te Karauna ki runga ki a Te Whakatōhea, hāunga anō te whakataunga o te 1946. Ko te Wai87: Whakatōhea Raupatu Claim.

Nō te 1992 i tīmatahia e Karauria te kōkiri i te take raupatu mō Te Whakatōhea. Nō taua tau tonu i parahia e Sir Douglas Graham te Minita mō ngā Take Tiriti o mua, tana ara hou, arā, ‘direct negotiations’ mō ngā kerēme ka aua atu e kōkirihia ana e ngā iwi. Mō ngā kerēme kua petihanatia kētia te Karauna e ngā iwi. Mō ngā kerēme kua oti i te Karauna ana kōmihana roera me ngā rīpoata te tuhi. Ana i tangohia e Karauria te WAI87 ka haere hāngai tonu ki te Karauna.

Nō te 1993 i tohua e Te Whakatōhea ōna rangatira hai kawē i te kerēme, ā, i whakamanatia e Kereama mō te Karauna:

*Ripanga 2: Wai 87, mana whakaae Whakatōhea Māori Trust Board.*

<b>Hiamana:</b>	Karauria Eruera
<b>Ngāti Rua:</b>	Te Riaki Amoamo, Tairongo Amoamo
<b>Ngāti Ira:</b>	John Kāmēta, John Tai
<b>Ngāti Patumoana:</b>	John Hata, Ranginui Walker
<b>Ngāi Tama:</b>	Mātenga Biddle, Muriwai Jones
<b>Ngāti Ngahere:</b>	Tahu Taia, Frank Matchitt
<b>Ūpokorehe:</b>	Charlie Aramoana, Bill Rēwiri
<b>Member at large:</b>	Bishop Whakahuihui Vercoe

Nō te 1994 i whakaterehia e te Karauna te “Fiscal Envelope” (te Kōpaki) \$1 piriona tāra hai whakatutuki, hai whakaea, hai whakatau i te puehu i ngā waenganui i ngā iwi me te Karauna, hai whakarongoātia ngā mamae o ngā iwi, o ngā hapū, o ngā whānau hoki.

Ka tohua ko Tuariki Delamere te Kairakau mō te kerēme a Te Whakatōhea i te tau 1995. Nō te tau 1996 i heke atu a Te Whakatōhea ki te Waha o te Raiona ki te haina i te Kirimana Whakataunga (Deed of Settlement). Ko tā te Karauna i whakatau hai whakaea i te kerēme ko te \$40,000,000.00. I tutū te puehu i a Te Whakatōhea ki te Kirimana Whakataunga me te pakupaku o te utu a te Karauna mō te nui o tana whakawhiu i a Te Whakatōhea, muru whenua, kōhuru, urupatu ahakoa he harakore.

Nō te 1998 i pōti a Te Whakatōhea i te Kirimana Whakataunga, anā, i hinga. Kīhai a Te Whakatōhea i whakaae ki te \$40,000,000.00 i whakakorea atu. Ko Te Whakatōhea anake te iwi ki te whakakāhore i tā te Karauna hōmai anō i te tīmatatanga o ngā mahi whakatau kerēme. Ana i panaia e Kereama a Te Whakatōhea ki muri rā anō o te raina. I pēra rawa te riri o te Minita o te Ture, a Doug Graham.

Ko te take i whakahēngia ai e Te Whakatōhea i rerekē te huarahi whakatau kerēme a Te Karauna. I te wā tuatahi i tīmataria ai ngā whakatau kerēme he Raupatu anake te kaupapa. Ko Tainui te tuatahi o ngā whakataunga kerēme i a Tainui i te 22 o Mei 1995 (New Zealand History, 2018). Anā he Raupatu anake i taea anōtia e Tainui te hoki anō ki te whakatau i ngā heanga i raro i te tiriti mō ana moana, mō tana awa, aha atu, aha atu. Tau rawa mai ki a Te Whakatōhea ko tā Te Karauna huarahi i rerekē, i whānau mai ko te huarahi ‘Global Settlement.’ Arā ko te tōpūtanga tērā o ngā take kerēme katoa kauaka ko te Raupatu anake. I hōmai ai tērā ara hou ki a Te Whakatōhea tahi ko Ngāi Tahu. Kīhai a Te Whakatōhea i pīrangī ki te wahā i tērā taumahatang, ki te ā i te iwi Māori i runga i tērā ara, anā, i whakakāhoretia.

Ahakoa tērā, ko te noho a Te Whakatōhea ki te muri i runga i te ringa kaha o Kerama, i noho pūmau tonu a Te Whakatōhea ki runga ki tana whakapono; “I roto i te pōuri te māramatanga e whiti ana”.

Taka rawa mai ki te tau 2010 ka wānanga Te Whakatōhea ki te whakairo i ngā makenu hai tāwhaitanga ki te whakatutuki i te kerēme. I konei ka tau ko Te Whakatōhea Negotiation Mandating process. Nō te 2016 i tohua e ngā hapū tokoono kia tokorua o ōna uri hai waha mōna ki te komiti hai kaikōkirikiri i te kerēme. Ka karangatia tērā komiti ko Te Whakatōhea Pre-Settlement Claims Trust (WPSCT).

Ripanga 3: Te Whakatōhea Pre-Settlement Claims Trust (WPSCT), mana whakaae Whakatōhea Māori Trust Board.

<b>Hiamana:</b>	Paki Reisterer
<b>Ngāi Tama:</b>	Māui Hudson, Dave Ngātai
<b>Ngāti Rua:</b>	Mereaira Hata, Te Whēkī Porter
<b>Ngāti Ngahere:</b>	Mana Pirihi, Tahu Taia
<b>Ngāti Patumoana:</b>	Paki Reisterer, John Hata
<b>Ngāti Ira:</b>	Jason Kurei, Anau Apanui
<b>Ūpokorehe:</b>	Bruce Pukepuke, Keita Hudson
<b>Te Poari o Te Whakatōhea:</b>	Robert Edwards

Ka hui ngā rangatira o Te Whakatōhea ki ngā minita o te Karauna, ki a Honore Chris Finlayson (Minita O Ngā Take Tiriti) rāua ko Hōnore Te Ururoa Flavell (Minita Whanake Māori) ki te Poari o Te Whakatōhea i te 5 o Oketopa 2015. He rā nui tērā ko te kotahi rau e rima tekau tau i tū te hui whakamaumaharatanga ki te riri whenua a Te Tarata i tū ki Te Whakatōhea i te 5 o Oketopa 2015. Ka whakaeke ngā minita ki te hui whakanui i a Te Tarata me ō mātou tīpuna katoa o Te Whakatōhea i hinga ki ngā pakanga katoa i tū ki a Te Whakatōhea me Ngāti Ira hoki. I reira i oati te Minita Take Tiriti ka tau i a ia me Te Karauna te aituā nui otirā te kerēme a Te Whakatōhea.

Nō te tīmatatanga o te tau 2017, i tīkina mai e Hon Finlayson te ringa o Te Whakatōhea mai i muri ki mua ki te tīmata i te hīkoi tahi a Te Whakatōhea ki te whakatau haere i te kerēme a Te Whakatōhea. Nō te marama o Āperira i tohua e WPSCT ko ngā Kairākau ko Māui Hudson (Te Whakatōhea) rāua ko Jason Pou (Ngā Puhi).

Nō te 18 o Ākuhata i haina e Te Whakatōhea te Punawhakauro (Agreement in Principle) \$100,000,000.00 ki te Wharepāremata. Ahakoa kai reira ētahi peka o ētahi hapū me ētahi whānau kāore i te whakaae. Ko te mea kē kai te pana whakamua te kerēme kotahi rau tau e rima tekau mā rua tau ki muri nei. Ko tā Te Whakatōhea ināianei he whakahoki i te kupu rongomaiwhiti, te rongopai ki a Te Whakatōhea ki te pōti mena ae ka whakaae rānei kao, ka whakakāhore.

Mā te karakaia a Te Ringatū hai whakaatu te kaha ngoi o Te Whakatōhea ki te kimi i te mārarmatanga āhakoia ia kai roto i te pōuri, he māramatanga tonu tērā e pūrata mai ana. Ko tōna tūmanako tērā e tau ai te kerēme.

*“I te tīmatanga te kupu ko te Atua te kupu, ko te atua anō taua kupu i te tīmatanga. Nāna ngā mea katoa i hanga, ā, kāhore tētahi mea i kore te hanga e ia o ngā mea i*

*hanga e ia. I a ia te ora, ā, ko te ora te māramatanga mō ngā tāngata katoa i roto i te pōuri te māramatanga e whiti ana. Heoi kīhai i mau i te pōuri. Korōria ki tōu ingoa tapu. Āmine” (He inoi nā Te Hāhi Ringatū).*

### 3.9.4 Te Poari O Te Whakatōhea

Nō te Hūrae o 1947 i whakatūtia The Whakatōhea Māori Trust Board ki Ōmarumutu. Ko tōna hanganga, tokorua ngā tarakete o ia o ngā hapu tokoono. I te tīmatatanga kāore he wāhi motuhake tōna hai whakahaere i āna kaupapa, i tū ngā hui ki ngā whare o ngā whānau, ki ngā marae whare, ki ngā hāpori whare, tae rawa ki ngā tau o ngā whitu tekau. Kātahi i whakatū i te whare motuhake mōna ki Udy Place, Ōpōtiki.

I tū te Poari hai whakahaere i te £20,000.00 i haramai i Ngā Petihana, i Ngā Kōmihana Roera a Young 1920 me Simm 1927 me te Komapeihana £20,000.00 o te tau 1946. E waru tekau mā tahi tau i muri mai i te nui o tā te Karauna whakawhiu i a Te Whakatōhea, muru whenua, kōhuru, urupatu ahakoa he harakore. Nō te 1952 i hokona mai e Te Poari tana pāmu miraka kau tuatahi e 300 eka mō te £38,624.00. Ana i mate anō te iwi ki te tiki moni taurewa mō te pāmu nei.

Nō te 1955 i raro i te Tekihana 24 ka noho te Poari ki raro i te Trust Boards Act 1955:

- Administer Whakatōhea’s assets
- promote health, economic and social welfare
- promote educational and vocational training (Walker, 2007, p. 201).

Ko ngā tarakete o te Poari tuatahi ko:

*Ripanga 4: Whakatōhea Māori Trust Board Tuatahi, mana whakaae Whakatōhea Māori Trust Board.*

<b>Ngāi Tama:</b>	Hōri Taia, Hāpua Apanui
<b>Ngāti Rua:</b>	Ngāwai Amoamo, Raimona Papuni
<b>Ngāti Ngahere:</b>	Tame Ihimaera, Tū Gage
<b>Ngāti Patumoana:</b>	Tamara Mihaere, Pākaha Tairua
<b>Ngāti Ira:</b>	Koroua Tai, George Rangiaho
<b>Ūpokorehe:</b>	Hūrae Ihara, J Aramoana

Nō te 1968 ka hokona mai te pāmu nama rua 144 eka, ko te utu £170.00 mō te eka kotahi. Ka hoko haeretia mai e Te Poari he pihi whenua i kō, i kō i Waioweka hai whakanui ana whenua pāmu kau.

Te Poari o Te Whakatōhea i ēnei rā 2019. He pērā tonu tokorua ngā tarakete o ia hapū tokoono:

*Ripanga 5: Whakatōhea Māori Trust Board 2019, mana whakaae Whakatōhea Māori Trust Board.*

<b>Ngāi Tama:</b>	Māui Hudson, Karen Mokomoko
<b>Ngāti Rua:</b>	Robert Edwards, Mereaira Hata
<b>Ngāti Ngahere:</b>	Tahu Taia, Te Kahautu Maxwell
<b>Ngāti Patumoana:</b>	Paki Reisterer, Bradie Walker
<b>Ngāti Ira:</b>	Micah Tawhara, Amber Rakuraku
<b>Ūpokorehe:</b>	Josie Mortensen, Gaylene Tuari (resigned)

Kāore e rerekē ake tā Te Poari whāinga ki tērā o nehe, ko te hoko mai i te whenua hai whakahoki mai i te whenua, ko te whakarauora i te iwi, ā hauora, ā, wairua, ā hinengaro, ā tinana, ā mātauranga, ā tikanga, ā reo, ā mātauranga o Te Whakatōhea, ā mātauranga whānui o te ao, ā ōhanga, ā nōhonga whare, ā whakawhanaketanga, ā te katoa. Ā, ko te whakatutuki i te kerēme a Te Whakatōhea.

Ko te mahi ahuwahenua tētahi kaupapa matua o Te Poari kua oti kē tēnā te whakatauiratia atu i runga ake nei; te hoko pāmu 1952, 1968, ā, he pihi, he pōraka, he pāmu anō, hoko ake nei, hoko ake nei. E 900 kau e mirakahia ana i tēnei wā. Kua kotahi ngā pāmu kia kotahi. I hangaia he hēte miraka kau hou i te tau 2014 e \$2,000,000.00 te utu ka noho nama anō te iwi, engari tēnei nama hai painga mō te iwi. Ko Te Whakatōhea ka tohenihorautia ki tōna mate kia toheraurikitia ki tōna ora. Ka hokona mai he poraka 40 heketea hai whāngaingainga mō ngā kau. Ana, nā te nui o te nama a Te Poari i mahitahi me te tarahiti whenua o Te Whakatōhea, i a te Tarahiti o Nukutere ki te hoko anō i tētahi pāmu anō. Ko reira i taea ai, ko te mahitahi.

E toru ngā māra huakiwi a Te Poari o Te Whakatōhea, ko Te Tōtara, ko Te Tarata me Te Maara. 11.19 hekatea te nui o tērā mahinga. He mahinga ngahere paina anō hoki tō Te Whakatōhea kai Waiteata No.2 Forestry Partnership e 25 ngā rōpū kai tēnei rangapū mahi. E 390 hekatea te nui o tēnei ngahere.

Kua tīkina e Te Whakatōhea tāna ika i waho Te Moananui-a-Kiwa, anā, kua uru a Te Whakatōhea ki te ahumoana. Ahakoa i murua e te Karauna i te tau 2004 i raro i te Ture Takutaimoana, nō te tau 2001 i whakatūhia e Te Whakatōhea ko Eastern Sea Farms Limited

(ESFL) hai ahu i a Tangaroa. I tonoa e ngā rangatira o Te Whakatōhea he raihana hai ahu i te 3,800 hekatea o te moana. I whakaaro ake ngā rangatira me titiro ki te moana i te mea kua riro noa atu te whenua i te rau o te patu, ko Te Moananui-a-Kiwa e takoto mai nei i waho he nui noa atu me te mea e tareka ai te pāmu i te Tini a Tangaroa hai ōhanga mō te iwi. Nō te tau 2009 kātahi anō ka whakaaetia e te Karauna ki te tonoa a Te Whakatōhea mō te raihana ki te ahumoana mō te 20 tau me te mana anō ki te whakahou anō i te raihana. He tekau tau a Te Whakatōhea e whawhai ana i rō kooti ki ngā kaiwhakahē i te tonoa me ngā tītinitanga i te ture i taea ai e Te Whakatōhea ki te whakatutuki i ōna wawata mō te iwi.

I taua wā kua matemate te nuinga o tēnei kāhui i mua i tōna pūāwaitanga, ahakoa kāore anō kia pūāwawai mai ngā hua o tēnei kaupapa ki te iwi.

Ripanga 6: Whakatōhea Māori Trust Board Mussel Farm, mana whakaae Whakatōhea Māori Trust Board.

<b>Ngāi Tama:</b>	Rita Wordsworth, Manny Mokomoko
<b>Ngāti Rua:</b>	Te Riaki Amoamo, Robert Edwards
<b>Ngāti Ngahere:</b>	Te Kahautu Maxwell (pakeke), Wiremu Maxwell
<b>Ngāti Patumoana:</b>	John Hata, Ranginui Walker
<b>Ngāti Ira:</b>	Riini Tai
<b>Ūpokorehe:</b>	Barry Kiwara

Nō te tau 2017 i tīmata tā Te Whakatōhea tauhokohoko atu i āna kuku ki tāwāhi ki Amerika, ā, taihoa ka pakaru mai ko Āhia. Ko te mea kē i te tūtaki tuatahitanga a Te Whakatōhea ki te Pākehā, ki a Kāpene Kuki i te tau 1769, he kuku tāna i tauhokohoko atu ai ki runga i te Endeavour.

Ko te pae tawhiti a Te Poari o Te Whakatōhea:

“The Trust Board’s long term vision for aquaculture is to *“maximise the water space for Whakatōhea by generating financial returns and creating sustainable employment”*. This vision sets the pathway for opportunity and involvement in the aquaculture industry where whānau, hapū, iwi and the community can work together.”  
(Whakatōhea Māori Trust Board, n.d).

Kua tīkina e Te Whakatōhea ko te whakataūākī nā tana tipuna a Tapuikāhahu; “Te kai hoki i Waiaua,” hai pae tawhiti mō Te Poari o Te Whakatōhea. Ko tāna whai kia noho ko Te Whakatōhea hai pātaka kai mō te ao katoa. Ana kua tīmata te whakatinana haere i ōna moemoeā, kua whāia kia tata, e whakamaua nei kia tīna. Ana e tāiki haere ana hoki. E ai ki te

rangatira ariki o Te Whakatōhea, ko Te Riaki Amoamo; “Kua tinana, ko te kupu, ko te kupu kua tinana”.

He maha ngā ratonga kai raro i Te Poari o Te Whakatōhea e whakarato nei ki ngā uri o Te Whakatōhea, otirā, ko te iwi nui tonu o te hāpori o te taone o Ōpōtiki me tōna rohe whānui, mai i Te Waimana ki Pōtaka, ki Matawai. Ko ēnei ratonga āna ko te whakarauora i te iwi, ā hauora, ā, wairua, ā hinengaro, ā tinana, ā mātauranga, ā tikanga, ā reo, ā mātauranga o Te Whakatōhea, ā mātauranga whānui o te ao, ā ōhanga, ā nōhonga whare, ā whakawhanaketanga, ā te katoa:

- Ratonga Whānau
- Rātonga Hauora
- Whare Ako Kōhungahunga
- Mātauranga me te Whakaako, Whakangungu.

Ko Te Poari o Te Whakatōhea te pākihi nui, e nui ake ana kaimahi i ō ngā pākihi katoa i Ōpōtiki me tōna rohe whānui.

Kua tutuki nei i Te Poari o Te Whakatōhea ēnei mahinga katoatanga āna i tōna ake anō kaha. Nāna anō ia i kuhu. “*I tohenihorautia e ia ki tana mate kia toherauarikitia e ia ki tōna ora*”. (Maxwell, T.K. 2017). I taea ai e ia ēnei keokeonga e Mākeo ai te kitea e te ao whānui te tohetoa o Te Whakatōhea ahakoa te whenua i murua, ngā tāngata i kōhurutia, ngā taonga i urupatutia he nui noa atu te ringa taumaha o te Karauna ki te whakanana ki te hātepe i te ūpoko o Te Whakatōhea kia mate.

### **3.10 Titikaha**

Kua tangihia e te hōrirerie te rongopai o tēnei kura ki te rire o te rangi ki te rire o te whenua, kia rongu ai i te rire o te ngākau tangata ki tōna reo Atua, ki te reo o ōna waka ka tangi te kura ka tangi wiwini, ka tangi te kura ka tangi wawana ko Aotearoa, Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti ka tau kai uta. Kua hakiri ki tōna hākoakoa, ki tōna hāuriuri, ki tōna hānōnoke, ki tōna hāaraara anō i roto i ngā mano tau ka rerehu atu ki te muri, ka urarā ki te pae. I mumura te hikanga ahi tapu ki te kaunati hikahika a te tipuna nei a Rāwiri i tere i nui ao me ngā moana i kauria e Te Whakatōhea i tana hikanga i tana ahi i te kimihanga i te ara o te tikanga i pai ai tāna noho ki tawhito rangi i te ao nā, kia pai ai hoki tāna noho ki tū rangi i te ao nei. I kahupapatia tēnei kura, kua whakapuakina tā ināmata kupu me tā tūmata tonu nei kupu hai whatu i ngā kura i te huanga mai ko Te Whakatōhea e tū nei i tōna mana Māori motuhake.

I te tīmatanga o tēnei kura i kakea ai te toihiarewa te ara o Tāwhaki ki ngā Atua Māori. Nā konei ake ai i whakaheke ihotia te iho Atua, te iho ariki o ngā waka ariki, i hua ai ko Te Whakatōhea iwi, i pouwhenuatia ai ko Te Whakatōhea mana whenua, i tokatū moanatia ai ko Te Whakatōhea mana moana, i poutiriaorangitia ai ko Te Whakatōhea mana rangi. Ka kuramahora te korowai o Te Whakatōhea e raupītia ai tōna whenuakura, ōnā tūtohu whenua, ōna hapū, ōna marae me ngā iwi kai te remu o tōna korowai whenuakura.

Kua matapakitia te whatinga mai o te tai Pākehā ki tātahi me ōnā whiunga porotāwhaowhao i pōtukia ki te rae o Te Whakatōhea. Ko te taenga mai o te Atua hohou rongo tērā, ko te riri taua nui tērā, ko te muru whenua tērā ka mutu ka mate tangata, mate whenua, mate tikanga, mate reo.

Kua kuramahora te kitea o tā Te Whakatōhea pupuri ki tōna tuakiri me tōna mana mai i rā anō i te tīmatanga o te ao i ngā Atua i a Tāwhaki, i a Tamaiwaho, i a Māui heke rawa mai ki te hekenga mai o ngā waka ki te tatūtanga o Te Whakatōhea hai iwi motuhake i mau tonu ia ki tōna tuakiri. Nā te whakapapa tērā āhuatanga ōna i pērā ai. Ko te mōhio ōna ki a ia anō. Kai roto i tōna toto e rere ana ko te ira Atua, ko te ira tipua, ko te ira ariki, ko te ira tangata. E kīa ana he momo tērā. Arā he momo nō tērā ira, tērā kāwai, ērā tīpuna, kua hanumi, kua kotahi e hua mai ai tērā kotahitanga o ērā matatini o te tawatawainga e kīa nei ko te tuakiri tērā o tēnei mea ko te iwi. Anā, i tēnei kura ko Te Whakatōhea te iwi.

Ahakoia ko ngā ururua, ko ngā tairo a Kupe, ko ngā taru tawhiti i urutomokia a Te Whakatōhea e waho, arā ko te tai Pākehā me tōna matatini, mata-ora, mata-hua, mata-rawa, mata-pai me tērā hoki o te mata-mate, mata-kino, mata-tinihanga, mata-rua katoa atu he tini hēanga.

Ko te tauhokohoko tērā i ātawhaitia e Te Whakatōhea, ko te whaiwhai wērā tērā i hua mai ai ko te ōhanga o te iwi, ko ngā hangarau hou i tōia mai te iwi i te ao kōhatū ki te ao hou. I konā i rerekē ai te noho a te iwi ki tōna anō ao. Engari ko tā Te Whakatōhea he hanumi i ērā tūāhuatanga ko te ao Pākehā ki tōna anō ao, hoi anō ko te mutunga iho ko tōna anō tuakiri i mau tonu iho ko Te Whakatōhea iwi, ko Te Whakatōhea tangata.

Ko te hohoutanga o te rongopai i rerekē anō ai tōna ao. I konei i tau iho, i tāmutumutu ai ko tāna pupuri ki te ao o te patu tangata, ki te kai tangata, ki ngā tikanga a tana Atua riri o Tamaiwaho. Ko te hohou tērā i te āhuareka o te nōhanga tahitanga a ngā tūākana me ngā taina i te whakaaro kotahi. I konei i hanumi tonu ai ko te whakapono Māori ki te whakapono Karaitiana kia Te Whakatōhea tonu āna whakahaere, āna tikanga me te mau tonu ki ngā mahi

a te tohunga ki roto ki te rongopai me te tapu o tēnei mea ko te karakia. Hai konā i mau tonu ai a Te Whakatōhea ki tōna tuakiri i roto i te whakapono i hau mai ai, i hou mai ai ki tōna ao.

Nā roto tonu mai i te whakapono ka tau iho ai ko te tūtukitanga ki te mata-mate, mata-kino, mata-tinihanga, mata-rua o te tai Pākehā. Anā i raupatutia ai ko te whenua, i kōhurutia ai ko te tangata, i murua ai ko te tikanga, i patua ai ko te wairua. Nō roto ana mai i tēnei mate kino nui i kitea ko te pakari o Te Whakatōhea ki te pakanga ki te mate kia puta ko tōna ora. Ko te tohetohe tērā ki te hē kia tū ko te tika i te mea ko te kaha o tana whakapono he harakore, anā i whawhai mō tana mana, ko tana tuakiri tērā. Ka kitea i tēnei rā kai konei tonu ko Te Whakatōhea i kimihia te ara o te tikanga kia pai ai tana noho i tēnei ao; ko tana ū ki tana kaupapa i ngā petihana, ko tana tohe ki tana harakore tērā e puta ai ia i te mate ki te ora. Ka riro mai he kamapeihana ka tū ko Te Poari Māori o Te Whakatōhea. Anā i raro i tērā kua hua mai ko ana kauapapa maha katoa, ko te hoko mai i te whenua hai whakahoki mai i te whenua, ko te whakarauora i te iwi, ā hauora, ā, wairua, ā hinengaro, ā tinana, ā mātauranga, ā tikanga, ā reo, ā mātauranga o Te Whakatōhea, ā mātauranga whānui o te ao, ā ōhanga, ā nōhonga whare, ā whakawhanaketanga, ā te katoa. Ā, ko te whakatutuki i te kerēme ā Te Whakatōhea tērā kāore anō kia tatu iho engari e tohetohe tonungia ana ko tana harakore hai whakahoki mai i tōna mana ko tana tuakiri ka puta mai i te mate ki te ora.

I roto i ēnei mahi a Te Whakatōhea ko te whai kia mau ki tōna mana, ko te tuakiri tērā, ko te whakapakari i te iwi kia kitea mai ko tōna kaha ki te pakanga i te mate kia puta ko te ora o Te Whakatōhea iwi.

Ko te titonga hou kai raro iho nei te whakaeke a Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti i te tau 2019. Kai te tono tēnei titonga ki te Pirimia Hōnora Jacinda Adern me tana Kāwanatanga ki te whakatau i te kerēme a Te Whakatōhea. Ka whakapapatia e te titonga hou nei te whakapapa o te raupatunga o te whenua i te tau 1866 me ngā taumaha e pēhi kino nei i a Te Whakatōhea i roto i ngā tau 152; 1866-2019 me te whakawātea i te iwi i te taura i tōna kakī.

*Aue taukurī te mamae i ahau,*

*Kua riro taku whenua,*

*Te Kāwanatanga tika haramai,*

*Ki te whakaora i a mātou,*

*Nō te mea kai roto mātou i te pōuritanga.*

*Kāhore he maungārongo ki te hunga kino,*

*E ai tā tōku Atua hoki mai me hoatu te kōrōria te hōnora.*

*E te Pirimia hōmai te oranga nui ki a mātou Te Whakatōhea ake, ake.e.*

*He aha rā kai tōku ihu e waitohu noa nei?  
 He wawara taua pea, tēnei ka tata mai!  
 Kāore ia rā ko Te Pārematamēne,  
 Puruheti tī! Puruheti kō!  
 Harahara aitū harahara ā tai,  
 He aroha noa ake nōku ki te whenua.  
 Nō mua ngā kīhō waiho i roto.  
 Tūtaki rawa mai ki te rangi o te kakari,  
 Nau mai haere te tira haurangi o Tama Mai Ki Whenua.  
 He poupourangi te taru nāna i hōmai ki te riri,  
 Nā te waha i kī, nā te ringa i paepae.  
 Me tau ahau ki te tauwati.  
 Mūru Papatahuroa,  
 Nāhau i horo te whetū, nāhau i horo te marama.  
 Te Whakatōhea.  
 Nei ngā toenga, ngā mōrehu,  
 Te Pouaru, Te Pani me te Rawkore.  
 Hīkaikai, hīkaikai, parawhetawheta, takaoraora, takaoraora.  
 Anei Te Whakatōhea.  
 Tohenihorautia taku mate, tohenihorautia taku ora!  
 Kua tae mai ki Te Paremata ki Te Ūpoko o Te Ika.  
 Tangohia mai te taura i taku kakī.  
 E tō ana i taku waka i a Te Maungārongo,  
 Ka puta kai tua kai ngā whakaihu ki Maungaroa, ki Maunganui.  
 Horahia mai anō e te ture, e te Pārematamēne,  
 Puruheti tī! Puruheti kō!  
 Kia takoto ahau i te āio mōwai rokiroki e.  
 Toheraoa! Toheraoa!  
 Te Whakatōhea maurua!  
 Puruheti tī! Puruheti kō!  
 Hī!*

Waiata: Puruheti tī! Puruheti kō!, Te Kahautu Maxwell, performed at Te Matatini, 2019)

I pōkai tēnei kura ki Te Whakatōhea ki roto i te ao hou nei, i tēnei rā. I whakarukutia e tēnei kura te whatukura ki te puku o Te Whakatōhea, ki tōna manawa, ki tōna hinengaro, i whakakauhia ki roto ki ōna whakaaro. Anei a Te Whakatōhea, tēnei ko Te Whakatōhea, ko te

kura nei ko te Tohekura o Te Whakatohea. Ko te kura tēnei i whanake i raro i a Awarua o Te Whakatōhea, kura tawhito, kura hou. Kua kura nui, kua kura roa, kua kura tēnei nā Tūhaepō.

“Patu tangata, patu whenua, harakore!” (Amoamo, 1990).

## Ko Te Kura Nui: Te Kooti

---

### 4.1 Kupu Whakaari

Kāore te hua mai he kupu mō Te Matua tangata me Te Whakatōhea. Ka kuramahoratia ki te Kura Nui nei ko Te Matua tangata me tana noho hai matua mō Te Whakatōhea i roto i te pōtatutatu. Ahakoa he Matua tangata, nō tana hautanga tuatahitanga mai ki te Te Wera o roto mai o Te Whakatōhea, he kāinga i auautia te hokihoki ki te whakaruruhau i roto i tōna kauawhitanga, i tae mai hai manuhiri mā Te Whakatōhea i te tīmatatanga o te tau 1869. He honotanga i tipu ai, he whanaungatanga i mau ai, he whakapapa tangata, he whakapapa Atua. Ka noho koia hai kauaka ki te Atua mō te iwi, hai waka hoehoenga mō te iwi i ōna tūmanakotanga i roto i te pōkaikaha, ā mate noa.

Tuātahi ka tūhura i ngā kōrero mōna: Ko wai ia? Nō hea ia? Ka matapaki i tōna whānautanga mai me tana whakatipuranga mai i raro i ngā kupu matakite a te Te Toiroa o Nukutaurua me te tinanatanga o te kupu, te kupu i tinana. Ka titiro ki te akoranga ōna ki te kura mīhana, he wā nui tō te Atua pānga mai ki a ia i te whakawhiwhinga ōna ki te mana Atua poropiti. Ka hauhaketia ngā kōrero mō tana tūnga mai ki te whai kia mau ai i tōna iwi o Rongowhakaata, otirā ngā iwi o Tūranganui te mana Māori motuhake i tīmata te kai nuitia e tauiwi i tērā wā.

Tuarua ko te harurutanga o te whenua i te Paimārire me tana Atua a Tamarura i korikori ai a Tūranga, i tōtara wāhirua ai a Tūranga, i pakanga ai a Tūranga, i mate ai a Tūranga tangata, i riro ai a Tūranga whenua i te pakō a te pū, i te ngākau hao o tauiwi. I pakanga iwi ki te iwi, Ngāti Porou ki a Ngāti Porou, ngā iwi o Tūranga, Rongowhakaata me Te Aitanga a Māhaki ki a rātou anō, ki a Ngāti Porou anō, ko te whakapono te take, ko te rānaki mate te take, ko te kimi utu mō ngā pakanga tawhito te take.

Tuatoru, ko te Tirahou i konei ko tāna hau tuatahi mai ki roto o Te Whakatōhea me tā Te Whakatōhea ki a ia; ko Hira Te Popo, ariki o Ngāti Ira; hapū o Te Whakatōhea. Ko ngā kupu whakaari ērā, ko te whare i hangaia mōna, ko Tānewhirinaki tērā, ko ngā mōteatea ērā.

Tuawhā, ko Te Tokanganui a Noho tērā me tā Te Mātuatanga māunu i ōna kaupapa, ko ngā whare whakairo ērā, ko ōna kupu whakaari me āna karakia ērā i āta whakakaupapatia ki roto o te Nehenehenui.

Tuarima ka matapakitia te herenga o ngā Rā ki a Te Whakatōhea me tāna kupapa ki raro i ngā tikanga a Te Matua tangata me te whakairo i tōna tuakiri mā te whakapono o Te Ringātū.

Tuaono ka whakauru haeretia ētahi titonga hou e hānagai ana ki a Te Matua tangata me te pūtiki i ngā kōrero, i ngā whakaaro me ngā whakapae e pā ana ki te whakapapa i waenga nui i a Te Matuatanga me Te Whakatōhea.

#### 4.2 Ko Arikirangi tēnei te haere nei

E karangatia ana a Te Kooti e ngā Ringatū; ko Te Matua tangata. Kia hoki ake ki tana whānautanga mai ko Arikirangi tōna ake ingoa. He kōrero, he whakapapa ki ōna ingoa, he maha ōna ingoa. He rite ki tā nehe tikanga mō te whakaingoa tāngata, arā, he kaupapa, he take, he mahi, he tipuna ka hua ake he ingoa. Nō reira he tikanga nui whakahirahira tapu tēnei te whakaingoa tāngata.

Tērā tētahi tohunga ko Te Toiroa Ikarihi tōna ingoa nō Nukutaurua; he matakite. E ai ki tā Te Ringatū kōrero i puta i a ia te matakite mō te whānautanga mai a Arikirangi i te wā o te pōtatutatu, i roto i te pōkaikaha, mamae pōuri nui kerekere. Hai tā ngā kōrero anō nō te tau 1766 tēnei e toru tau anō i mua i te taenga mai a Kāpene Kuki. Koiane tēnei matakite:

“Tiwha tiwha te pō, tiwha tiwha te pō.

Ko te Pakerewhā

Ko Arikirangi tenei ra te haere nei”.

(Binney, 1995. p. 11).

Ana i whakaingotia ko Arikirangi tonu ki roto i te matakite nei, arā, ka haramai ia i te wā o te tiwhatiwha kerekere pō, tiwhatiwha pōuriuri pō. Anā, ko te whakamāori e kīa ana ko taua pōuriuri pō ko te pakanga nui tērā e tiwhatiwha ai te ao i te mahi a te tūpāpaku i a Aituā, e tiwhatiwha ai te ao i te mahi a te riri whenua, e tiwhatiwha ai te ao i te mahi a te muru whenua. Ko te Pakerewhā i whakahuatia ake rā ko te Pākehā tonu, he iwi hou ki tēnei whenua. Kāore anō i mōhiotia he aha tēnei mea te Pākehā i taua wā, kāore anō i tae mai i taua wā. Ko te mea kē kāore anō a Te Kooti i whānau noa mai.

Ka noho a Te Toiroa ka whakakuhu he wairua ki roto ki a ia anō, ana ka whakapateretere (mokomoko) i a ia, ka hake tana tuarā, ka koropuku, ka whātorotoro ana matimati ānō ka rite ki ō te papateretere waewae. Ko te papateretere he tohu nō te ora, he tohu nō te mate ki tō te Māori whakapono.

Ana ka tuhia e Te Toiroa te āhua o tēnei iwi hou ki te kirikiri. Ahakoa he tauhou ngā mea ki a ia ka tapahia he korowai ka mahia mai he tarau ka ingotia he pūkoro, ka rarangahia he punua

kete hai pōtae, ka ingoatia he taupopoki. Ka mahia mai he mea tauhou anō ko tana kakau he peka kōkōmuka, ka mahia mai te ipu ki te kōhatū, ka whakakāia te ipu ki te rau pōhata kua maroketia, kātahi ia ka momitia tērā mea, ka ingoatia he ngongo. Ka mahia mai he waka whai urungi, ka mahia mai te anga kuku hai tūmere, ka whakakāingia ki te otaota ka tahuna, ka ingoatia ko ngātoroirangi mō te mahi a te tipuna a Ngātoroirangi i tana tono ahi mai i Hawaiki ki Aotearoa nei (Binney, 1995).

Kai kōna tētahi anō matakite a Te Toiroa mō te whānau maitanga a Te Kooti:

“Tērā ētahi tamariki e rua ka whānau mai ki Te Pā o Kahu ki roto o Ngāti Maru; ki te mate tā Te Turuki ka ora tā Te Rangipātahi ka pā he aituā nui ki tēnei whenua”.

Nō te 1766 tēnei matakite e rima tekau tau tēnei i mua noa atu i tana whānau maitanga. I eke ngā matakitetanga e rua a Te Toiroa i roto o Ngāti Maru he hapū ki roto o Rongowhakaata tokorua ngā tamariki i whānau mai ki Te Pā o Kahu. I mate te tama a Te Turuki, ana i ora te tama a Te Rangipātahi ka tapaina ki te ingoa ko Arikirangi. Ana ko Te Turuki rāua ko Te Rangipātahi he tuakana, taina rāua. E kīa ana e Paora Delamere nō te tau 1814 te tau i whānau mai ai a Te Kooti (Binney, 1995. p.16). Hoi anō he mea nui te tau 1814, koirā te tau i tae mai ai te whakapono Karaitiana ki Aotearoa. I tū i a Te Mātenga te karakia tuatahi ki Kororāreka i te 1 o Hānuere o taua tau rā. E ai ki a Binney nō te tau pea o 1832 (Binney, 1995. p.16).

He matakite anō tā Te Toiroa mō te Pākerewhā nei. Kai roto i te matakite nei i kītea te mautanga i tō rātou Atua hou. I roto i te matakitetanga ka kīa he Atua pai tō rātou Atua, engari te iwi Pākerewhā nei, he iwi kino, e ngaro ai te tangata.

Te ingoa o tō rātou Atua, ko Tama-i-rorokūtia, he Atua pai, ka ngaro anō te tangata. Kai ngā rīkoata a Te Ringatū tāna anō whakamāoritanga o tēnei matakitenga e ai ki tā Te Kooti ki ana hēkeretari: ‘Nā ko ahau (Te Kooti) te kaiwhakaatu i matakitetia e ia, a, ka whanau ahau ka tae mai he iwi hou ki tēnei motu. He atua ano to ratou, ara ko Tama-i-rorokutia he Atua pai otira ka ngaro te tangata’ (Binney, 1995. p.12).

Nā te mōhio pea o Te Rangipātahi ki ngā matakite a Te Toiroa, nā te aha kē rānei i nehu oratia tana tamaiti a Arikirangi ki te rua kūmara. Nā te mana atua ōna i ā Te Toiroa matakite i tohea tōna mate kia ora, anā i ora. Ka noho ko taua wāhi i nehua oratia a Arikirangi ko Whakatō, arā, i whakatō oratia ai a Arikirangi. Anā, ka rere a Arikirangi ki tana matua ko Te Turuki, anā i whakatipuria ia hai tamaiti whāngai māna. Ana, i tangohia e ia te ingoa o tana pāpā whāngai; ko Te Turuki hai ingoa mōna.

Kua mōhio kē noa atu e Te Toiroa te mahi a Te Rangipātahi ki tana tama, ana ka rere ki te haea tana mokopuna, ara ko te haea nei ko te tikanga nei ko te tohi. Ko tērā haea kia mau ai ki ngā kōrero, hītoria, whakapapa o ngā tīpuna ki te tamaiti rā, anā kia rākaukawa ki te kupu. E ai anō ki te kōrero nāna, nā Te Toiroa anō ia i tohi ki te tohi a Tūmatauenga, arā kia rākaukawa ki te riri.

Ko te ingoa nei, ko Te Kooti i tangohia i tētahi pānui i runga i te kaupuke i tana haeretanga ki Ākarana. Ko te pānui nā te Hēketari o Te Hāhi Mihingare, nā Dandeson Coates, arā Te Kooti (Binney, 1995. p.17). Ana, i iriiritia ia ki roto i Te Hāhi Mihingare ki te ingoa a Te Kooti. Nō reira e toru ana ingoa, ko Arikirangi, ko Te Turuki, ko Te Kooti. Ka rongonuitia whānuitia ko tōna ingoa ko Te Kooti puta ki te motu whānui.

During visits to Auckland, Te Kooti at some time attended the Wesleyans' Native Institution at Three Kings, founded in 1844. There he encountered the 'experimental religion', as it was called by its teachers. It was probably at this institution that he also acquired his ability to read English, for the Wesleyans expressly made English a part of the curriculum because this was a school for potential leaders (Binney, 1995. p. 20).

I ēnei tūāhuatanga i āta nanao atu a Te Kooti ki te rākau a te Pākeha hai oranga mō tōna tinana me tana iwi Māori. I rūmakina a ia ki ngā karaipiture, ki te kupu tapu a te Atua. Ēnei kuranga katoatanga ōna hai rākau mōna ki ana whawhai ki te Karauna ina pōkerekere pō te ao i a tiwhatiwha te pō mai i roto i ngā matakitenga a Te Toiroa.

I kuraina a Te Kooti ki te kura mīhana o Whakatō hai ākongā. I reira ia i ako ki ngā kupu tapu a Ihowā te Atua Ora o Ngā Mano me ngā mātauranga o te Pākehā, ko te tuhi, ko te pānui, ko te kōrero hoki i te reo Ingarihi. Ko ōna kaiako ki Whakatō ko te Kerehi, ko Hamuera Wiremu me Wiremu Wiremu. I raro i ngā ako a Kerehi i ākina rātou ko ana ākongā ki te whai mātauranga mō te tauhokohoko. Grace urged them to 'take the plough in their own hands', and to build and sail their own trading vessels to keep control of the prices they received for their goods (Binney, 1995. p. 21).

Taka rawa te wā ka tū ia hai kaikarakia mō te hāhi. Kāore hoki e kore i raro i te maru o te Kerehi i aro a Te Kooti ki te whai i te mahi hai Minita. Engari kīhai i whakaaengia e te Wiremu. According to Sarah Dunlop, who knew Te Kooti from her childhood and was sympathetic to him, even though he had been involved in the Anglican church for seven or eight years and was a lay preacher. Williams still threw him out after he attended church one Sunday, drunk (Binney, 1995. p. 21).

I tipu ake a Te Kooti i te wā i nōhia tuatahitia a Tūranganui e te Pākehā. I mahitahi ngā rangatira o ngā pā me ngā Pākehā nei i te mea ko ngā hua ka whiwhi rātou i ērā Pākehā ko ngā rawa. Ka whakamoea e ngā rangatira Māori nei ā rātou tamāhine ki ngā Pākehā nei. Hai tā ngā rangatira titiro ka nui tā rātou whai mana mena he Pākehā tō rātou ki tō rātou pā, ina rā te nui o te whai rawa, ngā paraikete, ngā nēra, ngā pukapuka, ngā kai hoki a te Pākehā te rama, te waipiro, te tūpeka me te aha noa iho. He whai mana nō roto i ēnei āhuetanga o te Pākehā. I whakamoea e ngā rangatira ngā puhi wāhine ki ngā Pākehā nei; ko John Harris, William Brown, James Wyllie, George Read and William Greene. Ana i wehea mai hoki he whenua mā rātou me ā rātou tamariki Māori. Ko ngā whakaritenga mō te whenua he whakarite Māori e ai ki te tikanga, arā ka noho te whenua ki ngā ringaringa o ngā rangatira me te iwi.

Whāia ka whakatakoto tikanga a Te Kooti nā te mea ka kite ia ka nui kē hoki te whai hua a ngā Pākehā i te whenua Māori nā konei ka tangohia mai e ia he kāwhe ia tau hai utu mō te rīhi i te whenua. I konei ka tīmata ngā tautohetohenga mō ngā utu mō te whenua me ngā rohenga o ngā whenua i waenganui i ngā Māori me ngā Pākehā. Te Kooti was one of those named by Harris in 1852 as acting as the ‘bother boys’ of the redemption movement (Binney, 1995. p. 35).

Nō te tau 1852 i uru atu a Te Kooti ki tētahi rōpū rangatahi ki te mahi muru i ō te pākehā i hara ki a ia me tana iwi. Ko ēnei mahinga katoatanga i mahia e ia, otira e rātou te rōpū rangatahi o Mākaraka e ai ki te tikanga muru. Ina hē te mahi kua haere atu te taua ki te rānaki i te utu. Ana ko te āhua nei i pērā ai ngā mahi a ngā Pākehā i haere rātou i runga i te pōhēhē me te kūare ki ngā tikanga a te Māori, a ngā iwi o Tūranga whānui.

Ko Kahutia te manukura o te rōpū rangatahi nei ko te rangatira o Ngāi Tāwhiri o roto o Rongowhakaata. Kahutia who had made some early land transactions soon emerged as the leader of the ‘redemption’ movement which from 1851 sought to take back lands that had been alienated at Turanga and to return the payments – horse or cattle – made for their use (Binney, 1995. p. 35).

This trouble involved protest over local land rights and was supported by Grace, who considered that both the government’s and the settler’s overwhelming aim was ‘to possess themselves of the land altogether regardless of the real interests of the natives. The groups notoriety took the form of charging for pastorage, or seizing horses and cattle that were being grazed without agreement on Māori land, and of levying anchorage dues in the river. The rangatahi, the young men of the district, took on the role of ‘social bandits’ when they found no other effective means of redress against the squatters (Binney, 1995. p. 21).

Ka kitea i roto i ēnei kōrero kua tākiritia kētia te māti ki roto i a ia ki te pupuri i te mana Māori motuhake. Kua mārama haere ia ki ngā matarau o te Pākehā, he ngākau hao, he kaiponu. Me te mahara ake anō ki tērā matakite nā Te Toiroa mō te Pākerewhā me Tama-i-rorokutia, he iwi Atua, engari he iwi kino.

Hoi anō he taha rua tō ngā kōrero nei. E ai ki ētahi rangatira pērā i a Wī Pere o Tūranga ehara a Te Kooti i te tangata pai. He tangata whakatūtū taua, he haututū, he haere tikangakore, he whakararuraru i ngā rangatira me ā rātou mōkaikai Pākehā. Ko te pai ki ngā rangatira ko ngā rawa katoa, ko ngā mōmona katoa i taka rawa ki a rātou ki ngā rangatira kauaka ki te iwi. Ko te āhua nei kāore ngā rangatira i mārama ki ngā mahi hanariki a te Pākehā ki te iwi i te mea kāore anō rātou i rongo ki te mū a te Pākehā, kāore hoki pea rātou i te mōhio i te mea ko tā rātou i rongo ai ko te pai, ko te ora, ko te whai rawa. He whakarongo rānei nō ngā rangatira ki ā te Pākehā kōrero; *“kai runga te kōrero, kai raro te rahurahu”* (Whakatauki nā Ngāti Awa).

Nō te 1853 ko Wī Pere te manukura o tētahi taua i muru i te pā o Te Kooti. He whakapae nāna nā Te Kooti me te rōpū rangatahi i hao katoa ngā poaka, ngā kau, ngā hoiho, anā i whānako hoki ngā waipiro a ngā Pākehā. Ko te whakapae a Wī Pere i murua e rātou te rohe o Tūranga me te hari hoki i te puhi wāhine o ngā Pākehā. I mauhereheretia te rōpū rangatahi e Wī Pere me tana taua. Ana i tukuna rātou ko ngā mauherehere ki a Rongowhakaata tonu, engari a Te Kooti i rere, kāore i mau (Binney, 1995).

Ahakoia tā ngā rangatira, whakapae, whakawhiu hoki i a Te Kooti ki te kupu tāwai me te muru. Kīhai hoki i aro i a rātou, ka kai rātou i ā rātou ruaki, kai kō paku tata ake nei te whiu taumaha o ngā muru katoa e haramai ana; ko te muru whenua. Nā te mārama rānei o Te Kooti ki ngā nekeneke a tauwiwi, ko tana mana poropiti rānei kua matakite noatia e Te Toiroa kua tinanatia mai.

Ka puta anō i a Te Toiroa te matakite mō Te Kooti mō Nukutaurua. I reira ka tonoa a Te Kooti kia haere atu ki a ia nōna e tai tonu ana, e haututū tonu ana, e tutū tonu ana. Ko te kupu a Te Toiroa ki a Te Kooti e mea ana; *“Ka rere mai koe i Tūranga i tētahi waka raupō e tangi ana, e ngaro atu ana i waho atu o Papahuakina. Kāore hoki e roa ka puta ake anō me ngā karakia o te whakapono hou me te tū anō o tōu ringa.”* Ko te matakitetanga tēnei i te whakawhiwhinga ki a Te Kooti te mana atua, te mana poropiti me te mau mai i tana whakapono a Te Ringatū i waho o te moana, arā i ngā ioka whakapongonga tērā ki roto o Wharekauri. He kupu anō tā Te Toiroa ki a Te Kooti i mua i tana wehenga i Nukutaurua e mea ana; *“tahitahia mai nga kirikiri o taku kainga kei awahi nga rimurimu o te kainga nei i a koe”* Delamere manuscript (n.d as cited in Binney, 1995, p. 24). Ko te kupu nei e kōrero ana mō te ao tawhito i a Te Toiroa, tōna mana,

ōna atua Māori i a Te Toiroa me waiho ki a ia ki a Te Toiroa. He Atua hou tō Te Kooti me whakarere ngā Atua Māori ki a Te Toiroa me pūmau ia ki tōna Atua hou o tōna whakapono hou; ko Tama-i-rorokūtia. Ko te kirikiri o Nukutaurua kai te kōrero mō ngā kirikiri i haria mai i Hawaiki ki runga i a Tākitimu waka, ana, te ūnga ki Te Mahia ka whakatōkia e Tamatearikinui te kirikiri ki reira hai mauri mō Tākitimu. Ana i roto i te matakite nei, e tohutohu ana ki a Te Kooti me waiho te ao tawhito, ngā atua Māori, ngā karakia, ngā mea Māori katoa ki reira, ki a Te Toiroa, he Atua hou tō Te Kooti e haramai ana, he whakapono hou.

E ai ki ngā kōrero a Paora Delamere te Poutikanga o Te Hāhi Ringatū, nō te takiwā pea o te 1857 nō muri kē mai tēnei i tana moetanga i tana wahine tuatahi i a Irihāpeti. Ko te whakaatu tuatahi mai o te wairua o te Atua ki a Te Kooti, ko te hōmaitanga tuatahitanga tēnei a te wairua o te Atua nei i te mana whakaora ki a Te Kooti. Ka ki atu te wairua ki a ia e toru tau kāore ia e whiwhi uri, nō te tau tuawhā ka hapū tana wahine. Ko te kōrero e mea ana ka panaia ia e tana iwi ka kīa ia he wairangi. Ka kī atu te wairua ki a ia ka haramai tētahi tangata i tana pā me te kī atu he ikahuirua i reira i tana pā. Ka tohutohutia ia e te wairua o te Atua me aha ia ki te whakaora i te ikahuirua rā; *“Ko reira koe mōhio ai, he Atua whakaora tāngata ahau.”* Ka kīa a Te Kooti ka hoki tonu ia ki ana mahi kino. Ka kī atu anō te Atua ki a ia; *“Ka ngaro koe i te pōuri, ko tōu nohoanga he ana, ko tōu hoa moenga ko te whiu o te wepū, ā e mongamonga noa iho ōu iwi i te taumaha o ō mahi i a rātou. Ā, ko reira anō ahau mahara ai ki a koe, ā, ka tino mōhio koe i taua wā he Atua whakaora tangata ahau.”* Ka haere tonu ngā kōrero a Paora Delamere mō te whakatinanatanga i ngā whakakitenga, anā ko te hokinga tērā a Te Kooti ki tana pā, aoinaake ka tae atu te tangata ki a Te Kooti ki te mau i a ia ki te ikahuirua rā. Ka whakawātea a Te Kooti i te wharemate ka ki atu ia; *‘E ara, nō te mea he mea paihere koe nā te ringaringa o te Atua o runga rawa’*. I pērā anō a Te Kooti ki te mea tuarua. Ko te ingoa o te tokorua nei ko Eruera Poutō rāua ko Hemi Taihuka. Ko Hemi Taihuka i whakaraua tahitia me Te Kooti ki Wharekauri. Nō te tau tuatoru ka whakaatū anō te wairua e tū ana ki runga i te maunga, ka kī atu ki a Te Kooti nō te tau o muri iho ka whānau mai tana tamaiti ka whakaingoatia ki te ingoa ko Kahutia-te-Rangi. Nō muri mai i te whānautanga maitanga ka tū mai he Atua hou ka kūpapa ki raro ngā iwi o Tūranga engari a Te Kooti e kore e whakaaetia ki tērā Atua. Ko te whakaaturanga o te wairua o te Atua i tōna ingoa e ai ki a Te Kooti:

Nā ko tāna meatanga mai ki au ‘He mea kua kitea nuitia nei ahau e koe, e kore ahau e whakarere i a koe. Tooku ingoa ko *“Mikaera”* (Binney, 1995. p. 27).

Ko ngā kōrero o runga ake nei ko ngā poupou ēnei o te whare kōrero o Te Kooti, anā ko tōna whānautanga mai i raro i ngā matakitetanga, ko tōna tiputanga me ōna kuranga, ko tōna taipakeketanga, ko tōna urunga ki ngā take tōrangapū mō te Mana Motuhake.

#### 4.2.1 Kai Tūrangānui he matāpū

Tae rawa ki te wā o ngā ono tekau o te rau tau tekaumāiwa kua mākūkū te whenua i te toto, kua onewhero katoa. I pakaru mai te riri whenua ki Waitara i te 17 o Maehe 1860. “Gold attacked early in the afternoon of the 17th with artillery, three companies of the 65th and a handful of sailors from the “Nigger”. Thus began the Taranaki War” (Maxwell, 2000. p. 25). Ko te take, ko te whakahēanga a Wiremu Kīngi Te Rangitāke ki te hoko whenua a te Karauna ki te wahapū o te awa o Waitara hai nohoanga mō te iwi Pākehā. Ka tū te riri, ka tū te ringa o Te Ua Haumēne, ka tū te Pai Mārire.

Nō te tau 1862 i tū i a Te Ua Haumēne te whakapono hou ko te Pai Mārire. “Pai Marire, more commonly known as Hauhauism, is a much misunderstood and misinterpreted Maori movement which blossomed in the war toen 1860s. It began in September 1862 in Taranaki.” (Stokes, 1980. p. 4).

Ka pakaru ana te riri ki te motu, ka pakaru ana te Pai Mārire ki te motu. E rua, e rua ko te riri whenua. E rua, e rua ko te Pai Mārire. Nā te Karauna te pakanga i kari ake, nā te Māori te whakapono i hohou ake. He mate tō tētahi, he ora tō tētahi. Ko te ingoa e rongonuitia ana te Pai Mārire i tērā wā ko te Hauhau. He mea whakaparahako tēra ingoa e ngā Pākehā i ngā karakia tapu a Te Pai Mārire e mea ana, hau, hau, rirerire hau Pai Mārire . Ko te Hauhau tērā.

I roto i ngā riri whenua me ngā mahi whakatū i te Kīngitanga kua noho kūpapa ngā rangatira o Tūrangā. Ko te kūpapa i konei ko te kore e whakawhirinaki atu ki tētahi taha; kīhai i whirinaki ki te taha o te Karauna, kīhai hoki i whirinaki ki te taha ki te Kīngitanga, ki te Pai Mārire hoki.

Ko tā rātou, tā ngā rangatira o Tūrangānui, ko te pupuri i tō rātou mana Māori motuhake i heke iho mai i rā anō i ō rātou tīpuna. Ko tā rātou mana whakahaere i a rātou ki roto o Tūrangā ki raro i tēnei tikanga te Rūnanga. Ana, kua rūnanga ngā rangatira ki te whakatakoto tikanga mō rātou, ki te whakatakoto ture mō rātou hai whakahaere i a rātou ngā rangatira, hai whakahaere hoki i ō rātou Pākehā hoki. Arā kia ōrite te tāke, kia ōrite tahi ngā utu mō ngā mahi tauhokohoko me te huhua noa atu o ngā kaupapa e pā ana ki a rātou me tō rātou nā ao o taua wā.

Ko tētahi atu kaupapa ko te rūnanga i te kaupapa nei, ko te mana o Kuini Wikitōria ki runga ki te whenua me he whai wāhi hoki ōna ki a rātou me tō rātou mana Māori motuhake. At a second meeting held in May [1858], Queen Victorias authority was discussed. Paratene Pototi, the old and senior chief of Ngāi Tāhwiri, a hapū of Rongowhakaata, spoke firmly: ‘We are not the remnant of a people left by the Pākehā; we have not been conquered: the queen has her island,

we have ours'. Kahutia stated equally clearly: 'We will exercise our own authority in our country... I had the mana before the pakeha came and have it still (Binney, 1995. p. 37).

Nō muri mai i te patunga i a Te Wākana i te Maehe o te tau 1865 ka hau atu te rongopai hou ki te rohe o Tūranga. Ko ngā apataki a Te Ua Haumēne e karangatia ana ko ngā Tiu i hari i Te Pai Mārire ki roto o Te Tairāwhiti ko Pātara Te Rakataura rāua ko Kereopa Te Rau. Ko tō rātou Atua hou ko Tama Rura, ko tō rātou Atua pakanga ko Riki, arā ko te āti anahera ko Mikaera. Ko tā ngā Tiu whai ko Hirini Te Kani te tamaiti whāngai a Te Kani a Takirau. Mei kore e tuku a Hirini i a ia me tōna mana ki raro i Te Pai Mārire kāore e kore ka kūpapa iho hoki ko Te Tairāwhiti whānui tonu, puta noa. Ko tā Te Pai Mārire maungāringa ko te mokomōkai, arā he ūpoko maroke o tētahi hōia Pākeha i hātepengia ki roto o Taranaki. Ko te kupu a Te Ua ki ngā Tiu mō te mau i te ūpoko maroke: *'Kia tika te hari kia tae pai ai ki a Hirini māna e hoatu pai ki ōna whanaunga Pākehā i reira'*. Ahakoa te kaupapa kawē a Te Pai Mārire ki roto o Tūranga, otirā Te Tairāwhiti ko te hohou i te rongopai, te pai mārire kua tae kē te rongō ki reira mō te patunga i a Te Wākana ki roto o Ōpōtiki (Binney, 1995).

I kūpapa te nuinga o Ngāti Maru ki raro ki te whakapono hou nei ki te Pai Mārire, atu i a Te Kooti, tētahi rangatira ko Tamihana Ruatapu me ētahi atu torutoru noa iho. By early April Henry Williams junior estimated at least a third of all the Tūranga Māori were believers with another third calling themselves neutral (Binney, 1995. p. 41).

Kua mōhio, ka kitea ake kua tōtara wāhiruatia ngā iwi o Tūranga kua noho Hauhau ētahi, kua noho ētahi ki a rātou anō ki tō rātou ake Mana Motuhake.

Nō te 20 o Mei i whakatūngia e Mōkena tētahi o ngā rangatira nui o Ngāti Porou i tana pouhaki ki runga o Titirangi ka taea te haki a te Kuini hai whakatumatuma i tā Te Pai Mārire. Ka whakatakariritia a Rongowhakaata e tērā mahi a Mōkena. I konā i whakatūngia e Hirini Te Kani tana pā whawhai hou ki te take o Titirangi, hai tāna ki te tiaki i ngā kōiwi o tana pāpā o Rāwiri i tanumia ki reira. Ehara i te mea he kaitautoko a Hirini i Te Pai Mārire, engari kihai ia i whakaae ki te haki a Ngāti Porou me tana pou i tōna mana ki runga i a Tūranga. I konā i pīrangī a Hirini ki te tope i te pouhaki a Ngāti Porou. Leonard Williams soon realised that the flagstaff had become the focal issue: They do not like the flagstaff. As he said, 'the soreness in peoples minds' was the insistant behaviour of the government Māori faction, the Kawanatanga, led by Mokena, 'and nothing else'. Hirini who had earlier refused to allow the Pai Marire to fly their flags, called 'Riki' and 'Tamarura', at his settlement, now threatened to join the Pai Marire (Binney, 1995. p. 44).

I reira ngā rangatira o Tūranga, ahakoa kua tūtakarerewa te noho a ngā iwi i whakanana tonu ētahi o rātou ki te pupuri tonu ki tō rātou Mana Motuhake ake me te kore e whakawhirinaki ki Te Pai Mārire, ki te Kuini rānei, engari ko te mau tonu i tō ratou mana. I reira anō kua matakū hoki ngā Pākehā. Ko ētahi rangatira ko Hirini Te Kani, ko Wiremu Kīngi rātou ko Anaru Matete i tarai ki te whakatau i te wairua o tō rātou Pākehā me te oati ki a rātou kai te pai tā rātou noho i raro i tō rātou whakaruruhau, ā e korekore rawa hoki rātou e tūkinotia e Te Pai Mārire. The Pai Marire chiefs sought to reassure the settlers that they need not leave, that their adoption of the new faith was not in itself a threat. War would come to Turanga only if the government took the first step – by sending troops. The delegation of Pai Marire leaders, including Wiremu Kingi, Anaru Matete and others from Ngati Maru, went to Harris with their decision. Kingi urged him, ‘Don’t listen to what you are told by the Queenites, the Hauhau here will not molest you.’ Anaru also assured him that Hirini Te Kani would be sufficient protection, and that on this matter all the chiefs were agreed (Binney, 1995. p. 46).

Nō te riri ki roto o Waiapu i tae ake te riri ki roto o Tūranga. I tahuri a Ngāti Porou ki te kaikai i a rātou, anā i noho tōtarawāhirua. Ko tētahi taha o te Waiapū i kūpapa ki raro i a Riki te Atua riri o te Hauhau, ā ko tētahi taha i kūpapa ki raro i te Kuinitanga. Ka tukuna e te Kāwanatanga tana ope taua hai haumi mō Ngāti Porou. I pakarū mai te riri ki Pukamaire he pā nō Te Whānau-a-Hinerupe i tukua ki raro i te mana o ngā Hauhau. I whakaeketia e Ngāti Porou i raro i a Mōkena Kōhere. I kauparetia e ngā Hauhau te riri ki Pukamaire kātahi i kōkiritia e ngā Hauhau ki runga o Tikitiki. Ka rere a Ngāti Porou me ōna mōrehu ki Hātepe ki te pā o Mōkena, i reira i tohua e Te Aowera he hapū nō Ngāti Porou ko Rāpata Wahawaha hai manukura mō rātou. I pakangatia e Te Aowera ngā Hauhau ki Mākōtutukutu me Pākairomiromi. I hoki anō te kōkiri ki runga o Pukamaire, engari kua whakarērea kētia a Pukamaire. I whāia haeretia ngā Hauhau ki Te Kawakawa, ka hinga tērā ko te rerenga o rātou ki Hungahunga-toroa. Engari i te taenga atu kāore anō tērā kia tika mō te whawhai, anā i rere ngā Hauhau, i tuku rānei i a rātou ki a Rāpata Wahawaha (Oliver, 2002).

Ko ngā Hauhau i rere i ngā mauherehere a Rāpata Wahawaha me tana taua me te ope taua a te Kāwanatanga, i rere whakatetonga ki Tūranga ki te kimi tāwharau i tō rātou huanga. Pai Marire refugees from the East Coast sought out their kin at Turanga. On 14 September, 400 Pai Marire – men, women, and children - sought snactuary in the newly constructed pa at Waerenga-a-Hika (Binney, 1995. p. 46).

Ana i tinana tā ngā rangatira o Tūranga i poropiti rā, mā te ringa anake o te Kāwanatanga ka tahuna ai te ahi o te riri ina whakaeke tana ope taua ki runga o Tūranga. As anticipated it was

the arrival on 9 November of Mokena and 260 Ngati Porou, together with Donald McLean and the government troops, which brought war.

McLean set arbitrary terms for ‘peace’, which were impossible for most of the Turanga leaders countenance. All Maori had to take an oath of allegiance, all malefactors and those who had ‘fought against the Government’ were to be surrendered; everyone who did not belong to the district was to be expelled and all arms were to be surrendered. If these terms were not complied with, then the ‘lands of the promoters of disturbance’ would be confiscated. McLean refused to negotiate or discuss his terms. The Poverty Bay tribes were being treated as rebels before they had become so (Binney, 1995. p. 46 – 47).

Ko te 16 o Noema te rā kati ki ngā iwi o Tūranga ki te hohou i te rongō ki tā Te Mākarini (Donald McLean) i takoto ai me ōna here. Anā, nō te 17 - 22 o Noema 1865 i pakarū mai te riri ki Waerenga-ā-Hika.

I te 21 o Noema, ka hopukina a Te Kooti i te wā e whawhai ana, i runga i te whakapae teka kua huri ia hai `pūrahōrua, mā ana whanaunga. Nā Paora Parau, he toa, he koroheke hoki nō Rongowhakaata, i kōrero ko tana mahi he tuku paura mō ngā pū a Kōmene mā (Binney, 1995). In a hastily scribbled ‘PS’ to a letter dated 21 November, the commander of the attacking forces, Major James Fraser, added: ‘I have made just now a prisoner of a native called Koti on suspicion of being a spy’ (Binney, 1995. p. 48).

Ko te whakapae he mea harihari paura e ia ki te iwi Pai Mārire ki roto i te pā o Waerenga-ā-Hika ahakoa nō roto mai ia i te ope taua o te Karauna e whawhai ana ki te Pai Mārire. He kōrero kai roto i te pukapuka a Rēnata Wiremu (Leonard Williams) i muri i tana matenga 1932 e kōrero ana mō te hoputanga i a Te Kooti; He stated that Te Kooti had been charged with having communicated with the enemy and for giving ammunition to one man. ‘He acknowledged that he had been in communication with his brother’, Komene, but only with the view to extricating him from the war (Binney, 1995. p. 51). Kāore i mau ngā whakapaeteka nei, ana i tukuna a Te Kooti.

I te mutunga ko te whenua kē te pūtakenga mai o ēnei mahinga katoatanga, arā he iwi ngākau hao tō te Pākehā. Kia mahara ake ki ngā matakitenga a Te Toiroa ka whānau mai ai a Te Kooti i te wā o te Pākerewhā, o te tiwhatiwha te pō, anā koia tēnei ko te hao o te Pākehā ki a ia anō te whenua, mōna anō te whenua, ahakoa ehara i a ia te whenua ka whakatakoto tikanga e riro ai i a ia, ahakoa he aha. Kia mahara ake anō ki tērā matakite anō tā Te Toiroa mō te Pākehā nei, i kītea te mautanga i tō rātou Atua hou, i kīā rā he Atua pai tō rātou Atua, engari te iwi nei a te

Pākehā, he iwi kino, e ngaro ai te tangata. Te ingoa o tō rātou Atua, ko Tama-i-rorokūtia, he Atua pai, ka ngaro anō te tangata. \

The policies of land confiscation on the East Coast were being developed inside this framework. The means were not yet determined, but were certainly being discussed locally in January and February 1866. Read was already seizing the opportunity to panic Maori into selling in advance. A Native Land Court was expected to be held at Turanga, and the question of what was to be 'done' with the 'Hauhau' land would be considered then. In fact, the legislation for the East Coast area was brought into place only in October. It empowered the court to enquire into title and seize any land of those engaged in rebellion. But as early as March the government agents had certainly had it on their agenda to remove all potential troublemakers. As Leonard Williams stated when Haultain had first introduced the idea of deportation at Turanga, the object was to have the prisoners 'out of the way until the question of the confiscation of land should be settled, as the people had been warned beforehand that they would be punished in this way' be McLeans ultimatum (Binney, 1995. pp. 56-57).

#### **4.2.2 Kawe ana ki Wharekauri**

Anā, nō te Maehe o te tau o muri iho ka hopukina tuaruatia a Te Kooti mō te whakapaeteka anō, he pūrahōrua a ia. Ahakoa tana ātete nui ki tēnei whakapaeteka i whakarautia tonutia ia, kāore hoki he whakawākanga, kāore hoki he aha. Ko te kupu whakarau he kupu tawhito mō te tangata kua mauherehere. Nō te 3 o Maehe ka whiua atu a Te Kooti ki runga ki te kaupuke a Te Kira (St Kilda) me te ope tuatahi o ngā Whakarau ki Ahuriri. Te Kooti was then flung like a dog into a boat taking the Hauhau out to the steamer. Te Kooti asked. 'For what reason am I put in the boat with the Hauhau? I am not a Hauhau!' But what cared Biggs and Wilson, and Paratene Turangi [Pototi], and other Native chiefs? All they said was, Go on to the boat, go on to the boat' (Binney, 1995. P. 55). Ka mau tonu ki tōna pūmahara ngā kupu a Paratene Pototi me tana kīkiki i a ia me tana kī: 'Go a te poti.'

Anā, te ūnga ki Ahuriri ka whakarautia ki te whareherehere o reira. Ka tono a Te Kooti ki a Te Mākarini kia whakawākia ia, he kaha tohe nōna, he harakore nōna. E rua ngā reta i tuhi atu a Te Kooti ki a Te Mākarini e tohe ana i tana harakore. Ko tana reta tuatahi i te 4 o Hune:

E hoa, he ki atu naku mo te taha ki a au e noho nei i roto i te hauhau. Me whakaatu mai taku hara kia marama ai i a au. Hua noa hoki au me whakawa. Heoi ano. Na Tekoti, kuini maori (Binney, 1995. p. 59).

Ko te reta tuarua ko te rā i tuhia ki runga ko te 6 o Hune nā rāua ko tana tuakana ko Kōmene i tuhi:

E hoa, tena koe. Tenei taku kupu ki a koe ko nga tangata kino i waiho e koe, ara, te kino ko te hoatu tingara ki nga tangata, ko Te Rire, ko Waere. He pu, he tingara na Waere enei na Te Rire he tingara. Ko nga maori kawana ko Himiona Katipa, ko Pera Kararehe [Pera Taihuka], ko Te Otene Puru, ko Te Watene Tangiori, ko Hare Turi, ko enei tangata he hoatu tingara pu ki te hauhau. Pono rawa tena korero. Heoi ano. Na Tekooti raua ko Komene (Binney, 1995. pp. 59 – 60).

Kāore tonu a Te Mākarini i aro, he aha te aha. Nō te 5 o Hune ko te terenga tērā o Te Kira, o ngā Whakarau, o Te Kooti hoki ki te whakarau atu ai ki Wharekauri (Binney, 1990).

Ka kitea ake he kaha nui te tohe a Te Kooti he tangata harakore ia, mai i tana mautanga tuatahitanga. Ka kitea ake i ngā kōrero, i ngā tuhituhi o runga ake nei ko tana kaha ki te whawhai kia whakawātea i a ia, kia kaua e mauhereheretia, ko Te Rire rāua ko Waere e whakapaetia ana e Te Kooti he tāngata kino ko rāua ētahi o ngā Pākehā i noho tuatahitia a Tūranga i whakamoea anō hoki e ngā rangatira ki ngā puhi Māori o tērā wā. Ko Te Rire ko George Read tērā, ko Waere ko James Wyllie tērā. Anā, mai i rā anō i te tīmatatanga kua kino ngā Pākehā nei ki a Te Kooti mō tana mahi tāke i ngā Pākehā nei mō te whenua me ngā mahi tauhokohoko, i noho a Te Kooti hai whakataetae ki ngā Pākehā nei ki a Te Rire mā.

Ko ngā whakapae a ngā Pākehā nei he mea whānako e ia ā rātou kararehe me ā rātou wāhine hoki. E ai ki ngā kōrero a Te Kooti i tana kōrero ki a James MacKay i te tau 1873, ka kōrero ia mō ngā mauhereheretanga e rua ōna. I kōrero ia mō Captain George Read (Te Rire), ana i muri mai i te pakanga i Waerenga-a-Hika i mauheretia ia i runga i ngā whakapae a Te Rire nā Te Kooti i whānako ana hoiho, he whakawhiu tērā i a Te Kooti mō ngā mahi tauhokohoko i whakataetaetia atu ki a Te Rire i raruraru ai i konā te mahi tauhokohoko a Te Rire. Anā i whakawākia tērā, kāore hoki ērā whakapae i mau. ‘Then they said I was a Hauhau and a spy for them. Captain Reid used his influence, and I was made a military prisoner and sent to Napier (Binney, 1995. p. 59).

### **Whanganui, whangaroa ngā ngaru whakapuke kai Wharekauri**

Ko tana waiata tangi tēnei e whai ake nei e apakuratia ana ngā kōrero o tana whakarautanga me tana mau harakoretanga atu ki Whakarekauri, ahakoa tana whawhai mō Te Karauna i mauhereheretia tonutia. Ko te matakite a Te Toiroa; “Tiwhatiwha te pō...” kua eke haere tonu

ki runga ki te iwi Māori i ngā riri whenua, kua parekura te iwi Māori, kua tīwhatiwha tonu te pō. Kua eke haere tonu te matakite a Te Toiroa ki runga ki a ia tonu, ki a Te Kooti tonu. I mau harakoretanga atu ki Wharekauri ahakoa te aha, kua tiwhatiwha tonu te pō.

Ka kōrerotia e te waiata nei ko te hau maitanga a Te Pai Mārire i Taranaki me tana Atua a Tama-Rura. Me tana whakahau i te iwi me kūpapa ki raro i te mana o te Kuini me ngā ture a te Kāwana, mā reira ka whakapaipaitia ai ngā raruraru kua heipū ki runga ki a ia me tana iwi, nā runga i te mahi a Tama-Rura. Koirā tana whakapae, tana tangi mō te whakapaeteka i ūhia ki runga ki a ia ahakoa tana harakore. Mō te parekura nui kua pā ki tana iwi ko te mate, ko te mate, ko te mate. *‘Mate tangata, mate whenua, harakore’* (Whakatauaikī nā Te Whakatōhea)..

*Ka tū au ka korikori ka puta te rongo o Taranaki e hau mai nei<sup>35</sup>,*

*Ka toro taku ringa ki te Atua nui e tū iho nei, ko Tama-Rura<sup>36</sup>,*

*Ka mate i te riri ki Waerenga-ā-Hika.*

*I te toru o Maehe ka whiua atu au ki runga i te kaipuke<sup>37</sup>,*

*Ka tere moana nui au ka whakaihu ki Waikawa<sup>38</sup> rā,*

*Ka huri tēnei te riu ki Ahuriri hai a Te Mākarini.*

*I whiua atu au ki runga ki a Te Kira<sup>39</sup> au e noho nei.*

*Ka tahuri whakamuri he wai kai aku kamo e riringi nei,*

*Whanganui Whangaroa ngā ngaru whakapuke kai Wharekauri.*

*E noho e te iwi tū ake ki runga rā tiro iho ki raro rā,*

*Āwangawanga ana tere mai a te ao nā runga i Hangaroa.*

*I ahu mai i Tūranga i te wākāinga kua wehea nei,*

*Nō konei te aroha e te iwi kua haere nei.*

*Kūpapa e te iwi ki raro ki te maru o te Kuini,*

*Hai kawē mō tātou ki runga ki te orangatonutanga,*

*Kāti rā ngā kupu i maka i te wā i mua rā.*

*Tēnā ko tēnei e te iwi whakarongo ki te ture Kāwana,*

*Hai whakapai ake mō te mahi a Rura<sup>40</sup> nāna nei i raru ai...*

---

<sup>35</sup> Kai te whakaatu tēnei i te āwangawanga, wehi i te rongotanga e haramai ana Te Paimārire (Hauhau).

<sup>36</sup> Ko Tama-Ruara tana Atua.

<sup>37</sup> Ko te rā tēnei i kawea a Te Kooti me ngā Hauhau ki Ahuriri.

<sup>38</sup> Portland Island.

<sup>39</sup> St Kilda te kaipuke i kawē i a Te Kooti me ngā Hauhau ki Wharekauri.

<sup>40</sup> Tama-Rura.

Ka pāngia a Te Kooti e te mate pararūtiki nōna ki Wharekauri, ka rāhuitia tana noho pēnā ki tā te Māori tikanga o mua ina pā he taru tawhiti ki te tangata, kia kauaka e pangia ki te katoa, he rāhui ki tētahi wāhi kotahi, anā ka whakatū whare mōtuhake mō te hunga kua māuiui pērā. Anā i waihangatia ai he whareponga hai wharemate mōna i te mea kua kirikā, kua tuhaina he toto, kua tino hē nei.

E ai ki te kōrero a Mōnita i whakamātautautia a Te Kooti nōna e takoto kirikā ana e warea ana e tana ahi i huri tana ahi hai ngārara, he ahi anō tō ngā waewae ka ngōki haere ki a ia, kātahi ia ka karanga ake ki te Atua, kātahi ka hoki anō te ngārara hai ahi anō. Ko te whakamātautau tuarua, anā i waipuketia tana whare, ka eke te wai ki tana kakī, kātahi ia ka karanga ake anō ki te Atua, kātahi ka heke anō te wai, ka kore. Ka tohutohungia e ia tētahi kuia ki te haere ki te whare o te minita; “Ko reira ka kite koe i a ia e noho ana i tana tūru, ka kite anō koe i ngā pukapuka i tana tēpū, haria mai te pukapuka i te taha matau.” Kāore te kuia i pīrangī haere engari nā Te Kooti, ā, i haere ia. Ko te haerenga a te kuia, i eke tā Te Kooti i kīa atu ai. Ko tana kuhunga atu i tūmeke te minita i tana kitenga i a ia, engari tē taea te aha, ko tāna i tiki atu ai ko te Paipera Tapu (Binney, 1995).

Ko taua Paipera Tapu rā te tūāpapa o ngā karakia. Ana i tangohia mai e Te Kooti, anā ko te hīmene tuatahi a Te Hāhi Ringatū ko te **Hīmene Te Tangi a Heremaia**:

*Māharahara tonu tōku wairu, ā, e whakahoki ake tēnei e ahau i roto i tōku ngākau, kia tangi tonu atu ahau ki tōku Kaiha...ngā... He mahi tohu hoki tēnei nā Ihowā e kore ai tōku wairua e ngā...ro... E kore anō hoki āna mahi aroha e mu...tu... Auē whakarongo mai e tēnei hunga mate ko Ihowā hai whāinga māku, e ai tā tōku wairu...a... E pai ana a Ihowā ki te hunga e tūmanako atu ana ki a ia, ki te wairua hoki e whai ana ki te Atua o...ra... Tēnei ōku roimata te tuturu nei, he whāinga nāku ki a Ihowā i tōku Kaiwhakao...ra... He pai anō e āku tamariki me whai tātou i tō tātou Kaiha...ngā... Auē me whai ahau i tōku Kaihanga nō te mea e puta mai ana te kino rāua ko te pai i roto i tōna māngai, ā, ka wiri noa iho aha...u... He aha rā te tangata ora i amuamu ai te tangata hoki ina whiua ōna ha...ra... Kia rapua, kia kimihia atu hoki tō tātou huarahi, kia whai atu tātou i tō tātou Atua...a... Auē kia ara atu tōku ngākau me ōku ringaringa ki te whai i tōku Atua...a... Māturuturu ana te wai i ōku kanohi, kāhore hoki e mu...tu... Titiro mai rā e Ihowā ki ahau e whai atu nei i muri i ōu takahanga waewa...e... Kua rongō mai hoki koe ki tōku reo, kua e huna ōu taringa ki te tānga o tōku manawa ki ahau e tangi noa atu ne...i... I whakatata mai koe i te rā i karanga atu ai ahau ki tōu ingoa, ā, i mea koe ki ahau kua e we...hi... Kua tohea e te Ariki ngā hēanga o tōku wairua, ā, kua hokona e ia tōku ora...ngā... Whakahokia mai e Ihowā tōku ora i tēnei rā kia mahara mai ki ahau e tangi kōpikopiko noa ne...i... E te Atua aue ai te pōuri o tōku wairua mō āu kupu kāhore e*

*whakarangona e tēnei iwi ma...te... E mea ana rātou i ō rātou whakaaro a...ke... E tōku Atua ka tangi tonu atu ahau ki a koe, ko rātou ia kāhore he mahara he pani nei hoki rāto...u... Kāhore he matua he pouaru nei hoki rātou kāhore he whenu...a... Nā ko tēnei e te Ariki me whai tonu atu ahau i tōu hōnore me tōu korōri...a... Kua riro tō mātou wāhi tapu ki ngā tāngata kē, ko koe tonu ia hai matua tipu mōku ake, a...ke.*

Kai roto i te hīmene nei ngā kōrero e hāngai pū ki tō te Whakarau ao, otirā ki tō te hunga ao kua raupatutia ai ana ake whenua tīpuna. Ko ā te hīmene nei tangi, ko ā Te Kooti me tana iwi Whakarau tangi, ko ō te hīmene pōuri, ko ō Te Kooti me tana iwi Ringatū pōuri. Kai te kī te hīmene nei kua kore te iwi Pākehā nei i whakarongo, ka mahi kē rātou i tā rātou i whakaaro ai me ā rātou tikanga hai aha mā rātou ngā whakaaro o ētahi me ngā tikanga a ētahi, ko te iwi Māori tērā. Kai te kōrero anō ko rātou he pani, kāore he matua, he pōaru, kāore hoki ā rātou whenua. Kai te kī tērā ko ō rātou mātua, tīpuna kai ngā urupā o Ūropi, ko ō rātou whakapapa kai Ūropi nō reira kāore ō rātou whenua ki Aotearoa. Kai te rārangi whakamutunga e mea ana kua riro te whenua i a tauwiwi, kua raupatutia kētia. E mea ana ngā kaumātua ko te pūtakenga o te ingoa Ringatū kai te wāhi o tēnei hīmene e mea ana; ‘*Auē kia ara atu tōku ngākau me ōku ringaringa ki te whai i tōku Atua.*’

Ko te karakia tuatahi a Te Kooti ki Wharekauri i tangohia mai i roto i a Heremaia 31: 16-17:

*Ko te kupu tēnei a Ihowā whakamutua te tangi a tōu reo ngā roimata a ōu kanohi nō te mea ka whai utu tō mahi e ai tā Ihowā, ā, ka hoki atu rātou i te whenua o te hoariri.*

*Ka whai tūmanakohanga atu hoki tō whakamutunga e ai tā Ihowā, ā, ka hoki atu ngā tamariki ki tō rātou rohe.*

Anā ka kitea ake i konei ngā tūmanakotanga a Te Kooti i tāna kapo ake i ngā karaipiture me te whakahāngai anō ki tā rātou noho whakarau ki roto o Wharekauri. Ko taku whakapae me te mōhio i taua wā he hōu tonu te karapiture ki roto o Aotearoa e rima tekau tau noa iho tōna tūturutanga ki tēnei whenua. Ki te titiro ake ki ngā kupu nei me āna whakahaunga me āna oatitanga ki te tangata, mena he whakarau e pōkaikahatia ana kāore e hapa ka tere hinga koe i ēnei kupu, ka riro koe i te kukumetanga a ēnei kupu i te whakapono ko Ihowā te Atua tonu i te kōrero ki a rātou i te waha o Te Kooti.

Nō te 21 o Pēpuere 1867 i puta ā wairuatia te Atua ki a ia. I tuhia e Te Kooti ki tana rātaka; *Ko te marama tēnei i nui ai tōku mate 21 o ngā rā ka hemo au. Kāhore ōku māharatanga ki te Atua nō te mea ko te rangi me te whenua iti iho i ōku hara he tangata kino rawa atu hoki ahau he*

*pononga nō te rēwera nōku ka hemo kua riro atu tēnei wairua pirau me tēnei tinana hara kātahi anō te wairua o te Atua ka whakaara i a au. Ka mea ia e ara kua tonoa mai nei hoki ahau e te Atua kia whakaorangia koe hai kōrero i tōna ingoa ki tōna iwi e noho whakarau nei i tēnei whenua kia mōhio ai rātou nā Ihowā (Te Kooti Arikirangi Te Turuki, 1864).*

Ka whakaatu ā wairuatia e te Atua ki a ia anō i te 21 o Aperira ka tuhia e Te Kooti. Ko te āhua o ōna waewae kai te kāpura te mā, ko tōna kākahu kai te hukarere te mā, ko tōna māhunga kai ngā whetū te nui, ko tōna karauna kai te rā, ko tōna whītiki kai te torengitanga o te rā kai te rerenga ake hoki, ko tōna kōwhiuwhiu kai te kōpere, ko tōna tokotoko kāhore anō i kitea i tēnei ao.

I taua rā anō i kohaina e te wairua o te Atua e rua ngā mana i roto i ōna ringaringa. Ko te tuatahi he ngārara tauhou ki a ia me tētahi muranga ahi e kore ia nei e wera. Ko te ngārara he tohu wairua mai rā anō i ngā kōrero mō Māui. Ko te ngārara he tohu nō te mate, he tohu anō nō te ora. Arā ko te tohu tēnei i te whakatinanatanga o ngā matakite a Te Toiroa, arā i tana kitenga i a Te Kooti e tangi ana, e rere atu ana i te waka raupō me tana hokinga mai me te Atua hou e tū ana tana ringa. Ko te whakawhiwhinga ki a Te Kooti i te mana poropiti, he mana Atua.

Nō te 12 o Mei 1868 ko te hōmaitanga a te Wairua i ngā kawenata o Te Ringatū ki a Te Kooti. Ka puta te anahera a Mikaira ki a Te Kooti. Ka timata i konei te whakaako i ana karakia me ngā kupu whakaari me ōna ritenga katoa. Hai tā Binney 1995, kai te whakapono ngā Ringatū koinei tētahi take ka tū ngā Rā hai te tekaumārua o ia marama.

Nō te 1 o Hānuere 1868 e toru anō ngā kupu whakaari i hōmai e te Atua ki a Te Kooti i te reo kē. Ko tēnei mea te kupu whakaari ko tōna rite ko te whakataukī he iti te kupu he nui te kōrero, ae, he kupu whakarite, he whakarite i tētahi mahi, i tētahi kaupapa ki tētahi ahua. I tangohia mai i te pukapuka a Matiu te taurira e takoto ana. **Matiu 13: 13** ‘*Nā reira ēnei kupu whakarite āku ki a rātou, ā kāhore e kite; rongu rawa, kāhore e mātau.*’ Ko tō te poropiti reo tēnei. I whakahāngaitia e te poropiti ngā kōrero ki tōna ao, ki tō te iwi hoki. Ko ngā kōrero o roto he tohutohu, he whakatūpato, he whakahau. Ko tōna tikanga he pai, he kino. Ki te puta he kōrero kino ka taea tonutia e te iwi mōna te kōrero ki te kimi i te huarahi hai kaupare atu i te kino hai oranga mōna. Ko ā Te Kooti he mea hōmai e te Atua i te reo kē, nōhea hoki e aro i te tangata tōna māramatanga, engari arā kē tōna whānuitanga, tōna tikanga. Ko te kupu whakaari nei he wā anō kai ngā karaipiture anō ōna whakamāoritanga.

Ki ahau nei nā ko tā Te Kooti tiki mai i te kupu nei a te kupu whakaari, nō Whakaari i Te Moana-ā-Toi. Ko te mahi a Whakaari ki ngā iwi o Mātaatua he tohu ki te iwi ka pehea te āhua

o ia rā, o ia haora, o ia miniti. Ko tana kupu whakaari ki te iwi he matapae i te huarere mā Te Piua o Whakaari, ko tana tū, ko tana takoto. Arā he poropiti i te rā. Kāore hoki e hapa ka eke tāna i kupu whakaari ai, ā i pērā hoki tā Te Kooti.

**Ameko:** Ā, kua kaha tōku wairua ki te whakaora i tōku iwi, e kore tētahi kē atu e kaha ake i ahau. Awhi mai ki ahau i roto i te ponangatanga, ā, māku koutou e whakateitei ake.

**Iperene:** I tēnei wā ka whakahoki ahau i tōku iwi ka whakatupu ahau i a rātou, e kore anō tētahi ringa e pā atu ki a rātou ā muri nei.

**Ūtiera:** Ū tonu taku riri ki ngā iwi nāna i whakamate tōku iwi, ka whakamate ahau i ngā mātua, ā, tae noa ki ngā tamariki, e kore e tākina taku riri ake, ake.

**Ameko: Ihaia 43: 3.** Ko Ihowā hoki ahau, ko tōu Atua ko te mea tapu o Iharaira ko tōu kaiwhakaora; i hoatu e ahau a Ihipa hai utu mōu, a Etiopia rāua ko Tēpa hai wāhi mōu.

**Iperene: Pita 1, 2: 6.** Mō reira tērā wāhi o te karaipiture: “Nā, ka whakatakotoria e ahau ki Hiona te tino kāmaka o te kokonga, he mea whiriwhiri, he mea utu nui, ā, ko te tangata e whakapono ana ki a ia e kore e tukua kia whakamā.”

**Ūtiera: Hamuera 1, 15: 3.** Nā tūkina patua a Amareke, whakangaromia rawatia ā rātou mea katoa, kua hoki rātou e tohungia; engari whakamatea ngātahitia te tāne me te wahine te pōtiki me te mea ngote ū, te kau me te hipi, te kāmera me te kaihe.

Ka kite ake e rua ngā whakamāoritanga ki ngā kupu whakaari e toru nei engari ko tōna whakamāoritanga he ritenga, e hāngai tonu ana ki a Te Kooti me tana iwi. Kai roto i ēnei kupu whakaari ko te oati a te Atua, arā ko Ihowā hai Atua mō rātou, ko te whakahoki i a rātou ki te whenua i oatitia ai e te Atua, ko te whakamate anō i te tangata nāna nei rātou i whakataka atu ki te hē.

I whakahaeretia hunatia e Te Kooti āna karakia i ngā pō. I konei i whakaatu atu ia ki ngā whakarau ngā kōrero o te putanga mai o te wairua o te Atua ki a ia me tana hōmai ki a ia ngā karakia, ngā kupu whakaari me te whakapono o Te Ringatū. Kāore e hapa nā ēnei kupu tapu me ōna whakamāoritanga i whakaae te iwi Whakarau he mana poropiti tō Te Kooti, anā i kūpapa ngā Whakarau ki raro i a Te Kooti ko Ihowā hai Atua mō rātou.

E rite ana te kawenata i hoatu nā e te Atua ki a Mohi, ā, ki a Te Kooti hoki, māna rātou e taki kia puta i te whare pononga pērā i tāna taki i a Mohi me ngā Iharaira kia puta i te whare pononga o Ihipa.

Ko te tuaono o ngā kawenata ki a Te Kooti nō roto i a Tiuteronomi ko te whakahokinga o Te Kooti me tana iwi Whakarau ki te whenua i nōhia e ngā mātua, tīpuna.

**Ekoruhe 20: 2.** Ko Ihowā ahau, ko tōu Atua, nāku koe i whakaputa mai i te whenua o Ihipa, i te whare pōnonga, aua ētahi atua kē atu mōu ki mua i ahau.

**Tiuteronomi 30: 3.** Kātahi a Ihowā, tōu Atua, ka whakaputa kē i tōu pārautanga, ka aroha anō ki a koe, ka tahuri hoki, ka kohikohi i a koe i roto i ngā iwi katoa i whakamararatia atu ai koe e Ihowā e tōu Atua ki rerira.

**Tiuteronomi 30: 4.** Mehemea tērā ētahi o koutou i peia kai ngā tōpito rā anō o te rangi, ka kohikohia mai anō koe e Ihowā, e tōu Atua i reira, ka tīkina anō koe e ia i reira.

**Tiuteronomi 30: 5.** Ā, ka kawea mai koe e Ihowā, e tōu Atua, ki te whenua i nohoia e ōu mātua, ka nohoia hoki a reira e koe, ā, ka mahi ia i te pai ki a koe, ka mea hoki i a koe kia maha atu ōu mātua.

Ka kitea ake i āta whakaritea e Te Kooti tā rātou putanga i te whare pononga nā runga i ngā oati a te Atua ki a ia. E rua ngā tuhinga i whakarērea atu ki Wharekauri me ngā tikanga, whakaritenga me ngā ture i oti i a Te Kooti te whakarite hai taki i a rātou i tā rātou putanga i te whare pononga (Binney, 1995).

*Ki nga kai hapai o te ture. Ki te Runanga o te whare nui. E hoa ma, rapua mai he oranga mo tatou. Kua kite au i to koutou tika i te iimatanga iho ano o to tatou Karakia. E hoa ma, kia kaha ki te rapu i te mea ngaro hai ora mo tatou. Heoi.*

*Nā Te Kooti*

*Heoi kua mahue tatou na te ngoikore. Inaianei kua puta mai ko ta te Tamaiti tikanga raua ko tona Matua. E te iwi, kia kaha, meake ka puta mai he kaupuke mo tatau. Ki te kore a Te Kira e homai e te Atua mo tātau, he kaupuke ke atu. Koia tenei ko te kaupuke nei, ko taku taima tenei. E te iwi kia kaha.*

## **He Ture**

*Tuatahi:* Ki te puta he kupu ā muri nei me whakamana tonu.

*Tuarua:* Ko te tūpato ki ngā mahi kai runga i te tima. Ki te peka ki tēnei mea ka mate. Ka mau ki te Atua he oranga kai reira.

### 4.2.3 Ka manene mai ahau i rō te wai

Nō te 3 o Hūrae 1968 ko te ūnga mai o the kaipuke te Raiwharamēne (Rifleman) ki Wharekauri. Nō te 4 o Hūrae nā Te Kooti i tātaki ngā Whakarau kia puta, anā ko te ekenga o tā te Atua oati ki a Te Kooti. I mauherehere ai ngā Pākehā e ai ki tā Te Kooti i whakahaungia ai. Ahakoa te whakahau a Te Kooti kia kaua rawa tētahi e patua, i tokia tonutia tētahi o ngā pirihihana e Tāmihana Teketeke ki te pātītī. E ai ki te kōrero i raweketia e taua pirihihana tana wahine. I tangohia ngā pū o te whareherehere me ngā kariri me ngā moni. The property taken by the whakarau was the remaining cargo left on the Rifleman, the pigs from the Florence, the money from Thomas's safe (£397 8s 2d) and £125 1s of private money from the settlers' houses. The prisoners also seized the arms and ammunition (Binney, 1995. p.84). E ai ki ngā kōrero a ngā Ringatū i te rarahunga i te kaipuke i whakaeke ngā tāne ki runga me te haka, ānō nei ki te whakangahau i a rātou, kātahi i whakaeke mai ko ngā wāhine me te haka i te haka tūohu, arā ka kūwhera i ngā kūhā ka kūkūtia anō, kātahi huri atu me te tūpou i mua i ngā hēramana. Kātahi ngā hēramana ka matepikoni ka tīmata ki te whāwhā i ngā tou o ngā wāhine. Nō ngā wāhine e haka ana, i hopukina ngā hēramana me te herehere i a rātou. Kāore ngā hēramana i patua, engari i haria ki Aotearoa. Ko te hokinga mai tērā o ngā Whakarau 163 ngā tāne, 64 ngā wāhine, 71 ngā tamariki, katoa 298 o rātou (Binney, 1990).

I tūtaki atu rātou ki tētahi tūpuhi nui me te karawhiu o te marangai. Ahakoa tohe ai te waka kīhai i neke. I whakahauhia e Te Kooti me maka ngā Whakarau i ā rātou taonga Māori, ngā tautau, ngā hei tiki ki te moana i te mea ko ō rātou herenga ki ngā mana tawhito, ki ngā Atua Māori, ko tō rātou Atua ināiane ko Ihowā. Ka tohe a Te Kooti me tuku he tangata, he taonga hai whakahere. Ko te tangata i tukuna he tangata whakaponokore. I kīia he pūrahōrua nā ngā kaitiaki i Wharekauri. Ko Te Wārihi Pōtini tōna ingoa (Binney, 1990).

Nō te rā o muri ka pai mai te rā ka rere te Raiwharamēne, nō te 10 o Hūrae 1968 i ū atu ai ki Whareongaonga he whanga ki te tōnga o Tūranga. Ka puta i a ia te kupu whakaari mō Whareongaonga; *Enemeripi:* ko te kāinga o te whitinga mai tōna tikanga. Ngā mate mō tātou; ko te hoari, ko te whakarau, ko te mate urutā, ko te matekai. Kātahi a Te Kooti ka whakahauhia ngā Whakarau kia hereherea ngā pēpi hou ki te putunga wahia hai tahunga tinana ki te Atua. He rite tēnei whakamātautau a te Atua i a Āperahama i te whakahaunga ōna ki te patu i tana

tama a Īhaka hai tahunga tinana ki a ia. I te kitenga o te Atua i te aroha pūmau o Āperahama ki a ia ka kīa ake a Āperahama kāti, ka tukuna he hipi hai patunga tinana; **Kēnehi 22: 1-19.**

**22** Nā i muri i ēnei mea ka whakamātau te Atua i a Aperahama, ka mea ki a ia, E Aperahama: ka mea ia, Tēnei ahau.

<sup>2</sup> Nā ka mea ia, Kawea atu tāu tamaiti, tāu huatahi, tāu e aroha nei, a Ihaka, ā, haere ki te whenua o Moria; ka whakaeke i a ia ki reira hei tahunga tinana ki runga ki tētahi o ngā maunga e kōrero ai ahau ki a koe.

<sup>3</sup> Nā ka maranga wawe a Aperahama i te ata, a whakanohoia ana e ia tana kaihe, ā, mauria ana e ia ētahi o ana taitamariki hei hoa mōna, me Ihaka hoki, me tana tama, ā, tātāngia ana e ia ngā wahie mō te tahunga tinana, ā, whakatika ana, haere ana ki te wāhi i kōrero ai te Atua ki a ia.

<sup>4</sup> I te rā tuatoru ka maranga ngā kanohi o Aperahama, ā, ka kite ia i taua wāhi i tawhiti.

<sup>5</sup> Nā ka mea a Aperahama ki ana taitamariki, E noho kōrua i konei ki te kaihe; ka haere māua ko te tamaiti nei ki kō, ki te koropiko, ka hoki mai ai ki a kōrua.

<sup>6</sup> Nā ka tango a Aperahama i te wahie mō te tahunga tinana, ā, whakawaha ana e ia ki a Ihaka, ki tana tama; ā, ka mauria e ia he ahi i tōna ringa me tētahi maripi; ā, haere tahi ana rāua.

<sup>7</sup> Nā ka kōrero a Ihaka ki a Aperahama, ki tōna pāpā, ka mea, E tōku matua: ka mea ia, Tēnei ahau, e taku tama. Ā ka mea ia, Nāna, ko te ahi me ngā wahie: kei hea ia te reme hei tahunga tinana?

<sup>8</sup> Ka mea a Aperahama, Kei te Atua te whakaaro, e taku tamaiti, ki tētahi reme mana hei tahunga tinana: nā ka haere tahi rāua.

<sup>9</sup> A ka tae rāua ki te wāhi i kōrero ai te Atua ki a ia; ā, ka hanga e Aperahama tētahi āta ki reira, ā, whakapapatia ana e ia ngā wahie, nā ka herea e ia a Ihaka, tana tama, whakatakotoria iho ki te āta, ki runga ki ngā wahie.

<sup>10</sup> Nā ka totoro atu te ringa o Aperahama, ka mau ki te maripi hei patu mō tana tama.

<sup>11</sup> Nā ko te karangatanga mai a te anahera a Ihowā ki a ia i runga i te rangi, ka mea, E Aperahama, e Aperahama: ka mea ia, Tēnei ahau.

<sup>12</sup> Nā ka mea ia, Kaua e totoro tōu ringa ki te tamaiti, kaua anō hoki tētahi mea e meatia ki a ia: kātahi hoki ahau ka mātau e wehi ana koe i te Atua, i a koe kihai nei i kaiponu i tāu tamaiti, i tāu huatahi, i ahau.

<sup>13</sup> A ka maranga ake ngā kanohi o Aperahama, nā ka kite ia ko tētahi hipi toa i muri i a ia, e mau ana ōna haona i roto i te puia rākau: nā ka haere a Aperahama, ka hopu i te hipi rā, ā, whakaekea ana e ia hei tahunga tinana, hei whakarite mō tana tama.

<sup>14</sup> Nā ka huaina e Aperahama te ingoa o taua wāhi ko Ihowatire: e kōrerotia nei ināianei, Kei te maunga o Ihowā te kitea ia.

<sup>15</sup> *Nā ka karanga anō te anahera a Ihowā ki a Aperahama i te rangi,*

<sup>16</sup> *Ka mea, Kua waiho e ahau ko ahau anō hei oati, e ai tā Ihowā, mōu i mea i tēnei mea, mōu anō hoki kihai i kaiponu i tāu tama, i tāu huatahi:*

<sup>17</sup> *Nā, ka manaakitia rawatia koe e ahau, ā, ka whakanuia rawatia e ahau ōu uri kia pērā me ngā whetū o te rangi, me te onepū hoki i te tahatika o te moana; ā, ka riro i ōu uri te kūwaha o ōna hoariri;*

<sup>18</sup> *Mā tōu uri anō hoki ka manaakitia ai ngā iwi katoa o te whenua; mōu i whakarongo ki tōku reo.*

<sup>19</sup> *Nā ka hoki a Aperahama ki ana taitamariki, ā, whakatika ana ratou, haere tahi ana ki Peerehepa; ā, ka noho a Aperahama ki Peerehepa.*

<sup>20</sup> *ā i muri i ēnei mea ka kōrerotia ki a Aperahama, ka meatia, Nāna, kua whānau tamariki anō ā, Mireka rāua ko Nahora, ko tōu teina;*

<sup>21</sup> *Ko Hutu, ko tana mātāmua, rāua ko Putu, ko tōna teina, me Kemuera hoki, matua o Arame,*

<sup>22</sup> *Rātou ko Kehere, ko Hato, ko Piretata, ko Irirapa, ko Petuere.*

Ko te ritenga tēnei kia kite a Te Kooti i te whakapono o tana iwi Whakarau ki a Ihowā, otirā ki a ia tonu kia kite ia i tō rātou whakapono pūmau ki a ia. Kātahi ka whakahauhia e Te Kooti kia patua he poaka hai tahunga tinana.

Ka whakahaeretia e Te Kooti he karakia whakamoemiti ki te Atua mōna i ārahi rātou i runga i te wai, i tae pai rātou ki te whenua i kupu whakaaritia ai. I reira i mea ake ia ki tana iwi. Whakamutua te koropiko ki a Ihowā, engari me tū te ringa ki te whakakorōria i tōna ingoa tapu. Anā, koirā tētahi pūtakenga mai o te ingoa Ringatū, i take mai i roto i te **Himeme Te Tangi a Heremaia**; *‘Auē kia ara atu tōku ngākau me ōku ringaringa ki te whai i tōku Atua, Me tēnei whakahaunga a Te Kooti i runga kia tū ō rātou ringaringa. Ringatū.*

### 4.3 Tēnei Te Tira Hou

I roto i tēnei wāhanga ka titiro ki te taenga mai a Te Kooti me te whakapono hou nei a Te Ringatū ki roto i a Te Whakatōhea. Ka kōrerohia ngā kōrero mō Te Kooti ki roto i a Te Whakatōhea; te tāwharau i a ia. Ka kōrero hoki mō ana pakanga ki a Te Whakatōhea i tana kimi i te oranga mōna. Ka matapakitia āna mōteatea me ana kupu whakaari i puta i a ia ki roto o Te Whakatōhea. Ka tūhura i te kūpapatanga a Te Whakatōhea ki raro ki a Te Kooti me tana whakapono hou a Te Ringatū. Ka matapakitia mena he panonitanga ki ngā tikanga a Te Whakatōhea, he moenga tahitanga rānei o ngā tikanga e rua.

Mā te haka nei i titoa e te kairangakura nei mā Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti mō Te Matuatanga ka noho hai tāpona mō tēnei wāhanga e pā ana ki Te Matuatanga me Te Whakatōhea ko tōna hautanga mai tērā ko ngā kupu whakaari me ngā mōteatea ēra āna mō Te Whakatōhea. Ko āna kupu ēnei, nāna nei a Te Whakatōhea i ārahi, i whakahau, i kāwana kia ū, kia mau ki tōna mana Māori motuhake.

*Tiwhatiwha te pō! Tiwhatiwha te pō!*  
*Ko Te Pakerewhā! Ko Te Pakerewhā!*  
*Ko Arikirangi tēnei te haere nei,*  
*I ahahahā!*  
*Ko Arikirangi! Ko Arikirangi!*  
*Pūkohukohu te rangi i patua mai ai Te Whakatōhea raupatu,*  
*I Āhaha!*  
*Pikirangi Arikirangi,*  
*He tara koukou,*  
*Ā he anuhe te manawanui o Arikirangi,*  
*Puritia kia mau te kaunati hikahika a Rāwiri.*  
*Ana Tamarura te whenua,*  
*Ka mate i te riri ki Waerengahika,*  
*Auē taukuri e!*  
*Rēkohu<sup>41</sup> kohu te rangi,*  
*I puta mai ai Te Mata o Te Atua,*  
*Tiripā<sup>42</sup>! Tire<sup>43</sup>! Taipeti<sup>44</sup>!*  
*Tipu ake te pono i te whenua,*  
*Titiro iho te tika i te rangi,*  
*Āmeko! Iperene! Ūtiera!<sup>45</sup>*  
*Ka Tūruki Te Tūruki,*  
*Paneke! Paneke!*  
*Ka Tūruki Te Tūruki*  
*Paneke! Paneke!*

---

<sup>41</sup> He ingoa anō mō Wharekauri

<sup>42</sup> Ko te Kupu Whakaari tēnei a Te Atua ki a Aperahama. Ko te whakapūmautanga i te manawanui i runga i te kupu me te oati.

<sup>43</sup> Ko te Kupu Whakaari ki a Mohi. Ko te putanga mai o te Atua ki te tangata.

<sup>44</sup> Ko te Kupu Whakaari ki a Hōhua. Ko te rironga o te whenua i oatitia ki a Aperahama.

<sup>45</sup> Ko te Kupu Whakaari ki a Te Kooti i Wharekauri; “E kore aha e whakarere i a koe me tōku iwi hoki.”

*Ki roto ki te wai,  
 Ka ū ake ana,  
 Ko Whareongaonga,  
 Ohuta! Ohuta!  
 Ka tū te ringaringa!  
 Ka tū te ringaringa  
 Ki runga ki Te Ringatū iho nei! Ringatū iho nei!  
 Hī!  
 Anatakere! Anatakere!<sup>46</sup>  
 Takahia ngā hiwi maunga ki te tai whakarunga,  
 Ka whakakau a Arikirangi Te Awa o Waioweka,  
 Tāwharautia e Te Whakatōhea,  
 Ko Te Wera! Ko Maraetai!  
 Tire!<sup>47</sup> Tinimeene!<sup>48</sup>  
 Hūnanga o te tini,  
 Hūnanga o te mano,  
 Huinga Kupu Whakaari ki Kēnana,  
 I Āhaha!  
 Nōhou Te Popo tō pono,  
 Te maungārongo hoki rā,  
 I haere ai i te ara i titi kaha mai nā,  
 E kai aku mata i te kohu e tatao,  
 Tānewhirinaki,  
 Ki runga o Waioweka,  
 Eripi Tana! Eripi Tana!<sup>49</sup>  
 Nō wai tērā pere?  
 Hai aha tērā pere!  
 Kai te kimi tonu ake te orange mō Te Whakatōhea,*

---

<sup>46</sup> Kai waenganui ai Ngā Kurī ā Whārei ki Tihirau te tamaiti mō tātou. He tamaiti pai, he rangimārie. Nui atu hoki tōna mana. Ahakoa rua, toru, whā, ka koropiko ahau ki ōna waewae..

<sup>47</sup> Ko te Kupu Whakaari ki a Mohi, ko te tononga o Te Atua i te Poukapua hai huna i a Mohi i te rā, ko Pou kāpura hai huna i te pō koinei te tauira mai o te hūnanga o Te Kooti ki Te Wera, ki Maraetai ki roto o Waioweka.

<sup>48</sup> Kupu Whakaari ki a Horomona. Ko te mātauranga, huihuinga o ngā iwi ki ngā Poropiti, ko te atuanga, tangatanga, ko te huihuinga o ngā Kupu Whakaari katoa mai rā anō i a Aperahama tae noa mai ki ngā Poropiti.

<sup>49</sup> Ko te Kupu Whakaari a Te Kooti ki te whare o Te Whakatōhea a Tānewhirinaki i whakatūhia hai whare tapu mō Te Kooti. E kore tō koutou whare e tū. Ka kainga e te kioire mai i te mahau puta noa ki te tuarongo. Ka puta hoki he poropiti i muri i ahau, pakaru tikanga, pakaru whenua, pakaru whakapono. Kia tere te hoki ki te tikanga.

*Kai runga rānei,  
Kai raro rānei,  
Kai kō rānei,  
Anei ake rānei kai Te Matua tangata,  
He waka ahau e te iwi  
Whiritā!<sup>50</sup>  
Ka kuhu ki te ture,  
Whiritā!  
Hai matua mō te pani,  
Whiritā!  
Ko te mana tuatahi ko Te Tiriti o Waitangi,  
Ko te mana tuarua ko Te Kooti Whenua,  
Ko te mana tuatoru ko Te Mana Motuhake,  
Tūruki! Tūruki!  
Paneke! Paneke!  
Tāwhana mai Rēhita<sup>51</sup>  
Haramai te Atua,  
E aweke ana ki te riri,  
E pūhoi ana te aroha ki a Te Whakatōhea,  
Ka tū te ihiih,i  
Ka tū te wanawana,  
Ki runga Arikirangi,  
Ringatū iho nei! Ringatū iho nei!  
Hī!*

(Haka: Te Matuatanga, Te Kahautu Maxwell, i hakaina ki Te Matatini, 2011)

#### **4.3.1 Tēnei haramai nei**

Nō muri tata mai i te pakanga a Te Kooti ki te Kāwanatanga ki Ngā Tapa i te 1 o Hānuere 1869 ko te rerenga tērā o Te Kooti me ngā Mōrehu ki roto o Te Wera ki roto i te rohe o Te Whakatōhea. Ko ngā Mōrehu ko te ingoa i tapaina ki ngā Whakarau i ora mai i Wharekauri. Ko tana rerenga ki Te Wera ko te haerenga ōna ki roto o Te Urewera ki a Ngāi Tūhoe. I mahia mai tana puni ki Maraetahi he pā tawhito nō Ngāti Ira he hapū o Te Whakatōhea (Binney, 1995). Nō te 27 o Hanuere 1869 i tūtaki atu ia ki ētahi tāngata e haria ana tētahi reta nā Hira

---

<sup>50</sup> Ko te Kupu Whakaari ki a Noa i ora ai te tangata.

<sup>51</sup> Ko te kaiārahi tēnei a TeKooti,he kōpere he mā ka puta mai i te pō.

Te Popo te rangatira o Ngāti Ira, e mea ana ka tāwharau i a ia. In January 1869 Te Kooti Arikirangi arrived in the Waioeka area. He converted Hira Te Popo and most of Ngati Ira to the Ringatū faith. Ngati Ira and Ngai Tama of Tuhoe planted gardens and built Te Kooti a substantial village in the Waioeka Gorge at Maraetahi, near Oponae (White, 1993).

Nō te marama o Pēpuere i whakapuakina e Te Kooti tana kupu whakari.

#### 4.3.2 Te kupu whakaari ki Waioweka

##### *I Eripi*

*Ko ahau hai matua mō koutou ake ake*

##### *Tani*

*II Ka whakaorangia e ahau te toenga o te tangata i hangā e tōku ringa i te tīmatanga ake ake*

*III Ka pei ahau i te hunga kino. Ka whakahou ahau i ngā rohe o Rēneti = Hāwira*

Anā, te reo o te Atua tēnei ki ngā Mōrehu me te hiki anō o rātou wairua ahakoa i mate nui rātou ki runga o Ngātapa kai reira tonu te Atua ki te whakaora anō i a rātou ngā mōrehu o Wharekauri, ngā mōrehu o Ngātapa. Ā, ka panaia e ia te hunga kino. Ka whakahou anō ko te whenua ko Rēneti Hāwira. Kua ngaro te tikanga o Rēneti Hāwira. Ko te Rēneti ko tā te Karaitiana tikanga mō te kore kai mīti mō te 40 tau rā ko tōna ritenga ko te noho manene a Mohi me ngā Īharaira i roto i te korahā mō ngā tau 40 i te putanga mai i Ihipa. Ko Hāwira ko te whenua i nōhia ai e te iwi o Ihimaera. Ko te whakamāoritanga ōku i tēnei kupu whakaari kai te kōrerotia mō te whenua oati, ānō te whenua i oatitia ki ngā Īharaira, engari he utu anō ko te rēneti.

Ki Tawhitinui ki Waioeka i tīmata ia ki te whakakaupapa i tana whakapono, nō te 18 February 1869 i puta i a ia tēnei kupu whakaari:

1. ***Ko te Ture.*** Tā te Ture he Hura.
2. ***Ko te Wairua.*** Tā te Wairua he Hīpoki.
3. ***Ko Te Hāhi.*** Tā Te Hāhi he pupuri, he whakarongo.  
Ko te ritenga tēnei o te Ture o te Kawenata.

Ko tā tēnei kupu whakaari ko te whakatakoto i te mahi a tēnā kaupeka, a tēna kaupeka. Ko te Ture i konei ko te mana whakahaere. Arā ko tāna he hura i ngā kauapapa hai wānangatanga, ā iwi, ā whenua, ā tōrangapū, ā whakapono. Ko tā te Wairua he ārahi, he hōmai he māramatanga me he kōrero, me he kupu whakaari. Ko tā Te Hāhi he pupuri i te whakapono, i ngā whakahaunga, ngā whakaritenga, anā he whakarongo.

He kupu whakaari anō i puta i Tawhitinui i te reo kē *One Tupeta* ko tōna tikanga: *Ko te wehenga*. Ko te noho wehe ki a rātou anō, pērā ki tā rātou noho mai i te whitinga mai i Wharekauri. Ana i pērā tā rātou noho, tā Te Kooti hoki noho. I noho wehe tonu a Te Kooti i tana iwi, he tapu, he māharahara hoki koi raru ia i tana iwi tonu. He matakū nōna koi tahuri te iwi Ringatū, āna tāngata ki te hoko atu i a ia ki te Kāwanatanga.

Kāore a Te Whakatōhea i kūpapa tika tonu i raro i a Te Kooti. Kia mahara ake kātahi anō ka murua ngā whenua a Te Whakatōhea e toru tau ki muri. Kua pēhia kinotia te mauri o Te Whakatōhea i ngā pīkaunga taumaha kua riro te whenua, kua manakore i tōna rohe whenua tonu. I te tarai te iwi ki te whakaora i a ia. Kua kite ia i ngā whiu taumaha, ā kua rongo rātou i te ringa taumaha o te Kāwanatanga. Kua tūrorotia a Te Whakatōhea, kua māuiuitia ā wairua, ā hinengaro, ā tinana hoki. Nō reira kīhai a Te Whakatōhea i pīrangi kia tāorotia anōtia ki te whiu a te Kāwanatanga, ko tāna kē he kimi i te huarahi e puta mai a ia i te pōuritanga ki te māramatanga, anā kia ora a ia a Te Whakatōhea; i roto i te pōuri te māramatanga e whiti ana.

Nō te taenga atu o Te Kooti ki Te Wera i reira a Hira Te Popo me tana hapū o Ngati Ira e huna tonu ana i te Kāwanatanga mai i ngā pakanga whenua, i te murunga whenua o 1865-1866. Katoa ngā hapū kua tuku kē i a rātou ki raro i te maru o Kuini Wikitōria, hai whakamutu i te riri o te Kāwanatanga ki a Te Whakatōhea. Nō reira i te kimi oranga a Te Whakatōhea. Hai tā Binney 1995, p. 157, the fall of the redoubt and the pa gave Te Kooti of the Whakatane river mouth. When William Mair arrived on 11 March with the first troops (drawn from the local Armed Constabulary, together with Ngai Tai and Whakatohea from Opotiki).

Atu i konei ka whati atu a Te Kooti ki roto o Tūhoe, whati atu ki te motu. Nō te tau o muri mai i ngā pakanga nunui ka hoki mai a Te Kooti ki Te Wera. E ai ki te kōrero he taimana rarahi tāna ka kōhiti mai he māramatanga nui, me te kōrero anō hoki nā taua taimana anō rā, anā rātou ko ngā mōrehu i ārahi i roto i te ngāherehere pōuriuri o Te Wera. Te Kooti ... used that diamond to go through a dense bush at Te Wera. And those that followed him saw it. It was in the form of a lamb: the diamond (Binney, 1995. p. 209).

E ai ki a Tā Mōnita Delamere ko te taimana a Te Kooti kai te āhua o Te Reme. He mea hari haere e Te Kooti tētahi kete kāwhiu i herea ki tana tuara. Ka haere mai ia ki Ōpōtiki i tana hoiho mā ko Te Ia me te taimana. He kaha nui tōna māramatanga koi pura he tangata ki te titiro ki Te Reme. Ko Te Reme a Te Atua tērā te kaiwhakahere nui ki te ao i rīpekatiā hai muru i ngā hara katoa o te ao. Ko Te Tama a Te Atua.

Kua tū kē ōna pā ki te takiwā o Te Wera, anā ko tana hokinga mai tērā. Ko tāna i hoki mai ai ko te kimi pū me te paura me te whakakao tāngata hai tāngata whawhai mōna. Ko te take kua whakaeke kētia a Maungapōhatū e Rāpata Wahawaha me tana taua o Ngāti Porou, ko tā Te Kooti hokinga mai tēnei ki te rapa haumi, anā ko Te Whakatōhea tērā.

I tukuna e Te Rānapia Waihaku he reta ki a Te Kooti i Ruatāhuna kia whakaeketia tana pā i Ōpape ki te tiki pū. Nō te 7 o Maehe nā Te Kooti i taki te kōkiri ki runga o Ōmarumutu me Ōpape he pā nunui ēnei o Te Whakatōhea. Ka riro i a Te Kooti e rua ngā kāho paura me ngā pū 40 i whakarautia 170 ngā tāne, wāhine me ngā tamariki. I whakarautia ngā tamariki me ngā wāhine kia whai ngā tāne ki te uru ki te kōkiri a Te Kooti kia kore ngā tāne e whakanana ki te oma. I muri mai i rere te kōkiri ki roto o Waioweka ki Maraetahi he pā tawhito o Ngāti Ira. I mua i te wehenga o Te Kooti i Maraetahi ki roto o Tūhoe i whakahaungia e ia te iwi ki te whakatō māra mō tana hokinga ki Maraetahi. I te hokinga atu anā te nunui o ngā māra rīwai, ngā māra kānga e hia eka kua reri kē mā Te Kooti me tana iwi.

I whakatūngia anōtia e Ngāti Ira he whare rūnanga mō Te Kooti 84 pūtu te roa me 30 pūtu te whānui me ētahi atu whare 42 te katoa. I whakatūngia anōtia he whare motuhake mō Te Kooti kia noho wehe ia i tana iwi ko Taramu te ingoa o taua whare.

Nō te 21 o Maehe i tae a Rāpata Wahawaha ki Ōpōtiki i reira hoki a Te Keepa Rangihwinui me Tōpia Tūroa me te Whanganui Rangers. I takahia haeretia e ngā rangatira o Whanganui te riu ki Ōtara me Tūtaetoko. Kua tae ake ki te whai i a Te Whakatōhea kāore anō kia tuku i raro i te mana o Kuini Wikitōria mai i ngā pakanga whenua, ko Hira Te Popo mā me tana iwi o Ngāti Ira.

On the 25th instant Rōpata attacked Maraetahi under the impression that there were only Whakatōhea there. From the slight resistance offered, it was not guessed Te Kooti was present. After an hour's firing the pā was abandoned, the fugitives from it falling into the hands of Kemp [Te Keepa Te Rangihwinui], who was marching down, after taking prisoners all the Whakatohea up river (Binney, 1995. p. 214).

I rere a Te Kooti, Hira Te Popo me Rakuraku o Te Waimana Kaaku Tūhoe me ngā tāngata rua tekau, Binney (1995).

Ko tā rātou waiata i ngā pakanga ko te **Waiata a Rāwiri 46** Binney (1995).

*Ko te Atua tō tātou piringa me tō tātou kaha, he kaiāwhina e tino tata ana i ngā wā o te hē ... Mā konei rā tātou ka kore ai e wehi, ahakoa nekehia te whenua, ahakoa kahakina ngā maunga ki waenga moana. Ahakoa rara, taupatupatu noa ōna wai, ahakoa wiri ngā maunga i ōna huamotanga. Tēnā te awa, ko ōna manga hai whakahari i te pā o te Atua i te wāhi tapu o ngā tāpenakara o te Runga Rawa. Kai waenganui ōna te Atua, e kore ia e nekehia mā te Atua ia e āwhina i te putanga mai anō o te ata. I nana ngā tauīwi, i nekehia ngā rangatiratanga; ka puaki tōna reo, rewa ana te whenua. Kai a tātou a Ihowā o ngā mano ko te Atua o Hākopa tō tātou piringa ... Haere mai, tirohia ngā mahi a Ihowā, ngā whakangaromanga i whakaputa mai e ia ki te whenua. E whakamutua ana e ia ngā whāinga o te pito rā anō o te whenua: ka whati ana i a ia te kōpere, poro pū i a ia te tao ... tahuna ake e te hāriata ki te kāpura. Kia āta noho, ā kia mātau ko ahau anō te Atua; e whakanui ahau i waenganui i ngā tauīwi, whakanuia ahau i te whenua ... Kai a tātou a Ihowā o ngā mano ko te Atua o Hākopa tō tātou piringa.*

I te rerenga a Te Kooti i Maraetahi i titoa e ia tēnei waiata:

*E 'ha te pūtake  
Te Kooti e whaiwhaitia nei?  
Ana kai Waikato  
Te pūtake e hū ae!*

*E toru tekau tonu  
He waki nei te puihi  
Te kai pupuri rā  
I a Kēnana e hū ae!*

Ko tana tangi tēnei, e whiu tonu nei tana pātai he aha koia te whai tonu nei i a ia? Hai tāna i roto i te waiata nei ahakoa ia tae ki hea, ka whāia tonutia ia e te hoariri ki te hopu i a ia, ki te patu rānei i a ia kia mate. Ko hea te mutunga mōna, ko tōna hoputanga rānei, ko tōna matenga rānei? Kua mahue mai ko ia me te tokoiti ki te takahi i te puihi ki te kimi i te oranga mōna me tōna iwi Mōrehu.

Immediately after the fall of Maraetahi, the intense pressure on both Tuhoe and Whakatohea was renewed in a bid to force those groups who might still give Te Kooti sanctuary to surrender. Among Whakatōhea the main objective was to persuade Hira Te Popo and those with him to come in.

On 17 June, ‘Hira Te Popo and the greater portion of his hapu (Ngati Ira), viz., thirteen men, eleven women and ten children, making a total of thirty-four, submitted’ at Opotiki (Binney, 1995. p. 223).

Ko te kupu tēnei a Hira Te Popo ki a Rāpata Wahawaha: Ka hua hoki māua kai reirá te ora mō te iwi kāore ko te mate kai reirá... Ka mea ko te take i wehe ai mātou kua mutu te whakaaro o Te Kooti ki te whakahau ki ngā tāngata he mōhio nōna kua hē ana ritenga kua omaoma noa hoki ngā tāngata i runga i a Tera mō te hē o tōna mahi... Ka mea mai he matemate nō ngā tāngata, he omaoma ka rua. Ko tōna kī hoki mā tōna Atua noa e whakamate te tangata. Kātahi mātou ka tatari kia whakamatea ngā ope e tōna Atua. Ehara kua teka ko mātou anake e mate ana ko te Kāwanatanga ko ngā tāngata i kīa ai e tērā kia mate kīhai i mate arā te Kāwanatanga nō reira mātou ka mea, ka haere tātou ki waho noho tātou mō te mate haere mō te mate (Binney, 1995).

Ko te mutunga tēnei o ngā pakanga a Te Whakatōhea ki te Kāwanatanga i raro i a Te Kooti. I rongō a Te Whakatōhea i te ngaunga nunuitanga a te Kāwanatanga ki a ia mai i rā anō i te pakanga whenua, i te patunga i a Te Wākanga me te rironga o te whenua i te raupatu. I tahuri a Te Whakatōhea ki te tāwharau i a Te Kooti, engari i te mutunga i rongō tino nui anō i te ngaunga nunui a te Kāwanatanga. Although some of Ngāti Ira joined Te Kooti’s fighting force, Hira Te Popo did not take up arms himself. By June 1870 most of Ngati Ira were already in Ōpōtiki, and Hira Te Popo and the last of his men came in and submitted to the government (White, 1993).

Nā konei i tuku a Ngāti Ira i raro i a Hira Te Popo, e rima tau i roto i te koraha anā koianā te mutunga o te rīri o Te Whakatōhea ki te Kāwanatanga.

### **4.3.3 Nā Te Rongopai**

Ahako te tāwharau i a Te Kooti, ahako te pakanga me Te Kooti ki te Kāwanatanga, ahako te pakanga a Te Whakatōhea me te Kāwanatanga ki a Te Kooti, ahako te whakaekea o Te Whakatōhea e Te Kooti, ahako te tuku a Te Whakatōhea i ana pū me te mutu i tana noho ki te taumata riri o Te Kooti i tahuri nui a Te Whakatōhea ki te whakapono o Te Kooti, ki Te Hāhi Ringatū i noho pūmau rātou ki raro i te maru poropiti o Te Kooti, ā koia hai Matua tangata mō Te Whakatōhea. Ko ana kupu Whakaari, ana mōteatea me te tūāpapa o tana whakapono te waka, i ūhia ai ō Te Whakatōhea tūmanako ki runga. Ko Te Whakatōhea i raupatutia ai ana whenua, i ngā riri whenua, he harakore hoki nōna. Ko Te Kooti me Te Ringatū i ara mai i ngā

riri whenua, anā i raupatutia ai ana whenua, ā, he harakore hoki nōna. Ko rāua, rāua kotahi tonu te whakapapa, mana Māori motuhake.

Nō te nohoranga o Te Kooti ki roto o Maniapoto 1872 – 1883 i tau ai te puehu i waenganui i a Te Kooti me te Kāwanatanga, i tū te tatau pounamu. Anā ko Te Maungārongo tērā nō te 12 o Pēpuere 1883 i unuhia e te Kāwanatanga ngā hara i runga i a Te Kooti. Ko tā Te Kooti mau ki Te Maungārongo mō ake, ake.

I taua wā anō i hora whānui tōna whakapono ki te motu mai runga ki raro. Once he was free to move, after his pardon in 1883, the Ra of January and July would generally be called for by other communities who had adopted the faith. This practise of passing the Ra from community to community began to spread (Binney, 1995. p. 288). I takahia e Te Kooti te whenua ki te kauhau i te rongopai kia mau ai ki te maungārongo, ā ki te tūhonohono anō ai i ngā whānau, ngā hāpu, ngā iwi rātou i tautoko i a ia me te whakarere i a ia, kia tau anō te maungārongo ki waenganui i ngā iwi i whai i a ia, arā pakanga. This was the purpose of his journeys— both to renew the bonds and to attempt a reconciliation with those who fought against him (Binney, 1995. pp. 319-320).

Ka kupu whakaaritia tēnei āhuatanga i āna waiata i titoa ki te hohou i te rongomau taketake ki a Ngāti Whakaue, Ngāti Kahungunu, he iwi whai i a ia ki te pakanga.

### **26 Tīhema 1883 ki Tiki ki Ōhinemutu:**

*Kauaka range au e ngurunguru mai waihoki range au kia haramai ana hai piharoa he torotoro taua me Ngāti Kahungunu ki te pūtahitanga, hai whakaahuru mai mō te manu a Tiki huia mai tātou kia kotahi te moenga e.*

### **1 Hānuere 1884 ki Te Whāiti:**

*E riri ana a Tū rāua ko Rongo ki tā rāua nā māra. Koia a Pohutukawa, ka patua tētahi, koia moenga kura ka patua tētahi moenga toto rāua anā ka hē i te riri ka tīkina mai ki waho rā ki a Marere-ō-Tonga ki a Tumu-Whakairia e ora ana te wānanga mauria mai nei ko te rongo ā whare, ko te rongo taketake ki mua ki te Atua, ka whakahotu i te riri e.*

I tukuna e Te Kooti āna tāngata ki te whenua ki te kauhau i te whakapono hou ki ngā iwi katoa. Kua takahi haere ngā tīpuna, ngā whānau, ngā hāpu, ngā iwi i ngā rori ki te kimi i te mea ngaro i a Te Kooti. Ko te mahi a te tangata e whai wāhi atu ana ki a ia ki roto o Maniapoto ki te tiki i te whakapono. Similarly, elders from communities along the East Coast rode to Te Kuiti on all manner of missions. They travelled on horseback over long roads to learn the teachings for the

Morehu. They brought the word back to their own settlements (Binney, 1995. p. 301). I konei i tahuri ngā iwi ki te whakapono hou o Te Ringatū me te poropiti i a Te Kooti. The religion had been widely adopted by Whakatohea, Tuhoe and Ngai Te Rangi of Tauranga (Binney, 1995. p. 296). I haere hoki ngā iwi ki te whakaora tūroro. He became known as a ‘miracle worker’, and the numerous pilgrimages to Te Kuiti by people who were sick drew comment from 1877. The people came mostly from Urewera, Wairoa, Poverty Bay and the Bay of Plenty (Binney, 1995. p. 300).

He mahi mai i tawhiti anō hoki tāna, ka tukuna atu he kapa ki a Te Kooti, i karakiatia te kapa e Te Kooti, ānō ko te tūroro tonu tērā, ko te tangata hara, raruraru tonu tērā. Ae ko te ariā tērā. I whakapāpā haere te kapa ki te tinana o te tangata, anā i tukuna hai mahitanga mā Te Kooti. Anā, mea rawa ake kua ora mai anō te tūroro. Kai te mau tonu tērā tikanga ki roto i ngā whakahaere a Te Ringatū. Kua haere atu te tangata ki ngā Rā, anā kua haria atu te koha (kapa) ki te tohunga, kua mahia mai e te tohunga taua koha hai whakawātea i te whare, i te whenua, hai whakaora i te tūroro, hai tiaki rānei i te tangata nāna te koha, tērā pea kua haere ki tāwāhi, he tono mahi rānei, arā noa atu ngā kaupapa. Engari ko taua tikanga o te koha kai te mau tonu i ngā Ringatū.

One of Te Kooti’s main advisers and negotiators was Hoani Poruru. He too had been convicted for the murder of Fulloon and later released, and had lived at te Kuiti under Rewi’s patronage. Poururu had become a prominent figure in that community in the late 1870s, and he acted as Te Kooti’s main emissary to the eastern Bay of Plenty. It was he who helped develop Otamauru as a Ringatū centre for the district. Not only were many of Ngati Awa and Whakatohea now converts to the faith: Matata and Maketu, both largely Te Arawa communities and former centres of opposition to Te Kooti, adopted the rituals in 1885 (Binney. 1995. p. 339).

I hau te rongō o Te Kooti i ngā hāerere o te iwi ki te whai i a ia, i ō Te Kooti hoki haererenga ki roto i ngā iwi ki te tā i te kawa o ngā whare i whakatūngia mō Te Kotahitanga, i whakatūngia mōna mō Te Kooti tonu, mō tana whakapono Ringatū tonu. Ko ngā whare rānei i kuhu ki raro i Te Kotahitanga ahakoa kīhai i taea e Te Kooti te kawa te tā. He maha ēnei whare o Te Kotahitanga nui ake i te rua tekau. The large meeting-house Takitimu (which the resident magistrates reports indicate was being worked on as early as 1880 and which was finally opened by Te Kooti on 1 January 1891), was modelled on Tokanganui-a-Noho. Its carvers were sent by Te Kooti and included Ngati Porou men from Turanga (and probably also from Mataora). This house was listed by Matiu as part of expanding Te Kotahitanga ‘concerning God’s Words’; it was the 19th and last house in his dated list (although not of course the last house built) (Binney, 1995. p. 298).

Ko tēnei Kotahitanga ko te kotahitanga, ki raro i tēnei whakapono o Te Ringatū ki raro i a Ihowā te Atua Ora o Ngā Mano, koinei tēnei kotahitanga. Ko tēnei Kotahitanga he whakarauora i ngā iwi i te waha i ngā pīkaunga taumaha i pēhia kinotia rātou, i ngā mahi raupatu, i ngā mahi a te Kāwanatanga, āna ture. Ko tēnei Kotahitanga ko te pupuri kite mana Māori motuhake i raro i a Ihowā te Atua Ora o Ngā Mano. He mea tango mai tēnei i ngā karaipiture; **Epeha 4: 3** *Me whai kia mau te kotahitanga o te wairua he mea paihere nā te rangimārie.* Koiane tēnei Kotahitanga. Tērā te whare o te Whānau-a-Apanui ko Te Poho-o-Apanui i tonoa a Te Kooti ki te tā i tōna kawa ki raro i Te Kotahitanga. E kī ana te kōrero a Mōnita Delamere ko tēnā haramai a Te Kooti he mea nui te tonono mai a Te Whānau-a-Apanui nā te mea koirā te tuatahi o ngā iwi o te Tairāwhiti te tahuri mai ki te whai i a Te Kooti; koinā e whakapuaki ana i te kupu ki tana waiata; *“E pā tō reo e te Tairāwhiti e pākatokato an ate aroha i ahau.”* Anā i pākatokato te aroha i roto i a ia nā te mea ka aua atu ia e kōingo ana ki te hoki ki Tūranga, engari he aha te aha, kīhai ngā iwi me ngā Pākehā o Tūranga i whakaae. He matakū nō rātou koi hiki anō i te riri. Anā he iwi whai anō hoki a Te Whānau-a-Apanui i a ia i raro i a Major Maaka Te Ehutu. Arā te taha rāwhiti o Te Whānau-a-Apanui, engari te taha ki te rātō i raupatutia te whenua mai i te awa o Te Hāparapara o Te Whānau-a-Apanui i te patunga i a Te Wākana. Anā e kīa ana i runga ake nā, ko te whai hoki tērā i te Kotahitanga.

At Opotiki a local constable described the party’s ride through the town. He explained why he has sent a telegram before his written report he feared that the press would give an exaggerated account of the affair. He reported instead the ‘orderly’ ride of over 500 people through the main street in the middle of the morning of 27 June. They passed in formation of about six abreast, led by the Waiotahe community, consisting presumably of Reihana and the other exiles from Wairoa, who were living there. Te Kooti and those who had come from Waikato rode after, the main body followed in turn. They were all local people from the surrounding communities of Te Whanau-a-Apanui and Whakatohea, many of whom Te Kooti had once taken as prisoners (Binney, 1995. p. 366).

This Rā at Maraenui was the first major inter-tribal gathering held for Te Kooti; moreover, it had been summoned by people who once opposed him (Binney. 1995. p.367).

Ka kite i konei ahakoa i whakarērea a Te Kooti e ngā iwi i te pae o te riri, ko te Kotahitanga i raro i Te Ringatū i te maru o Ihowā kua whāia rawatia a Te Kooti hai Matua tangata mō ngā iwi. Ko te whakapono te huarahi kia puta mai rātou i te pōuri ki te māramatanga tā rātou i whai ko te waka whakaora wairua, whakaora anō i ngā iwi i ngā pīkaunga taumaha e pehi tonu nei.

Nō muri i te Rā ki Maraenui te Tahī o Hūrae 1887 i karangatia e Hira Te Popo te Tahī o Hūrae 1888 ki Waioweka ki te tā i te kawa o whare whakairo o Tānewhirinaki. I whakatūngia a Tānewhirinaki hai whare mō Te Kotahitanga ki runga o Ōpekerau te marae o Waioweka. Ko te ingoa o te whare he ingoa tipuna tonu, ko Tānewhirinaki tētahi o ngā tama tokorua a Muriwai i toromi ki Whakatāne, ko Koau anō tērā atu. Nā konei i whakatapua e Muriwai te moana; Mai i Ngā Kurī a Whārei ki Tihirau, ko te rohe tēnā o Mātaatua.

He whare whakairo nui a Tānewhirinaki e 50 pūtu te roa. Ko te poumua ko Tānewhirinaki tonu, ko te poutokomanawa ko Muriwai kua tāngia tōna kanohi ki te moko a te tāne, arā ki te rangipāruhi, kua pūhoro anō ōna waewae ki te tourape kua mau anō ki te tātua taua. He tohu ki tana mana me tana whakatāne anō i a ia i te ūnga mai o Mātaatua. Nā ngā hapū katoa o Te Whakatōhea i hanga a Tānewhirinaki, i hangaia ki te tauira o te whare mātāmua o Te Kooti ki a Te Tokanganui-ā-noho ki Te Kuiti. Nō ngā hapū katoa o Te Whakatōhea a Tānewhirinaki. All the sub-tribes of Whakatōhea helped in its building, it was a massive undertaking for a people that had been reduced to extreme poverty (Howe, 1984, p. 12).

I huihuia mai ngā iwi Mōrehu me ngā iwi o te motu ko Ngāti Awa, ko Tūhoe, ko Te Aitanga a Māhaki, ko Ngāti Kahungunu me te kotahi rau o Te Whānau-a-Apanui. Huiā katoatia e rima rau i tae ki Waioweka i te 24 o Hune mō te Rā. Ko tō Te Whakatōhea he rima rau anō i pōhiri i ngā iwi. E ai ki te kōrero a ngā kaumātua he whare tino tapu rawa a Tānewhirinaki. Tuatahi i tapu nā tōna ingoa tonu, tuarua tēnei whare he whare wānanga mō ngā tohunga anake. He tāne anake i āhei ki te kuhu ki roto. He mea kuhu kore kaka, kiritahanga ki roto. He whare mō te karakia anake. Koinei te kaha nui o te tapu o Tānewhirinake. Ko te Kupu Whakaari a Te Kooti mō Tānewhirinaki:

### ***1 Hūrae 1888 ki Ōpeke, Waioweka***

*Ka mea a Te Kooti: Ko te kupu tēnei i tēnei rā mō tēnei whare. Tēnei ake ngā rā, kai te haere mai, ka pokapoka ia tēnei whare e te kiore, kia pūareare, ā ka puare. Ka pokaia mai hoki e ngā kiore i te tūārongo puta rawa ake i te kuaha. Ka rere mai te kāhu, ka titiro, ā ka kite i ngā kiore e karikari ana i tēnei whare, i tēnei wāhi, ka hiahia ki te hopu; kia mau aua kiore. Ka mea te kāhu ki te hiahia ki te hopu, ā heoi ka rērere mai tē kāhu ki tēnei wāhi ki te tiro tiro.*

Ko te whakamāori o te kupu whakaari nei; ko ngā kiore ko ngā karaiti teka me ngā poropiti teka ērā. Arā ko rātou ka tū mai kia riro i a rātou te mana poropiti o Te Kooti. Ka pakaru te whakapono. I poropititia ai e Te Kooti te tama māna te iwi e ārahi nō roto mai o Te Tairāwhiti ki te rohe o Mātaatua.

Nō te 26 Hune 1885 i puta te kupu whakaari nei:

*Ko ngā whetū e rua kai te tū tonu rāua. Tō te rāwhiti me tō te rātō. E rua rāua kai te tū katoa ināianei mai o mua 1880 e haere nei.*

*Ko te tamaiti ka puta ake ki te rāwhiti Mai i Ngā Kurī-a-Whārei ki Tihirau ka mutu kai konā te tangata mō tātou.*

I puta anō tēnei mō tana tamaiti:

*He tamaiti pai, he tamaiti ngāwari ka puta i te rohe o Mātaatua; Mai i Ngā Kurī-a-Whārei ki Tihirau. He tamaiti nui atu tōna mana. Ahakoa e rua, e toru e whā aku waewae, ka haere mai ahau ka koropiko ahau ki raro ki ōna waewae.*

Nō te 1 o Hūrae 1892 ki Hokianga ki roto o Ōhiwa i puta anō i a ia te kupu whakaari mō te tamaiti o te kupu whakaari.

*Tūori Wāri Ēta:*

Kotahi kapua nui kai te rangi tōna korōria mau tonu.

1. Ā ka puta mai he reo i te kapua e mea ana: *Ko taku Tama tēnei i aroha ai whakarongo ki a ia. Māka 9: 7, Matiu 17: 5, Ruka 9: 34, 35.*
2. *He Atua tohu hoki a Ihowā tōu Atua e kore ia e whakarere i a koe, e kore anō hoki e whakangaro i a koe, e kore hoki e wareware ki te kawenata ki ōu mātua, i oati ai rātou ki a ia. Tiu 4: 31.*

E kīa ai te kōrero a Te Kooti ko te kiore ko ngā mana o ngā momo poropiti teka i tū mai ki te kerēme i te mana poropiti o Te Kooti me te kerēme koia te tamaiti a Te Kooti. Ko Rua Kēnana tērā, ko Wi Raepuku tērā o Whanganui, ko Wi Wereta tērā o Tokomaru, ko Tūtekohe tērā o Uawa. Te maha o rātou. Te Kooti had foreseen the likelihood of such division. His often told prediction concerning the meeting-house Tanewhirinaki at Waioweka, gnawed by rats from its rear (Binney. 1995. p. 516). E ai ki te kōrero nā Te Rua i whakararuru Te Hāhi Ringatū i pakarū te whakapono ki runga o Tānewhirinaki. I pau katoa tērā wehenga o Te Whakatōhea a Ngāti Ira ki raro i a Te Rua ka whakarērea Te Hāhi Ringatū ka pau atu ki raro i a Te Rua me Ngā Īharaira. E kī mai a Te Wairēmana Taia ka pau ki raro i a Te Rua ka pakarū te whakapono o Te Ringatū i konā, te whakapono i tūtia ai a Tānewhirinaki. Ka panaia atu e te peka o Te

Whakatōhea a Ngāti Ira mō te rua tekaumārīma tau i ngā rauna a Te Hāhi ki roto o Te Whakatōhea. Ka tapaina te hapū ki te ingoa ko Ngāti Pau (pau te hau).

Nō ngā tau o te 1930 i whakahoutia a Tānewhirinaki. Nō te whakatūtanga anō i pūhia te hau i taka te poutāhuhu. Ka tonu a Tā Apirana Ngata me tiki atu he Pākehā māna e whakatū a Tānewhirinaki, ka kore pea e āhai te tapu o Tānewhirinaki ki te Pākehā hangā whare. Ana ka whakanana. Sir Apirana Ngata advised the people to get a Pakeha to build the house as probably the tapu would not affect him. This was tried—we think ten years ago—but the wind came and blew down the framework before much progress was made (Fowler, 1957, p. 20). Ko te tuatorutanga, ko te pūhiatanga anō e te hau ka taka ko te poutāhuhu o Tānewhirinaki, ka whati. Anā i waiho te whare kīhai i whakatūngia anō he tapu, tapu rawa nō te Tānewhirinaki.

Anā, ko te whakatinanatanga o te kupu whakaari a Te Kooti mō Tānewhirinaki me te kiore. Ko te kāhu ko Te Atua e titiro ana ki tana whare tapu e takatakahia ana tōna tapu. Kia mārama anō hoki i te wā o te aranga mai o Te Rua kua mate noa atu te rangatira a Hira Te Popo, kua kore tērā momo rangatira, kaiārahi. Nō te Ōketopa o te tau 1889 i mate ai Hira Te Popo e whā tau i mua i te matenga o tana poropiti me tana hoa piripono pūmau a Te Kooti.



Whakaahua 2: Ko te tohu whakamaumaharatanga ki a Hira Te Popo at Ōpekerau Marae, Waioweka Pā, Ōpōtiki. Ko te whakaahua o runga ko Hira Te Popo me tana tamāhine a Te Kirihaehae Paul. Ki te taha mauī e noho ana, ko Te Rua-hōhonu Roger Rakuraku he uri nō Hira Te Popo. Ki te aha matau e noho ana, ko Hōhipera (Bella) Williams he mokopuna nā Hira Te Popo. Ko te mana whakaa, Roger Rakuraku.

#### 4.3.4 Nā Te Rangimārie

Ka tirohia i konei ētahi titonga a Te Kooti ki roto o Te Whakatōhea. I āna torotoronga ki roto o Te Whakatōhea kua titoa e ia he waiata, he haka rānei hai whakamaharatanga ki tētahi tūāhuatanga i pā ki a ia, he tohutohu rānei i tana iwi Ringatū. Kua kōwhiritia kia 2 ngā titonga hai titiro mai i te wā i aukatinga te hoki a Te Kooti ki roto o Tūranga.

##### 4.3.4.1 Te Pātere a Te Turuki Arikirangi

I pāteretia tēnei pātere e Te Kooti ki Ōmarumutu ki roto o Te Whakatōhea. Ahakoa i unuhia e te Kāwanatanga ngā hara ki runga i a ia, kāhore tonu ngā iwi o Tūranga i whakaae kia hoki ia ki Tūranga ki tōna ūkaipō. I tonoa ia ki te whakatūwhera i te whare i te 12 o Maehe 1889 ki Takipū ki roto o Te Karaka ki te takiwā o Tūranga, Te Aitanga a Māhaki. Ko Takipū he whakamaharatanga ki ngā takinga pū a te Kāwanatanga, arā i pūputu ngā pū ki reira. Ko te ingoa o te whare ko Te Poho-o-Pikihoro. I te taenga o Te Kooti ki Ōmarumutu ka noho ka moe iho te pō ki roto o Te Whakatōhea. Aoiaake ka hanatū ka haere ka tae ki te Toatoa ki te tuawhenua o Te Whakatōhea ki Matawai ka aukatingia tana haere e te Kāwanatanga e ngā Pākehā o Tūranga me Wī Pere rangatira o Te Aitanga-ā-Māhaki. He matakū nō rātou koi tutū anō i a ia te pūehu. Ko tana hokinga tērā ki Ōmarumutu. Nō te 24 o Pēpuere o 1889 ka whakaae a Te Kooti kia kaua ia e hanatū ki Tūranga ka titoa tēnei pātere āna. He tangi ki a ia me te āhua o tana noho, he tangi kōingo ki tana kāinga. Ka puta i a ia te kupu whakaari; *“Tūranga whenua e kitea, Tūranga tangata e kore e kitea.”* Ko te tikanga o taua kupu whakaari; i te mōhio tonu ia i konā, e kore anō ia e kite i tana iwi o Tūranga i te wā o te ora, engari ka kite tonu ia i tōna ūkaipō mehemea i rō waka paparākau i te wā o te mate.

I whakarite a Te Kooti i a ia anō ki te manu nei, ki te mātuhi. He manu kua kore i ēnei rā. He manu tino moroitī rawa. He manu matakū ka huna i roto i ngā ururua. Kīhai i tawhiti i tana haumarutanga, arā te ururua; kīhai hoki tana rērere i tawhiti i te whenua i ngā wā katoa e rua, e toru pūtu noa iho te teitei. Engari ko tana tioro he kaha, he whakamaurihooho i ana hoariri. Ae he maha ērā; ngā hoariri o Te Kooti. They never stray more than a few yards from the tangle where safety lies (New Zealand Birds, 2014). Nō reira ki te titiro ake ko Te Kooti tērā, ko tōna wāhi haumarutanga ko te ururua, he maha ōna hoariri i pīrangi ki te whakamate i a ia. I tēnei haerenga āna he nui ōna māharahara, ōna mānukanuka, ahakoa kua unuhia tōna hara i te tau 1883, kai takahia e te Kāwanatanga te maungārongo i waenganui i a rāua. Ko te waiata nei he tangi ki te whakarauora anō i a ia.

*Kāhore aku māharahara, aku mānukanuka  
Ki aku tini mahara e pupū ake i roto i te hinengaro ...  
Kāhore hoki e taea te pēhi ki roto rā i a ia ...  
Me pani atu ki te tini, ki te mano, ki te rau e pae nei e... E hoa mā e ...  
Kātahi au a Tama Rangi, ka koakoa ki te titotito ki te hangarau e ...<sup>52</sup>*

*Pere taku pere ki te Tairāwhiti ki a Hinematioero e kui mā e ...  
Tēnei au kai te kimi ake, kai te wauwau ake i roto i te ururua...  
Kia kite atu au i te mārāma mai o te ata, kia kite atu au i ngā hihī o te rā,  
Kia pā mai te mahanatanga ki te tau o taku ate,  
Kua papa piritia i te awhitanga mai a te mātaotao e kui mā e ...  
Kia tahuri mai te taringa ki te whakarongo ki te tangi a te Mātūhi,  
E tangi nei e ... tuia tuia tuituia ...<sup>53</sup>  
Pere taku pere ki te tihi o Hikurangi e hoa mā e ...  
Kia tahuri mai te taringa ki te tangi a te Mātūhi,  
E tangi nei e ... tuia tuia tuituia ...*

*Pere taku pere ki Te Taitokerau ki te Tiriti o Waitangi, kia mahara mai e ...  
Ko ngā purapura ēnei i whiua mai e Pōtatau ki Te Ūpoko o Te Ika,  
Kia mahara mai e ...  
Kia tahuri mai te taringa ki te whakarongo ki te tangi a te Mātūhi,  
E tangi nei e ... tuia tuia tuituia ...<sup>54</sup>*

#### **4.3.4.2 He Haka**

He haka tēnei i titoa e Te Kooti i te 27 o Pēpuere ki Waioweka 1889. I te aukatitanga i a ia Ōmarumutu i tana hokinga ki Waikato i peka kē a Te Kooti kia kite i tana hoa a Hira Te Popo

---

<sup>52</sup> Kai tēnei whiti kai te whakaatu i te nui o te māharahara, mānukanuka e pupū ake ana i roto o Te Kooti tē taea te pēhi nā te mea ahakoa kua unuhia ōna hara kīhai ia i wātea ki te hoki ki Tūranga, ko ngā mahi tito, hangarau a te Kāwanatanga i a ia.

<sup>53</sup> Ko te whiti tuarua me te whiti tuatoru e whakapae ana ia ko ngā whakawhiu a Ngāti Porou e aukati ana i tana hoki ki Tūranga. Anā ko tāna mahi he kōpikopiko i roto i te puihi ki te kimi huarahi e taea ai e ia a Tūranga, ānō ko te Mātūhi. Ko tana pīrangi kia kite ia i te uranga mai o te rā, kia kite ia i ngā hihī o te rā kia rongō i te mahana o te rā. He kupu whakarite katoa ēnei ki te Tairāwhiti tōna ūkaipō. Engari ko tāna he mau tata ki te māku me te mātaotao o te papa anō ko te Mātūhi.

<sup>54</sup> Ko te whiti tuawhā e whakahau ana it e Kāwanatanga ki te whakamana i te Tiriti o Waitangi me te mana Māori motuhake i raro i te maru o Te Kīngitanga e aro ana i te Pāremata. Me tana whakahau i ngā iwi kia whakakotahi i raro i te maru o Ihowā te Atua Ora o Ngā Mano.

ki te kimi āwhina i te 24 o Pēpuere. Ko te kupu a Hira ki a ia Te Kooti me hoki ki Waikato; “*kotahi noa te mautanga o taku kakī ki te kareao.*” Ko te tikanga o tērā kupu a Hira Te Popo e pēnei ana; e kore anō ia e tū te puehu anō ki te Kāwanatanga, kua pōtautau nuitia tana hapū a Ngāti Ira, me tana iwi a Te Whakatōhea. Ka noho a Te Kooti me tana iwi Ringatū ki Waioweka mō te wā. He kōingo nōna kia tae ki Tūranga.

I whakatakoto tikanga a Te Kooti me whakanana tonu kia tae ia me tana iwi Ringatū ki Tūranga ki te whakatūwheratanga o Te Poho-o-Pikihoro. Ko tāna tika kia tau ai te rīriri o ngā hōia me ngā Pākehā i te tūtakitanga ki a ia me tana iwi Ringatū i ngā kati i meatia e Te Kooti ko ngā wāhine me ngā tamariki ki mua, ko ngā tohunga ki muri, ko ngā toa ki muri rā anō. Anā, ki te tūtaki ngā hōia ki ngā wāhine tuatahi me ngā tamariki tuatahi mai kore e tau ai he rangimārie. Aoinaake i te ata o te 27 i hopukina te ope 400 o Te Kooti e ngā hōia i waho i te pā o Waioweka. I mauhereheretia rātou katoa ki ngā iari kararehe (Ōpōtiki Saleyards) ki Ōpōtiki anō he kararehe. Engari a Te Kooti kāore i mau nō taua pō o mua atu i rere ia ki Waiotahe ki ōna whanaunga o te Wairoa e noho ana i reira a Reihana mā te iwi o Te Waru Tamatea.

I roto i te haka ka wero ia i te mana o Te Kuini ahakoa i unuhia ngā whiu ki runga ki a ia, kāore tonu ia i te wātea ki te noho ki tōna anō ao ki te mahi i tāna i pai ai, i pīrangi ai. I te wero ia i te pono o ngā pere a ērā o ngā whakapono, inarā Te Hāhi Mihingare. Ko Mita Rēnata ko Mister Leonard ko te ingoa kārangaranga tērā o te tama a te Pīhopa Wiremu Wiremu, ko Rēnata Wiremu (Leonard Williams). Ko Mita Rēnata te Pīhopa o Waiapu i te wā i a Te Kooti. E whakahau ana a Te Kooti i roto i tana haka nei koia, ko Te Kooti tonu te oranga mō te iwi Māori i roto i te Kotahitanga o te wairua i raro i te maru o Ihowā te Atua Ora o Ngā Mano. Ko te pūtakenga o tēnei haka he riri ki te Kāwanatanga mō tāna kore e ū ki te maungārongo i tau ai i te kootitanga o 1883 i te unuhanga o ngā hara ki runga ki a ia.

*Pakia, pakia, pakia kia rite.*

*I ringa i torona kai waho, mau tonu.*

*I uma tīraha.*

*Hikohiko te uira papā te whatitiri.*

*Whakahekeheke ana mai i runga o Tūranga rā e.*

*E i aha tērā?*

*Ko te mana o Kuini pea? E awhi ana i te tikanga.*

*Ka korikori te ture whakarunga i auē.*

*Ui atu ki a Mita Rēnata.*

*Nō wai tērā pere?*

*Hai aha tērā pere.*  
*Kai te kimi tonu ake te oranga mō te iwi Māori e.*  
*Kai runga rānei?*  
*Kai raro rānei?*  
*Kai kō rānei?*  
*Anei ake rānei!*  
*Hī auē. Hī.*

I roto i ngā titonga e rua nei ka kitea ake ko tā Te Kooti kimi i te oranga mōna me tana iwi Ringatū, ko ngā whakapaeteka i ūhia ki runga ki a ia ahakoa he harakore nōna. Ahakoa kua unuhia ngā hara ki runga ki a ia i te whakamau tonu te Kāwanatanga ki aua whakapaeteka. He aroha, he tangi kai roto i ēnei titonga i kōwhiritia nāna i tito ki roto o Te Whakatōhea. E rua, e rua ko te whakapapa o Te Whakatōhea me Te Ringatū e noho whenua kore ana, e wero ana i te Kāwanatanga mo te mana Māori motuhake.

Ko Ōmarumutu me Waioweka ētahi pā nui, hapū nui o Te Whakatōhea i tahuri ki te whakaponu o Te Kooti. Auau ai te hokihokinga o Te Kooti ki ēnei pā i te mōhiotanga ōna ko reira he haumarutanga mōna he rite tā Te Whakatōhea ki a ia he rapu i te mea ngaro hai oranga mō te tangata, mō te iwi, mō te katoa i raro i te maru o Ihowā te Atua Ora o Ngā Mano. Ko te whawhai kia mau tonu ai ko tōna tuakiri o Te Whakatōhea me āna tikanga ki roto i Te Hāhi Ringatū.

#### **4.3.4.3 Te Herenga o Te Rā**

Nōna i Te Kuiti e noho ana ka whakakaupapatia e Te Kooti te whare o Te Hāhi Ringatū. *Ko te koruru:* ko Ihowā te Atua ora o Ngā Mano. *Ko te tāhuhu:* ko ngā karakia. E whā ngā pou o te tau e tū ai te whare o Te Hāhi Ringatū. *Ko te poumataaho:* ko te Tahī o Hānuere. *Ko te poutewharau:* ko te Tahī o Hune (Te Huamata). *Ko te poutokomanawa:* ko te Tahī o Hūrae. *Ko te potūārongo:* ko te Tahī o Nōema (Te Pure). *Ko ngā poupou:* ko ngā tekaumārua o ia marama tekaumārua o te tau. *Ko ngā heke:* ko ngā inoi. *Ko ngā tukutuku:* ko ngā hīmene, ko ngā pānui me ngā waiata o Te Hāhi Ringatū. *Ko ngā whāriki:* ko ngā takutaku. *Ko te mauri:* ko te iwi Ringatū.

Ko te Pou tuatahi i whakatūngia e Te Kooti ko te Tahī o Hānuere. I whakahaeretia tuatahitia i te Tahī o Hānuere i te tau 1875: *Ko tōna pūtaketanga nō roto mai i ngā karaipiture i a **Ekoruhe 40: 2** Hai te rā tuatahi o te marama tuatahi koe whakaara ai i te tāpenakara o te tēneti o te whakaminenga. Ko te kaupapa tapu ake o tēnei Rā ko te Kapenga i te hākari, arā ko te putanga*

mai o ngā tamariki a Īharaira i te tōka whakapononga o Ihipa i raro i te maru o Ihowā te Atua ora o Ngā Mano.

Ko tā tēnei Rā he hākari nui, he aroha nui tētahi ki tētahi, ko tāna ko te poroporoaki i te tau tawhito me te pōhiri anō i te tau hou i runga i te ngākau whakamoemiti, i runga hoki i te rīpenetā, i runga anō hoki i te tāpae i ngā tonu kia ūhia te whakaminenga ki ngā hua pai katoa i roto i te tau hou. Ko te tuku i ngā kino o te tau tawhito kia kauhā anō e whai wāhi ki te whakaminenga me te pupuri i ngā pai e hua ai ki te whakaminenga katoa.

Ko te Pou tuarua nō te tau 1879. Ko te Huamata: Ko tōna pūtaketanga nō roto mai i ngā karaipiture i a **Tiuteronomi 26: 2** Nā ka tango koe i ētahi o ngā mea mātāmua o ngā hua katoa o te whenua, e mauria mai e koe i tōu oneone, ka hōmai nei e Ihowā, e tōu Atua, ki a koe; ā me whawhao e koe ki te kete, ka haere ai ki te wahi e whiriwhiri ai a Ihowā, tōu Atua, kia waiho tōna ingoa ki reira.

Ko tā tēnei Rā he Rā whakatō kai a Te Ringatū. Ko te Rā whakahaeretia ai te Huamata kai te Tahi o Hune rānei ko te Tahi o Hūrae, arā kai ētahi iwi ka whakakotahitia te Huamata ki ngā whakahaere o te Hūrae tonu.

Ko ngā Pou tuatoru ko te Tahi o Hūrae. I whakahaeretia tuatahitia i te Tahi o Hūrae i te tau 1876: Ko tōna pūtaketanga nō roto mai i ngā karaipiture i a **Rēwetikūhā 23: 24** Kōrero ki ngā tama a Īharaira, mea atu: Hai te whitu o ngā marama, hai te tuatahi o te marama, he hāpati mā koutou, he whakamaharatanga, he whakatangihanga tētere, he huihuinga tapu. Koinei te hāpati o ngā hāpati, ko te marama tuawhito o te tau. He Rā tino tapu nui tēnei i te mea he Rā tino tapu ngā Rā hāpati a Te Ringatū. Hai ia Rāhoroi o ia wiki ngā Hāpati. Nō reira ko tēnei hāpati ko te hāpati o ngā hāpati mō te tau. He Rā whakamaharatanga ki te hanganga a Te Atua i te rangi me te whenua. He whakamaharatanga tēnei ki ngā mate o te tau. Ko tērā tikanga anō hoki o whakamaharatanga ki ngā mate kua tauiratia mai i roto i ngā tikanga mō Matariki, ko te wā tērā poroporoaki i ngā mate.

Ko te Pou tuawhā nō te tau 1879 anō hoki ko te Pure hai te Tahi o Noema, hai te Tahi o Tihema rānei kai ngā kaupeka tonu o tēnā iwi, o tēnā iwi, engari hai a Noema, hai a Tihema rānei. Ko tōna pūtaketanga nō roto mai i ngā karaipiture i a **Ekoruhe 34: 22** Me mahi anō te Hākari o Ngā Wiki, arā o ngā mātāmua o te kotinga witi, me te Hākari o te Kohikohinga i te takanga o te tau.

Ko tāna kaupapa ko te hauhaketanga i ngā kai me te hākari i ngā tūāporo ko ngā kai mātāmua ērā. Ka hiki i ngā tapu i ngā māra takiwā; ko ngā awa, te moana me te ngahere ērā me ngā māra kāinga ēra a te tangata.

Ko te Huamata me te Pure i whakakaupapatia e Te Kooti ki ngā tikanga tapu a te Māori mō te whakatō me te hauhake i ngā kai. Ko te Huamata tonu kua whakahanumitia mai ko ngā tikanga a Matariki, ko te hākari nui hai whakanui hoki i te tau hou Māori. Ko te Huamata anō hoki ki tā Te Kooti me Te Ringatū ka wehea mai ngā kai mātāmua ki a Ihowā ka rūmakitia ki te mārātapu mā Ihowā e ai ki a **Tiuteronomi 26: 2**. Ko te mārātapu he mārā tino tapu rawa atu kua wehea motuhaketia mā Ihowā. Kāore he ngakinga, kāore he aha. Ko tā ngā tohunga he whakatō me te hauhake. Ko te hauhaketanga ake ina te makuru o te kai, he nui. I pērā anō i roto i ngā tikanga a kui mā, a koro mā i te wā o ngā tīpuna. He mea wehe mai ngā mātāmua ki a Rongomātane, arā tōna mārātapu ko tōna ingoa ko Te Mārātautāne-a-Rongo (Maxwell, T. 1998, p.35). Ko ngā tikanga me ngā ritenga ko taua āhua anō ko tā te tohunga he whakatō, he hauhake. Nō te hauhaketanga ake inā te makuru anō o te kai. Tērā whakahaere i whakahaeretia i raro i te nui o te tapu.

Ko ngā Tekaumārua ko ngā Rā ēnei o ia marama tekaumārua o te tau ka tū ēnei Rā. E ai ki te kōrero he whakamaharatanga ngā Tekaumārua ki te rā i whakawhiwhia ki a Te Kooti te kawenata a Te Atua me ngā kupu whakaari katoa mō Aotearoa nōna i te wharepononga i Wharekauri ko te 12 o Mei 1868. Ko tō rātou ko Ngā Mōrehu ūnga atu ki Whareongaonga i te 11 o Hūrae 1868 me te hākari i te kapenga me te tahunga tinana ki Whareongaonga i te 12 o Hūrae. Koiarā te Tekaumārua tuatahi i whakahaeretia ki Whareongaonga. Ko te whakamaharatanga ki te rā hoki i unuhia e te Kāwanatanga ngā hara i runga i a Te Kooti ko te 12 o Pēpuere 1883 tērā. Arā kē noa atu ngā tikanga o te Tekaumārua; ko ngā iwi Tekaumārua a Īharaira, ko ngā hua Tekaumārua nō te rākau o te ora i Ērena, ko ngā Āpōtoro Tewkaumārua a te Tama a Te Atua. Ka hoki anō ki te ao Māori ki ngā Rangi Tekaumārua o te Māori.

Ka kīa ngā rohe Ringatū he peka. Ko ngā peka ko Te Whakatōhea, ko Tūhoe ki uta, ko Tūhoe ki tai, ko Ngāti Awa, ko Te Whānau-a-Apanui, ko Te Tairāwhiti (Te Aitanga-a-Mahaki, Ngā Ariki, Ngāi Tāmanuhiri, ko Kahungunu, ko Ngāti Porou), ko Te Wairua-Tapu he hāhi motuhake tēnei, engari he Ringatū engari i heipū he raruraru ka tū mai ko Te Wairua-Tapu (Te Aitanga-a-Mahaki, Ngā Ariki, Ngāi Tāmanuhiri, ko Kahungunu), ko Te Whānau-pani he peka tēnei kai roto o Ngāti Awa ki Taiwhakaea, ki Te Teko hoki ki Kōkōhīnau, ki Hāhuru (Tūwharetoa ki Kawerau), ko Te Hāhi o Te Kooti Arikirangi ki roto o Te Māpou tēnei ki Ngāti Hāmua ki roto o Te Teko. Ka kīa he peka, anō Te Ringatū he rākau nō te whakapono, ko te rākau o te ora.

He Ringatū katoa ngā marae katoa o Te Whakatōhea, atu i a Waiāua he marae Katorika tērā kai reira e tū ana te wharekarakia Katorika. Ahakoa tēnā ka whakahaere tonutia ngā karakia

Ringatū ki reira, kua ko ngā Rā engari ngā karakia Ringatū me he tangihanga, hura kōhatū, rā whānau, he mārena ko ngā tū hui. Engari ko te whakapono matua ko Te Hāhi Katorika. No te 1840 Te Hāhi Katorika ki Te Whakatōhea nō mua noa atu i Te Hāhi Ringatū 1869.

Ko te rauna a Te Whakatōhea arā tōna maramataka, e toru ngā tekaumārua ki ngā marae e whā ki roto o Ngāti Ira ki Waioweka, Ngāi Tama ki Ōpape, Ngāti Rua ki Ōmarumutu, Ngāti Ngahere ki Terere. Kotahi te Tahī ki ngā marae i ia rua tau. Ko te tikanga o te karanga i te Rā mai i tētahi marae ki tētahi marae i tīmata i a Te Kooti i te tau 1883 i te wā i karanga tērā iwi ngā Rā Hānuere me ngā Hūrae ki roto i a rātou. Ka pērā anō a Te Whakatōhea, ka mutu te tangi a te pere o te 10am kua tū te māngai o te marae kai a rātou te Rā hai te marama o muri atu, ki te karanga i te Rā. Ko ngā marae o Te Ūpokorehe kai roto i te rauna o te peka o Ngāi Tūhoe.

Ripanga 7: Ngā Tekaumārua o Te Peka o Te Hāhi Ringatū o Te Whakatōhea, mana whakaae Te Hāhi Ringatū.

Hapū	Tekaumārua	Tekaumārua	Tekaumārua	Tahī
<i>Ngāti Ira</i>	Hānuere	Mei	Hepetema	Hūrae
<i>Ngāi Tama</i>	Pēpuere	Hune	Oketopa	Hānuere
<i>Ngāti Rua</i>	Maehe	Hūrae	Nōema	Hūrae
<i>Ngāti Ngahere</i>	Āperira	Ākuhata	Tīhema	Hānuere

Mai rā anō ēnei Rā ki runga o ēnei marae o Te Whakatōhea kai te mau tonu kāore he hapa ka mau tonu ki tēnā hapū ki tēnā hapū. Ahakoa tokoiti, ahakoa tokomaha ka tū tonu te Rā. Ko te kupu a Te Kooti: *Ahakoa tahī, ahakoa rua ko te whakapono ka piki, ka piki, ka piki*. Ko tōna whakamārama e mea ana ahakoa kotahi te tangata ka ora te whakapono, ahakoa rua ka ora tonu. Kāore e taea te heke ki raro i te kotahi ki te kore, ka taea engari, e kore rawa. Ko tōna aronga ko te piki, ko te piki kia rahi tonu.

He wā anō ki te hē ngā whakahaere a tētahi hapū ka tangohia tana Rā mō te takahi i te tapu o Te Hāhi Ringatū. Engari ko tana Rā ka mau tonu i tētahi o ngā hapū. Ko te mate ka uta te taumaha ki runga ki tērā hapū ki te waha i ngā taumaha o te whakahaere i te Rā, ko te whakataka kai tērā, ko te manaaki manuhiri tērā, ērā taumaha o te whakahaere hui. Engari ko te tapu o te Rā me tōna whakahaere me āna tikanga ka mau tonu. He tapu tapu rawa ki te takahia te tapu o te Rā.

Koinei ngā Rā a Te Ringatū. Ka kitea ake he kaupapa tā ngā Rā he mea tango mai i ngā karaipiture, he mea taura mai i ngā tikanga a te Māori. Ko tā Te Kooti he whakahanumi, he whakakotahi i ngā whakapono e rua o te Māori me te Karaitiana hoki. Ko ngā Rā ka whakahaeretia ki runga marae, ki rō tipuna whare. Kāore he whare karakia, ko ngā tipuna whare tonu hai wāhi karakia mō ngā Ringatū. Ka moea iho te pō ki runga i te papa ki rō tipuna whare ki waenganui i ngā tipuna, ko ngā poupou ērā, ko ngā whakaahua ērā o te hunga mate nāna i whawhai taua whawhai mō te whakarauoranga o te tangata, o te iwi, o te katoa ko tōna tūākiri tērā, ko tōna mana Māori motuhake. Nō reira ko Te Hāhi Ringatū ko tōna tūāpapa me tōna whakapapa nō roto tonu mai i te ao Māori tūturu ngā tikanga me tōna kawa.

#### 4.4 Hai matua mō te pani

Ehara i te mea nō te tahuritanga atu o Te Whakatōhea ki Te Ringatū i te tau 1869 i tīni ai āna tikanga karakia, whakapono hoki. E kao kua tae noa atu te Atua hou me āna whakapono hou ki roto ki a Te Whakatōhea, nō te tau 1839 Te Hāhi Mihingare, nō te tau 1840 Te Hāhi Katorika. Kua neke atu i te kotahi whakatipuranga a Te Whakatōhea e whai ana i ngā karakia Karaitiana. Nō reira ae i rerekē ai, i tīni ai āna tikanga me te whakapono o te Māori ki ōna Atua Māori, i ōna whakapakoko i te mea kai ngā karaipiture e whakahau ana i te iwi Māori ki te whakarere i ōna Atua Māori, ki te whakakore i ngā whakapakoko pēra i tā te Atua whakahau i a Mohi ki te whakahau i tana iwi o Iharaia ki te whakamutu i te karakia ki ōna Atua, ki ōna whakapakoko. Koinei ngā kupu me ngā whakahau i haria mai e ngā mihingare ko ngā karaipiture kawenata tawhito.

*2 Ngā Kīngi 17: 35 “Kaua e wehi ki ngā atua kē, kaua hoki e koropiko ki a rātou, kaua e mahi ki a rātou, kaua e patu whakahere ki a rātou...”*

*Hohea 13:4 Ko ahau anō ia a Ihowā ko tōu Atua o te whenua mai rā anō o Ihipa. Kaua koe e mōhio ki tētahi atua ko ahau anake, kāore atu hoki he kaiwhakaora ko ahau anake.*

Hoi anō kua kite te iwi i ngā kino me ngā riri i ngā Atua Māori, he mākutū, he mate, he māuiui hoki me te mea hoki me patu whakahere ki a rātou kia ea ai ngā tonu i a rātou. I kite hoki rātou he ngāwari anō ngā whakahaere ki a Ihowā. Me te mea hoki ko ngā pakanga ki te Pākehā i te nuinga o te wā i toa ko tō rātou Atua, i tere te tuku ki raro i a Ihowā. E ai ki a Mōnita Delamere ki te karakia ki ngā Atua Māori he utu. Ki te hē, he kanohi te utu. Me tāna anō he pai ki te whāwhā i a rātou engari me hari ko Ihowā ki te taha, he Atua aroha ia.

Ko Te Whakatōhea he iwi pūmau ki Te Ringatū. Ko Te Ringatū te whakapono Māori o roto o Te Whakatōhea. Kua kore ōna tohunga whakahaere i ngā karakia Māori. Ko ngā karakia Māori o nehe ka kawea i roto o Te Whakatōhea ka kawea hai tauparapara mō ngā whaikōrero e ngā tohunga Ringatū tonu. Mai rā anō tērā āhuatanga i ngā pūkōrero, ngā kaihautū o te iwi pērā i a Mōnita Delamere, i a Pāroa Kūrei, i a Te Huinga Karauna ngā manutaki o te iwi i ōna rā. He iwi noho moana a Te Whakatōhea nō reira ka titiro tonu ia ki te moana, ā, ko Tangaroa tērā. Ka titiro ki ngā huarere, ko Tāwhirimātea tērā. Ka rū te whenua ko Rūaumoko tērā. Kai roto ēnei Atua i ngā mōteatea me ngā ngeri a Te Whakatōhea, ko Tūmatauenga tērā, ko marae ātea, ko Rongomaraeroa ko poho o te tipuna whare, ko te whare tipuna tonu ko Tāne-whakapiripiri. Ahakoa kua kūpapa tūturu a Te Whakatōhea ki raro i Te Ringatū i tēnei wā kai te mau tonu ki ōna Atua Māori i tōna tirohanga ki tōna ao. Tērā he wā anō ka ara mai anō ngā karakia Māori ki roto o Te Whakatōhea.

Ka titiro ki ētahi karakia Māori me te whakahāngai ki ngā karakia Ringatū. He karakia kai, he hoa tapuwae, he hoa rākau, he karakia pakanga, he karakia tūātanga tamariki.

#### **4.4.1 Karakia mō te kai:**

##### **Karakia Māori**

*Nau mai e ngā hua o te wao, o te ngakinga, o te wai tai, o te wai Māori, nā Tāne, nā Rongo, nā Tangaroa. Ko Ranginui e tū iho nei, ko Papatūānuku e takoto ake nei. Tūturu whakamaua kia tina, tina. Hui e! Tāiki e!*

##### **Karakia Ringatū**

*Ko koe anō te Atua e ora ana, e mana ana. Korōria ki tōu ingoa tapu. Āmine.*

#### **4.4.2 He karakia hoa tapuwae mō te pakanga:**

##### **Karakia Māori**

*Piko o te ora i mua rā tū mai koe ki muri rā  
Pū rārauhe i mua rā tū mai koe ki muri rā  
Pae maunga i mua rā tū mai koe ki muri rā  
Tuku atu au kia rere me he matakōkiri anewa ki te rangi*

##### **Karakia Ringātū**

*Waiata a Rāwiri 46*

*Ko te Atua tō tātou piringa, me tō tātou kaha, he kai āwhina e tino tata ana i ngā wā o te hē...  
Mā konei rā tātou ka kore ai e wehi, ahakoa nekehia te whenua, ahakoa kahakina ngā maunga  
ki waenga moana, ahakoa rarā, taupatupatu noa ōna wai, ahakoa wiri ngā maunga i ōna  
huamotanga...*

#### **4.4.3 Karakia tono kai**

##### **Karakia Māori mō te hī ika**

*Kukū, kukū ikatere, kukū wehiwehi*

*Takina ko koe nā, te iho o ika, te iho o Tangaroa*

*Te matau nā Pāua*

*Huhuti ki runga, ka ea ki runga*

*Tere ki uta rā, tere ki tai rā*

##### **Karakia Ringatū**

*E te Atua e te Matua i te rangi nā tōu arohanui i tuku iho mai e koe te ua i hua ai te kai ki te  
whenua, i tini ai ngā ika, ngā manu me ngā kararehe katoa....*

He tauira tēnei kia kite ake ai ahakoa ko Ihowā te Atua o roto mai i ngā karakia a Te Ringatū, ka kite tonu iho ko ō nehe kaupapa karakia, ko ō Ringatū kaupapa karakia engari ki te Atua Matua nui o te rangi. Ahakoa he hī ika, ko tā Te Ringatū karakia ko te patu ika anō kai roto, ko te hoa tapuwae, ka kite anō hoki i *Te Waiata a Rāwiri 46* he hoa tapuwae tonu kai roto. E ai ki a Mōnita ko *Te Waiata a Rāwiri 46* koiarā te karakia ina haere ai a Te Kooti me tana iwi Ringatū ki te pakanga. E ai ki Tā Mōnita Delamere ko tā Te Kooti mahi he whakarauora i ngā mahi tūturu Māori, te tuakiri Māori ki roto mai i tōna whakapono o Te Ringatū. Ko tā Te Kooti he whakahanumi i ngā tikanga Māori tūturu me te kupu kia kotahi tonu i roto i te Kotahitanga o te wairua, anā e kite nei i roto i ngā tauira karakia nei.

#### **4.5 Titikaha**

Mai rā anō i te 27 o Hānuere 1869 kua kotahi rau, e rima tekau tau i tēnei tau 2019 a Te Whakatōhea e whai ana i Te Hāhi Ringatū te whakapono i hohoutia ai e Te Kooti tōna rongō. Kotahi rau whā tekau mā iwa tau ko Te Kooti hai Matuatanga mō Te Whakatōhea, e ū tonu nei, e pūmau tonu nei, ka whakapūmau tonu nei e tēnā whakatipuranga, e tēnā whakatipuranga haere ake nei, haere ake nei. Ko te kupu a Paora Ngāmoki rangatira o Te Whānau-a-Apanui ki a Rāpata Wahawaha i tāna whakahau i a Te Whānau-a-Apanui me whakamutu te whai i te

Ringātū; *“Mehemea whakapono nei nāu, nā te tangata āpōpō tonu ka mate, mehemea nā Te Atua haere ake nei, haere ake nei.*

Nō te 12 o Mei 1868 te rā i hōmai ai e Te Atua ngā kupu whakaari katoa mō te motu, mō tērā wāhi, mō tērā wahi i whanau mai te whakapono o Te Hāhi Ringātū. Ahakoa nō mua atu i tērā te matakitenga maitanga i te whakapono o Te Ringātū nō te tau 1676 kē i a Te Toiroa, ko tana matakite i te whānautanga mai o Te Kooti i ngā wā o te pōtatutatu, pōkaikaha. Nā ngā whakapae teka i whakawhānau mai ai Te Ringātū, e kīa ana he pūrahōrua a Te Kooti, anā i whakarautia atu ia ki Wharekauri, ahakoa he harakore. As he (Te Kooti) told George Grey in 1879, equally plainly, ‘I would not accept the Hauhau God’ (Kahore hoki ahau i pai ki te Atua Hauhau) (Binney. 1995 p. 41). Nō roto mai anō Te Ringātū i te murunga whenua, i te whakaheke toto, i te pōtatutatu, i te pōkaikaha. Ko tō Te Ringātū he waka whakarauora i te pouaru, te pani me te rawakore. I tahuri nui a Te Whakatōhea ki a te Kooti me tana whakapono hou Te Ringātū, anā i kūpapa ki raro i a ia. Ko Te Kooti hai Matua tangata mō Te Whakatōhea. I tū mai ia me tana mana Atua, tana mana poropiti i te pōtatautatu i te wā i raupatutia te roi o te whenua o Te Whakatōhea, ka noho whenua kore rāua tahi ko Te Kooti. Rāua tahi he harakore, rāua tahi he whenua kore, rāua tahi i whawhai mō tō rāua mana Māori motuhake ki te Kāwanatanga.

Ko ngā whakahaunga me ngā tikanga a Te Matua tangata i whakarauora i te noho Māori ā iwi a Te Whakatōhea; *“Kimihia e te iwi te ara o te tikanga i pai ai te noho i te ao nei”*. Ko āna mōteateatea ērā, ko āna haka ērā, ko āna karakia ērā, ko āna kupu whakaari ērā i waiho hai takitaki i a Te Whakatōhea ki roto i ngā ururua, i ngā tairo a Kupe i arataki i a Te Whakatōhea kia kite *i roto i te pōuri te māramatanga e whiti ana*. Nā Te Kooti me tana whakapono hou a Te Ringātū i whakarauora, i mau ai ngā tikanga a Te Whakatōhea kia noho Māori tonu ia ki roto ki tōna ao, ahakoa te pōkaikaha, ahakoa te pōtatutatu me ngā whiu taumaha a te Kāwanatanga ki runga ki Te Whakatōhea. Ae kua panoni ngā tikanga a Te Whakatōhea engari, ae kai te Māori tonu ngā tikanga a Te Whakatōhea, nā Te Kooti me tana whakapono a Te Ringātū i taea ai tēnei noho a Te Whakatōhea ki roto ki tōna ao nei ahakoa i pani i te murunga o te whenua, i mate tangata, i mate whenua. I pani i te matenga o te tangata i ngā riri whenua. Kai te waiata a Te Araroa Tuihi nō Te Kahupāke hapū nō Ngāti Awa o Te Teko i whakakupu i tēnei tūāhuatanga ko te raupatūtanga o te whenua. Ko te Te Araroa te wahine a Tikitū III. E ai ki te kōrero i kōhurua e Tikitū III tētahi tangata, ka whāia e te ture ki Rūātōki, karekau i mau. Ka haere, ka whai i a Te Kooti Arikirangi. Ko te whakutu mō tana hara, ka murua āna whenua. Ka noho pōhara, ka aroha tana wahine a Tuhi ki a ia ka titoa te waiata nei (Phillis, 2002. p. 423).

*Kāore hoki e te rangi nei,*

*Te hua mahara i roto rā,  
Ki au rā ka noho pani nei,  
I pani ki te whenua,  
I pani ki te tangata,  
Au tangi kau iho i te pō,  
Ka whakatū ki hea te aroha?  
Te tōnga o te rā ki a Rikirang,i  
Ko tōku whanaunga ia tērā,  
Ina te ahu e i mihi ki te whenua,  
I tangi ki te tangata,  
Ka noho wairangi nei āpōpō,  
Ka retireti ki hea?  
Ka tahuri noa ka rarapa noa,  
Kai hea te tūnga mō te waewae?  
He aha te pai ki te noho noa iho?  
Tē āta rere ki Poihākena,  
Kai noho i knonei,  
Ka rongo ai te waunga i.*

## Ko Te Kura Roa: Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti

---

### 5.1 Kupu Whakaari

I tipu ake ahau i roto i te kapa haka mai i rā anō ahau e tamariki ana. Ko taku kuia a Kaaterina he kaiako i te kapa haka o Ngāpōtiki, he kaitito ia, he kaitātaki hoki. Ko aku tuākana he kaihaka i roto o Ngāpōtiki, i roto hoki i ngā kapa haka kura. Nō reira ahau i kōingo ki te mahi kapa haka i ahau e poniponi ana, ā pakeke noa nei, kai te ngākau hihiko tonu ahau.

He kaihaka ahau, he kaiako, he kaitito, he kaitātaki hoki ahau mai rā anō tae noa mai ki tēnei rā, kai te ngākau hihiko tonu ahau.

He taonga tuku iho ngā pūkenga haka kai ahau i aku tīpuna i a Hinekaukia nāna te mōteatea nama 40 o roto o Ngā Mōteatea I; *Kereruhuahua*; i a Hinehou hoki te taina o Hinekaukia nāna te mōteatea 212 o roto Ngā Mōteatea III; *Ka hua i tō mate*. Nō reira kua oti noa atu tēnei kura te whakatō i ngā tīpuna mai rā anō heke rawa mai ki ahau. I ahau e tamariki ana i tīmata ahau ki te tito waiata me te whakaako kapa haka kura tuatahi, kai te ngākau hihiko tonu ahau.

Ki roto i te Kura Roa ka titiro ki a Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti he kapa haka nāku i tīmata ki roto o Te Whakatōhea i te 27 o Hānuere 1995. Tuatahi ko te take i tū ai a Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti kia whai kapa haka a Te Whakatōhea nā te mea ko Te Whakatōhea te tangata whenua i tērā tau 1995 mō te Whakataetae-ā-Rohe o Mātaatua. Engari i roto i ngā tau e 23 kua noho a Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti hai momo whare wānanga mō Te Whakatōhea. Nō reira ko tā Te Kura Roa nei he whakatewhatewha i te whakawhanaketanga o Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti otirā a Te Whakatōhea kaua ki roto ki ngā mahi kapa haka anake, engari i roto i ngā tikanga a Te Whakatōhea, ōna hītōria, āna kōrero taketake, tōna reo, ki roto i te mātauranga, ki roto hoki i te mahi o te ao tangata. Ko ēnei hua o te wānanga ko te whakatipu i te iwi kua roa e pōkaikaha ana mai i te tau 1865; ko te patunga o Te Wākana, te kōhurutanga o Te Mokomoko 1866, ko te raupatunga o tōna whenua, āna tikanga, tōna reo, otirā tōna mana Māori motuhake. Ko te tāhuhu o te wānanga ko ngā mahuetanga iho a kui mā, a koro mā, ā, ko te Kura o Te Kooti Arikirangi Te Turuki. Koianei tā te wānanga nei a Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti whāinga ko Te Kura nā Tūhaepō. Ko tāku whakamāori i te ingoa nei a Tūhaepō, anā ko Tūmatauenga i haea te pō kia whitiria te ao ki te māramatanga. Ki ahau nei i pēra anō tā Te Kooti whakamahi i te ingoa nei ko te putanga mai ōna me tana whakapono Ringatū i te ao o Tūmatauenga ki te rangimārie, i te wā i tau ai te maungārongo. Anā, he pērā anō Te Kura Roa nei o Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti; he kukume mai i ngā uri o Te Whakatōhea i roto i te pōkaikaha kia toherauariki i tana ako i roto i te kura roa i te mōhio ōna

ko wai ia, nā wai ia, nō hea hoki ia. He whakahīhī tēnei mō te pia nō roto i te kura nei i te mōhio ōna ki a ia anō.

I roto i Te Kura Roa nei ka hauhake ake i ngā kōrero o whakapata mō te ōrokotīmatanga o tēnei mea te kapa haka, ka titiro ki ngā kōrero mō Tinirau. Whāia ka titiro ki te whakapapa o te kapa haka me Te Whakatōhea, ka titiro ki te whenua me ngā kōrero kai roto i ngā mōteatea e whakaahuatia nei ko te kapa haka. Tuarua ka matapakitia ngā kaitito o Te Whakatōhea i te mea ko te kaitito te poutokomanawa o te kapa haka, kai a ia tērā pūkenga ki te whakarāpopoto i ngā kōrero, ngā hītōria, ngā whakapapa ki ngā kupu ruarua noa iho nei me te whakaatu tonu i tōna tāhuhu kōrero. Kātahi ka tahuri atu ki te whakapuaki i ngā kōrero e pā ana ki te whakapapa o te kapa haka ki roto o Te Whakatōhea, ka hahū ake i ngā kōrero mō ngā mahi kapa haka ki te mahi moni ki te tuku atu ki ngā hōia i ngā pakanga nunui o te ao. Kātahi ka whakatakoto i ngā kōrero mō ngā kapa haka toa o ngā ono tekau o tērā rau tau, arā ko Waiweka Youth Club me Ngā Pōtiki. Taka rawa mai ki ngā iwa tekau o tērā rau tau ki te whānautanga mai o Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti ki te ao mārāma me tāna kauoepope i te iwi i karapinepine i tōna mōkarakara i noho ko Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti te wānanga, Te Kura Roa e mōhioia ana i ēnei rā. Kua tuia ngā kōrero ki ngā makaurangi o te waiata i titoa mā Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti hai whakatauirā ake i ā Te Whakatōhea kōrero, i ā Te Matua tangata kōrero hai whakatau ake i tā Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti kawē i ngā tikanga a Te Whakatōhea kia tū toherauariki te iwi nei, ki te ao katoa.

## 5.2 Te Ōrokotīmatanga o Te Kapa Haka

Ko te orokotīmatanga o te kapa me hoki ki ngā kōrero a Tinirau. Ko Tinirau te tama a Tangaroa, koia te tipua o ngā ika. Anā he mōkai tā Tinirau he tohorā ko Tutunui tōna ingoa. He kaieke tohorā a Tinirau. Ka whānau mai te tamaiti a Tinirau rāua ko Hineteiwaiwa ko Tūhuru tōna ingoa he tama. Ka haere a Tinirau ki Te Tihi o Manono ki te tonu i te tohunga ihorei a Kae ki te tohi i tana tama. Ka whakaae a Kae, ka hoki ki Te Motutapu-a-Tinirau ki te kāinga o Tinirau. Ka oti i a Kae a Tūhuru te tohi. Hai hākari mā Kae ka karanga a Tinirau ki tana mōkai ki a Tutunui ka tapahia tētahi wāhanga o Tutunui ka taoina. Ka reka te mīti tohorā ki a Kae, kātahi ia ka whakatakoto tikanga ka tonu ia ki a Tinirau kia hoki ia ki Te Tihi o Manono mā runga i a Tutunui. Ka whakaae a Tinirau me ngā tohutohu ki te taha. Ka kīa atu a Kae kauaka e ū rawa ki uta ki te kātata a Tutunui ki uta ka oioi ia, he tohu tērā me tuku ki raro, me heke. Ka whakaae atu a Kae.

Nō te hokitanga o Kae ka kātata a Tutunui ki uta ka oioi, engari a Kae ka kipakipa i a Tutunui kia haere tonu. Ka rua te oioitanga, ka toru te oioitanga engari kīhai a Kae i heke. Kātahi ka pae a Tutunui ki uta ka mate.

Ka tapatapahia a Tutunui e te iwi o Kae, e Te Aitanga a Te Poporokewa kātahi ka takaia ki te rau koromiko ka taoina. Ka rere te mōkarakara o Tutunui ki runga i te hau ka tāmaki ki te ihu o Tinirau rāua ko Hineteiwaiwa hai reira i mōhio ai kua pau i a Kae me tana iwi a Te Aitanga a Poporokewa a Tutunui te kai.

Ka whakatakoto tikanga a Tinirau ki te rānaki i te mate o Tutunui. Ka whakatū i tana taua, engari ko tana taua he wāhine katoa; ko Hineteiwaiwa, ko Raukatauri, ko Raukatamea, ko Ruhiruhi mā. Ko tā rātou he haere ki te rapa i a Kae me te whakahoki i a ia ki a Tinirau.

Ka tohu atu a Tinirau ki ngā wāhine he hawenga o ngā niho o Kae. Mai ka kitea ōna niho, ka mea atu a Tinirau. “Me tākaro e koutou me haka me mea i ngā mea e āhua reka ai te memene ai te pāpāringa o te iwi (Grey, 1885). Without delay, Tinirau’s people dragged down to sea a large canoe which belonged to one of his wives, and forty women forthwith embarked in it; none but women went... (Grey, 1885).

Ka tae ngā wāhine ki Te Tihi o Manono ka mahi rātou i ā rātou mahi tākaro ko te tī, ko te papaki ringa, ko te porotiti te aha, te aha, te aha, engari kīhai hoki a Kae i kata. Ka kimi rātou i te haka e kata ai a Kae ka kitea he haka mā rātou; ko Te-puapua, ko Wai-toremi, ko Te-Anaana; nō te hakanga i te Waitoremi ka kata a Kae, ā ka kitea te hawenga o te niho o Kae (White, 1997 p.142). Ko tā rātou haka tēnei:

*"E ako au ki te haka  
E ako au ki te ringaringa  
E ako au ki te whewhera  
E! Kaore te whewhera  
E ako au ki te kowhiti  
E! Kaore te kowhiti  
E kowhiti nuku, e kowhiti rangi  
E kowhiti puapua, e kowhiti werewere  
E hanahana a Tinaku ... e!"*  
(Best, 1976).

Ka kitea i te momo haka nei ko Te Puapua, ko Te Waitoremi, ko Te Anaana e hāngai ana ki te aroaro o te wahine, ā ko ngā kupu tonu o taua haka he pērā āno e hāngai tonu ana ki te aroaro o te wahine me te whakaatu atu anō i te taihemahema o te wahine ki te tangata. Kua kupu whakarite ko Tinaku ko te Atua tērā o te kūmara ki te ure o te tāne e werohia ana te tore o te

wahine me te rongō i tō te taihemahema wahine mahana o roto. Hai reira i whakakatahia a Kae i tā ngā wāhine whakahīkaka i tō te tāne toiora.

I te mōhiotanga ko wai a Kae ka mahi ngā wāhine i tā rātou rotu, ko tēnei mea te rotu he karakia e whakamoea ai te tangata kia moe. Ka mahi tā rātou rotu, anā ka moe a Kae me tana iwi ka whakahoki i a Kae ki a Tinirau ka patua a Kae, anā i ea ai te mate o Tutunui. Ko ngā kupu o te rotu tēnei:

*Ō mata e tiro mai nā*

*Tū, whakarehua,*

*Tū, whakamoea,*

*E moe*

(White, 1997. p.142) .

Koia nei te ōrokotīmatanga o tēnei mea te kapa haka; ko te kapa haka a Tinirau, he wāhine katoa e whā tekau rātou. Ehara i te mea koinei e whā tekau ai ngā tāngata e whakaaea kia tū ki te whakataetae i ēnei rā e kao, engari ka kitea i konei he whakapapa tonu tō te whā tekau. Ko te mea kē hē wāhine katoa, koinei pea e nui ake ai ngā wāhine ka mahi i te kapa haka i ngā tāne i te mea kai konei te whakapapa e mea ana, mai i rā anō i te kapa haka tuatahi he wāhine te taituara o ngā kapa haka, kai te pērā tonu i ēnei rā.

### **5.3 Te Whakatōhea me te Haka**

He iwi haka a Te Whakatōhea mai i rā anō he whakapapa tōna. Mai i rā anō i te poronga i te rākau mō te waka a Mātaatua he haka tā rātou i te tōtanga ki waho i te ngahere ki tātahi, (Best, 1977. p.741):

*Tōia te waka e! Tōia te waka e!*

*Tōia te waka i te maunga e tū mai rā*

*Whakatakotoria i te ngaro parapara koa*

*Me he tete waka e!*

*Me he tete waka e!*

Me he pītau whakareia!

Kua whakairotia anōtia te haka ki roto ki te whenua o Te Whakatōhea, ki roto hoki ki tōna tāiao. Ko Te Haka a Tamauru tērā, a place on the ancestral grounds of Moutohora where grew

a row of kahikatea trees which resembled a line of people assembled for a war-dance (Lyall, 1979, p.176). Ko Tamauru ehara i te tipuna engari he kupu whakarite anō, ko te kupu mauru ko te whakatau i te mauri o te iwi, ko te whakatau i te rangimāria ki runga ki te iwi, ko te whakatau i te riri, i te matakū, i te māharahara. Ka rua ko te Tamauru nei, anā ko ngā toa hai kaupare atu i te whakaekenga mai a te hoariri, i te urunga mai a te hoa riri.

Ko te Waro-o-te-Rehunga, a name applied to a chain of Whakatōhea forts, Te Toiroa, Te Horomanga, Te Ika-a-te-kite, and Pa-inanga (Lyall, 1979, p. 182). Ko ēnei pā e tū ana tētahi ki tētahi mai i waho ki uta nō ngā hapū o Ngāti Ngahere, Ngāi Tama me Ngāti Patu. Ko te waro he rua hōhonu kāore he mutunga, kāore he takere. Ko te rehunga ko te piu tērā o te taiaha e ai ki tā Te Whakatōhea kupu; pēnei ki ngā āhai ki a Te Whakatōhea ko te rehunga tērā. Ko Te Waro-o-te Rehunga he whakatūpato i ngā hoariri, he whakaatu i te kaha o ngā maioro nei. Ko tā te hoariri mutunga ko te rehunga atu ki te mate ki roto ki te waro, ko te ana tērā o Hinenui-i-te-pō; ko te Muriwaihou.

Ko te kāinga nei a Tirohanga, ko te roanga o tērā ingoa ko Ngā Tirohanga a Ngātorohaka ki ōna māra. He tipuna a Ngātorohaka nō Te Whakatōhea nō runga i a Nukutere waka. Ko ngā toronga o te haka tērā; ko Ngātorohaka.

Ko Whakaari tērā ko te ahiatua tērā, ko te haka tērā a Rūaumoko, ko tāna ki te iwi ko te whakaari i tōna nei āhua, i tō Tāwhirimātea āhua, i tō Tangaroa āhua, i te takoto, i te tū ranei o tana puia; ko Te Puia o Whakaari. Ko tā Te Puia o Whakaari, ko ngā tohu huarere, arā, he aha te hau, ko te haka a Tāwhirimātea tērā, ka pēhea te moana, ko te haka tērā a Tangaroa, ka pēhea te rangi, ko te haka a Ranginui-e-tū-iho-nei tērā. Ko te haka tērā a Rūaumoko ki te puku o Whakaari.

Kai roto anō hoki i te tautitotito a Tītoko o Te Whakatōhea ki a Te Waiūrangi o Te Whānau-a-Aapnui te kōrero:

*“Tēnei Taumata-ā-rangi te takoto nei,  
Me he kahawai paenga ā tai, he hakanga nā te karoro,  
Kai te Ara-koti-pū...”*

Ka kite i konei ki tā Tītoko tiki mai ai i ngā āhuetanga o te taiao hai whakairo i ōna whakaaro me te tāhuhu o tāna kaupapa. Arā kai te whakahuahua a Tītoko i ngā pakanga i toa ai a Te Whakatōhea ki a Te Whānau-a-Aapnui. Ko te pakanga nei a Te Ara-koti-pū i tū ki te tahatika i waenganui o Waiotaha me Ōpōtiki. I reira i hinga ai a Taumata-ā-rangi he rangatira nō Te

Whānau-a-Apanui me te huhua o te iwi. He kupu whakarite te kōrero; *‘Me he kahawai paenga ā tai’*. E whakaritea ana te mahi a te tūpāpaku e takoto ana i tātai ki te ika kahawai kua paenga ki uta. Ānō ko *‘te hakanga nā te karoro’*, ki te pae te ika ki tai ko tā te karoro haka i te wā e kai ana rātou. Ka huihui mai te kāhui karoro, ka rere ka hāparangi ko tana karanga; Haro! Haro! Ka pūkana, ka ruku, ka rere te rehu o tana taiaha ko ana ngutu koikoi ērā ka wero, ka timo, ka papaki ngā parihau, ka pūkana, anā ka rere anō. Ka pērā haere te karoro, anā koinei tā Tītoko tiki mai i te taiao me te whakarite anō i tā te karoro kai ki te haka a te karoro. He pērā anō te haka a te ika ina pae ki uta, ka tarawhetawheta, ka hīkaikai, ka takaoraora ki runga tātai, ka hāmama kau te waha, ka ngunguru te puku ka pūkana ngā whatu. He haka tā ngā tūmomo mea katoa o te taiao, he haka tā te hau, he haka tā te rā, tā te moana, tā te awa, tā te rākau.

Ko Kutarere tērā, ko Maromahue tērā he marae kāinga ēnei o Te Whakatōhea. I tapaina tēnei kāinga a Kutarere ki te whakarereanga i a Te Huinga o te Ao i tana maro i whatua mai ki te kuta. Ko te kuta he otaota ka tipu ki rō wai. Anā, i whāia haeretia a Te Huinga o te Ao e ngā tāne o Te Ūpokorehe i te mea he puhi ātaahua. Ko te rerenga tērā o tana maro ki runga i tētahi maunga, ka tapaina tērā maunga ko Pukemoremore. Ko te ingoa a Pukemoremore ka whakaatu i te tino puhi o Te Huinga o te Ao.

Ko Maromahue ko te whāiatanga o Uetūpuke e Tuamutu ki te patu i te tamaiti i a Kāhuki. Ko te rerenga o Uetūpuke ko te mahuetanga tērā i tana maro. Ko Maromahue tērā. Ko te maro he kākahu nō te wahine anō nō te toa taua i ērā wā, nō nāiane kua mahia hai kākahu mō te toa o roto o ngā kapa haka.

Ko Haka, ko Rākaukawa he ingoa tīpuna ēnei ki roto o Te Whakatōhea e mau tonu nei ki ngā uri whakatipu. Ko Rākaukawa, ko te toa tērā ki te mau rākau e ai ki tā Te Whakatōhea kōrero.

### **Ko te kopa o te whare**

Kai tēnei kaupeka o Te Kura Roa nei kua takoto ngā kōrero e whakapapatia ana te haka ki roto o Te Whakatōhea. Ka rua ka kōrero i ētahi kaitito rongonui nō Te Whakatōhea me te hura i ngā kōrero mō ngā mahi kapa haka ki roto o Te Whakatōhea i te waha o nehe ka puta haere mai ki ngā tau tata o mua ake nei.

#### **5.3.1 Kaitito**

I konei titiro ai ki ētahi o ngā kaitito me ētahi o ā rātou mahinga i noho hai tauira, i noho ā rātou mahi hai puna kōrero, hai kaitohutohu i Te Whakatōhea i roto i āna tikanga, i āna mahi o te nāia tonu nei.

Ahakoia he waiata, he mōteatea, he ngeri, he pātere a Te Whakatōhea kāore e tino mōhiohia ngā kaitito a Te Whakatōhea o whakapata, nā te kaha kino o te raupatu i tuku katoa ērā kōrero, kāore e tino mōhio engari kai konei e whakapae ana, ae, te take pea i pau katoa te kaha o ngā tīpuna kia ora ai rātou i pērā ai. Arā i pau ngā pukapuka, ngā tuhinga ā rātou mā i te urupatu, ae i wera i te ahi, ko ngā tohunga rānei i a rātou ērā kōrero i mate i ngā pakanga whenua. Tērā anō tētahi take hoki i te kaha nui o te tapu o ērā tīpuna i tanumia atu me ngā tohunga me te ringa tuhi nāna nei ērā pukapuka, ērā kōrero i tuhi. When a person fell ill he was almost invariably taken a little way from the village, and either a miserable shed of brush or palm-leaves erected over him, or he was simply left in the open. He would not be allowed to die in his house, on account of the intense *tapu* which pertained to death. If he did so, then the house could no longer be used, for it would be *tapu*, and would simply be left to decay. In former days, when fighting was of common occurrence, it often happened that a fortified village would be deserted on account of the blood of its occupants having been spilt there while defending the same against an enemy. In such a case, if no local priest was deemed sufficiently high in his profession to lift the *tapu* from the blood-stained defences, then the garrison deserted that place and built another fort elsewhere (Best, 1905). The dying man would be found lying on some mats placed on the ground, and covered with the scant clothing of primitive man, probably a cloak woven from the fibre of the so-called flax (*Phormium tenax*). When a Maori dies, such of his clothing as may have been used by him or have been in contact with him during his illness is either buried with him or burned at his death. In former times they possessed nothing in the way of clothing similar to European garments, but merely cloaks, capes, and kilts. Since the Natives have adopted European garments, relatives of a person near his end will often say to him, “Put on your clothes,” and will assist him to do so. He thus dies in them, and is buried in them. If any such are left they are burned. But if he has any spare clothing packed away, such is not destroyed at his death, but is taken by relatives. Also, the vessels used to cook food in for a sick person, if his own property, are often destroyed at his death. They are destroyed for the same reason that his clothing was burned—lest others use them; for death has its *tapu*, as has birth. In entering and leaving the world man is under strong *tapu* (Best, 1905).

Ko Tītoko te tohunga rongonui o te katoa, kua kōrero kētia i runga ake nei. Te take koia te kaitito rongonui ki a Te Whakatōhea; nāna ngā mōteatea kai te mōhiohia e Te Whakatōhea, kai te whakaputanga tuatoru o ngā pukapuka o Ngā Mōteatea a Tā Apirana rāua ko Pei Te Hurinui Jones e takoto ana tētahi o āna titonga, ko te waiata 223, he pātere, he tautitotito ki a Te Waiūrangi o Te Whānau-a-Apanui. Kai roto i te tautitotito nei e hahūtia ana ngā tipuna me ngā pakanga i waenganui i a Te Whakatōhea me Te Whānau-ā-Apanui. Ko Titoko he rangatira, he kaiārahi i a Te Whakatōhea i ngā tau o te 1830. Nō te wā o te pakūtanga o te pū, o ngā kairiri o

Te Whakatōhea ki a Ngā Puhī i a Pōmare, i a Te Haramiti mā. Nāna i takitaki ngā whakarau o Te Whakatōhea i whakarautia e Ngā Puhī, engari i tukuna i te wā i a Te Wiremu Wiremu te mihingare ki reira.

Kai te whakaputanga tuatoru o ngā pukapuka o Ngā Mōteatea anō tētahi o ngā pātere a Te Whakatōhea, ko te 221 o Ngā Mōteatea, engari kāore i te mōhiotia nā wai?. Ko te pātere nei e hauhaketia ana ngā māra a Tūmatauenga i waenganui i a Te Whakatōhea me Ngāi Tai me ngā tīpuna i mate i ērā pakanga ko Te Ahitarakihi tērā, ko Te Awahou tērā. Ka pāteretia ko ngā whakatauākī a te iwi me ngā whakapapa.

Kai te whakaputanga tuatahi o Ngā Mōteatea anō tētahi waiata a Te Whakatōhea ko te 159 o ngā waiata. He pērā anō kāore i te mōhiotia nā wai? Ahakoa e kīa ana ngā kōrero o roto nā Ngā Puhī te waiata nei, e kao nā Te Whakatōhea kē. Kai roto i te waiata e whakahuahuatia ana ngā tūtohu whenua o roto o Te Awa a Tamatea, ko te awa o Waioweka tērā, anā ko te rohe whenua tērā o Ngāti Ira hapū o Te Whakatōhea. Me te mea hoki kai te mōhio a Ngāti Ira ki ērā tūtohu whenua, kai te takahia haeretia tonutia e Ngāti Ira ērā whenua ōna. Ko te waiata 159 me te waiata 221 kāore e mōhiotia ko wai ngā kaitito, engari e mōhiotia nā Te Whakatōhea taketakerau ake.

Arā kē atu anō ngā mōteatea a Te Whakatōhea kai te mōteatea tonutia ki runga i ngā marae o Te Whakatōhea he waiata tangi te nuinga he tangi ki te rangatira, he tangi ki te toa, he tangi ki te makau, he tangi ki te tamaiti. He pērā anō ko ētahi kai te mōhio mō wai te mōteatea, hai reira kua mōhio nō tēhea hapū o Te Whakatōhea, engari te kaitito kāore e mōhiotia ana. He aha i pērā ai, i kīa te whakapae i runga ake rā ka kitea te whiu a te raupatu me ōna taumaha i pēhi kino nei, e pēhi tonu nei. Ko te whakataha a Te Whakatōhea i a ia anō, āna kōrero o nehe, āna tikanga, āna mōteatea kia ora tonu ai a Te Whakatōhea, mā te whai mahi ki te Pākehā i te whenua nāna nei i raupatu, ko te kūpapa i a ia anō, kia ora tonu ai a Te Whakatōhea.

Ahakoa kāore e mōhiotia ana ko wai ngā kaitito, kua noho tonu ko ēnei mōteatea hai pātaka kōrero mō te iwi. Kai roto i te pātaka nei e pupuri ana ko ngā kōrero a te iwi, ko ngā whakapapa, ko ngā whakatauākī, ko ngā kupu, ngā kura huna me ngā kīanga nā Te Whakatōhea i whakamahī i aua wā.

He momo whakaata ngā mōteatea nei kia kitea e te tangata te ao o ngā kaitito, ko ngā take o te wā, ngā tōrangapū o te wā, ngā kōrero o te wā, ngā aituā o te wā, te aha, te aha?

Ka taea e te tangata te tiki atu i ērā kōrero hai rangakura māna ki te whakawhānui i tōna mōhio ki ērā kōrero. Ka taea e te tangata te tiki atu i ērā kupu, kīanga me te whakahoki mai hai

whakarauora i te reo o te iwi, o Te Whakatōhea. Hai taonga nui tēnei pātaka kōrero, hai taonga whakaako i te tangata, i te iwi, he taonga whakarauora anō hoki i te tangata, i te iwi ā hītori, ā whakapapa, ā reo, ā tikanga hoki.

### 5.3.2 He Tautitotito

Ko tēnei tautitotito nā Tītoko he tipuna o Te Whakatōhea. Kua kōrero kētia a Tītoko i runga ake nei. E ai ki a Koopu Erueti; He mea nui tērā ki neherā te tautitotito; ka pai hoki mehemea he tohunga ngā tāngata whakatakoto i ngā kupu o te tautitotito. Ka puta i roto ngā matenga o tētahi iwi i tētahi; ka puta i reira ngā kaioraora, ngā hahani, ngā kupu whakataurekareka (Ngata, 1990, p. 98).

Ko tēnei tā Tītoko waiata 223 he whakautu tautitotito he whakautu ki tā Te Waiūranga o Te Whānau-ā-Apanui kua tāngia rā ki te waiata 222 o Ngā Mōteatea whakaputanga III.

Kai roto i te tautitotito nei ko ngā whakauenga riri i waenga i a Te Whakatōhea ki a Te Whānau-ā-Apanui. E ai ki a Koopu ko tā Tītoko (Ngata, 1990, p. 102) he whakautu i ngā tāunu a Te Waiūrangi ki runga ki a Te Whakatōhea me te tāunu anō i a Te Whānau-ā-Apanui ki āna hinganga i a Te Whakatōhea i ōna kairiri nui.

*E hika, Waiū e! Noho noa mai koe,  
Tito noa mai ki te tangata mate ki te pō  
He āhua tonu rā nō tā Tū-mata-uenga, nō tana ika,  
Te ngunuguru kino, te pōhane kino ai  
Mātai-ata i tōna puta i Wai-reporepo;  
I a Uhiuhi, i a Kapo-renga te tūtae,  
Hai kai mā te ururoa ki Tau-whare-rātā.  
Tēnei te mea e tito mai ai koe ki ahau,  
Ko te matenga o tō kahika o Muru-tākaka  
Ki Tukerae-o-Te-Kānawa;  
Ka paki koe i raro o te rekereke,  
Ka whakamatatia i reira  
Ko te mea mate, ko te mea ora;  
Ā me he kawenga pioke te pīkau ana  
I te ākau i Ō-hope.  
E hika, Waiū e! I rapua ia nā  
Te ringa rau tawa o Te Āuru*

*E Tai-whakaea ki te rapu kao;  
 Ka mate i te whakamā,  
 Ka whatiwhati noa i tōna puta i Toka-māi;  
 I ngunguru kino ai te Rangi-tū-matata  
 I te tāinga riu o Wai-he-kura;  
 Paru noa ia rā te tūtāe ki te kōtore;  
 He paru pāua nā tō pāpā, nā Tinga-huru-mātahi,  
 Nō tō kāinga, nō te Motu-nui.  
 E hika, Waiū e! I tīpokina te tipuaki  
 Ki te tūpuku karaka;  
 Nō reira te ingoa o Te Oro-karaka.  
 Whakaūria Ngāi Tamahāua ki te ika i te moana,  
 Ki te ngohi rā tēnā i hīa ai ki a Tauhē;  
 Nā te Taha-manawa i kawē ki Mou-tohorā.  
 Tēnei hikitia, i komotia ki roto  
 Ki te kōpiha kūmara nā Te Peka-whati,  
 Ā he pirau taro te aohia ana mai ki waho rā.  
 Ōkio rere o Hikitaia ki Tārai-pari,  
 Ki te whakaironga o te waka o te Whakairotanga,  
 Kurī kai taha umu o Te Waiū-rangi  
 Ki te aroaro o Ngāti Patumoana;  
 Ā he waha taro a te mārā i te taro a Tāwhi-rangi,  
 Te hōmaitanga o te kupenga a Tātere  
 Tēnei a Pango kai Whare-kāhu e takoto ana,  
 Me he pākura kai aka raupō,  
 Te kō ana mai i roto i te otaota;  
 Tēnei Taumata-ā-rangi te takoto nei,  
 Me he kahawai paenga ā tai, hakanga nā te karoro,  
 Kai Te Ara-koti-pū.  
 Tū ana te ure, ngunguru ana i roto i te taiaro  
 Ka ea te mate o te titotito i!*

### 5.3.3 He Oriori

He oriori tēnei nā Te Whakatōhea mō Te Tawhiro. Ko Te Tawhiro he tipuna nā Te Whakatōhea. Anō kāore e mōhiotia nā wai i tito. E rua ngā iwi kai te oriori tonutia tēnei oriori ko Te Whakatōhea rāua ko Te Whānau-a-Apanui. He hari anō tā Te Whakatōhea, he hari anō tā Te

Whānau-a-Apanui, kāore e tino whānui te rerekē, engari he rerekē. Ko rāua tāhi ka whakaaea nā Te Whakatōhea te oriori nei.

Ka tātai haere tēnei oriori i te whakapapa o Te Tawhiro, ka tūhonohono ai i a Te Tawhiro otirā tōna iwi a Te Whakatōhea ki ōna iwi o Te Whānau-ā-Apanui, Te Arawa, Te Aitanga-a-Māhaki-a-Tauhei, Ngāti Kahungunu me Ngāti Rongomaiwahine. Ko te matua o Tamataipūnoa ko ko Te Ahukawa nō Te Arawa. Katoa ēnei iwi he mea heke mai i te waka o Nukutere atu i a Te Arawa. Ka honoa a Te Tawhiro ki ōna taniwha, ki ōna tīpua, ki ōna Atua. Ko te tātakinga mai i te pēpi i te kunenga mai i Hawaiki, ko te tātakinga i te pēpi i te kōpu o tōna whaea ki te whai ao, ki te ao mārama. Ko tā te oriori nei he whakatō i te mauri taniwha, mauri tipua, mauri Atua, mauri tangata ki roto ki te tamaiti hai amo i a ia ki roto ki te ao tūroa.

### Pōpōpō

*Kāti rā te tangi whakarongo tō taringa*

*Ki ngā whakatakiri a tō tipuna i tō matarau i a koe*

*Kauaka e pōuri whakaae ake*

*Tērā te huarahi te takoto mai rā*

*I te rangi i tō tipuna e ia Tama-i-waho<sup>55</sup>*

*Ko Oho-matua-rau<sup>56</sup>*

*Tērā te huarahi tūtata kai runga te Ranginui<sup>57</sup>*

*Kai a Wāhiawa<sup>58</sup> nāna nei Tūrīrangī<sup>59</sup>, nāna nei Apanui<sup>60</sup>*

*Tōna tini noa iho i te mate i te ora e ...*

*Tērā Taipūnoa<sup>61</sup> kai runga Waiaua<sup>62</sup> kai Maungakāhia<sup>63</sup>*

*Nāna nei tōna tini noa iho i te mate i te ora*

---

<sup>55</sup> Tama-i-waho: Ko te Atua i runga o Nukutere waka.

<sup>56</sup> Oho-matua-rau: Ko Ohomairangi tēnei i a Te Arawa.

<sup>57</sup> Ranginui: He pā tēnei ki te awa o Te Urutukituki ki Hāwai ki roto o Te Whānau-a-Apanui. Ko te pā tēnei o Wāhiawa, o Tūrīrangī o Ngā Oho.

<sup>58</sup> Wāhiawa: He tipuna nō Apanui, nā Tamatekapua o Te Arawa.

<sup>59</sup> Tūrīrangī: Ko te matua o Apanui, nā Tamatekapua.

<sup>60</sup> Apanui: Ko Apanui-Ringamutu tēnei tipuna o te iwi o Te Whānau-a-Apanui.

<sup>61</sup> Taipūnoa: Ko Tamataipūnoa tēnei, ko te taina tēnei o Tūtāmure.

<sup>62</sup> Waiaua: Ko te kāinga tēnei o Tūtāmure rāua ko Tamataipūnoa.

<sup>63</sup> Maungakāhia: Ko Maungakāhia ko te pā tūwatawata tēnei o Kahungunu tipuna, i hinga i a Tūtāmure. E ai ki te tangata whenua o Māungakāhia, ko Manga-a-kahia kē te ingoa tika, te whakahua tika i te ingoa o tō rātou kāinga. He kōrero tēnei i hōmai ki ahau nā Te Riaki Amoamo.

*Tēnei Te Tawhiro<sup>64</sup> te karanga tūtata mai nei*  
*Ko koe tēnā ko au tēnei*  
*Taku kura ki te hau naku i tiki*  
*I te Pō-uriuri*  
*I te Pō-tangotango*  
*I a Hinemanuhiri<sup>65</sup> i a Rūaimoko<sup>66</sup>*  
*E tuki rā i te whenua i haramai rā koe*  
*I Hawaiki-mātotoru*  
*Ki te whai tangatatanga mai i Hawaiki*  
*Taku kōtuku hai titi rae, hai tiepu i runga nei*  
*Tērā te uira i te taha o te rangi*  
*Ko koe rā e hine e rama haere ana*  
*Tērā te marama ka rere mai i te pae*  
*Kātahi ka hoki mai ki ahau*  
*Tērā ka rere mai i te rua*  
*Ko koe rā e rangi*  
*Kātahi ka oho mai i te moe nā ... e*

#### 5.3.4 He Apakura

He apakura tēnei nā Ngāti Ngahere, hapū o Te Whakatōhea. He tangi apakura ki a Pirihaki he rangatira nō Ngāti Ngahere. I pūhia ia i te whakauenga riri a Te Karauna ki a Te Whakatōhea i tāna whakaeketanga ki runga ki a Te Whakatōhea i ngā rīriri mō te patunga i a Te Wākana i te tau 1865. I pūhia a Pirihaki e ngā hōia i Ōpōtiki, engari i tae ia ki Ōrangipakakino mate ai. Ko Ōrangipakakino e 20 kiromita te tawhiti atu ki te rāwhiti i Ōpōtiki, he kāinga nō Ngāti Rua, hapū o Te Whakatōhea.

*Tēra te uira,*  
*Whakatū i te rangi,*  
*Taku tōtara haemata e,*  
*Tēnā ka paea ki raro,*  
*Kai te whenua,*  
*Kai ō tīpuna.*  
*E kiri noa,*

<sup>64</sup> Te Tawhiro: Ko te tipuna tēnei mōna te oriori nei.

<sup>65</sup> Hinemanuhiri: Ko Hinemanuhiri te atua o te rangianiwaniwa e ai ki a Te Whakatōhea.

<sup>66</sup> Rūaimoko: Ko Rūaimoko, ko Rūaumoko tonu, ko te atua o te rū ki tā Te Whakatōhea.

*I te hinapōuri,  
Te tōnga rā.  
Te taka te mahara,  
I konā e tama,  
Ka tū ngā tira huri nui.  
Tō kiri raukura e,  
Ka pūhia e tēnei,  
Ka honoa koe,  
Ki te hono i wairua.  
Uira hiko noa,  
I runga i Te Kōwhai,  
Ko te tohu o te mate.  
I tuku atu ai,  
Tō matarau nui,  
Ka moea i te kino rā.  
E ruku e Piri i te awa,  
I Ōtara whakaea tama,  
Ngā ngaru taipua,  
I waho o Pākihi.  
Me whakakau koe i runga Maruhema,  
Mā te hau o te Pakipaki,  
Te taonga a te iwi e...*

### **5.3.5 He Ngeri**

Ko tēnei ngeri nā Te Whakatōhea mō ngā kairiritanga ōna ki a Ngāi Tai o Tōrere. I ngā whawhaitanga o Te Whakatōhea ki a Ngāi Tai e rua ngā hinganga o Te Whakatōhea me te nui o te mate o te tangata. Ka hanatū atu a Te Whakatōhea ki te tohunga o Te Whakatōhea ko Punahāmoa te kauaka o te Atua pakanga o Te Whakatōhea, ko Tama-i-waho. Nā Punahāmoa i tohutohu me whakamate katoa ngā uri pākūhā i moe i a Ngāi Tai, hai whakamārie i te Atua i a Tama-i-waho. Nā ka patupatua katoatia kia mate. I hinga nui a Ngāi Tai i te pakanga ki Te Te Ahitarakihi. Ko te kupu a te atua a Tama-i-waho ko te patunga whakamutunga mā Te Whakatōhea i muri mai o te pakanga he hī ika. Ka hinga a Ngāi Tai ka whāia atu ana e Te Whakatōhea ki Tōrere atu ana. Anā ka tahuri atu te ope o Te Whakatōhea ki te hī ika, ka mau noa te kahawai ka tapaea atu ki te Atua. Ka kīa tērā whakauenga riri ko Te Ahitarakihi. Ka puta anō i tēnei ngeri ngā kōrero tapu nui mō ngā iwi e rua; mō Ngāi Tai, mō Te Whānau-a-Apanui

mai i te hekenga nui o ngā waka i a Ngātoroirangi i ōna tūtohu whenua tapu, nāna i tapa, i tapu ai.

*Koua pau tonu mai koe i mua  
I ērā whakauenga riri āu,  
I te puta i Te Arapōpō,  
I mate ai a Tama-i-hāroa-te-rangi.  
Koua kī noa koe, koua tangi noa koe,  
Ka heke koe ki Whakatāne,  
Ko Ruatākenga rā tēnā.  
Ka kīa Tōrere kia nōhia,  
Kia pēnei ake hoki,  
Rokohanga mai e tō tūtae,  
Waiho e Ngātoroirangi te huki o te pakakē,  
Ka maka ki te wai ki Tōrere.  
Koia rā te kōpura iwirau e tipu rā,  
I te rae o Mate-tino-tangata.  
He aha he kai māhau ki reira?  
Kai nui tonu māhau, e ko te rau o Hūnā,  
Ka kapi ngā pūtahi kai e te Pahīpoto,  
I a Te Rangi-ka-wehea.  
Hoki kē mai koe ki Ōhiwa ki Te Tamāhine-a-Te-Whakatōhea,  
E noho rā i te Wai-kaukau,  
A tō tipuna a Tai-tūtia.  
Kia whakataukī ai e Hape,  
E rua! E rua! Ko Tukua-o-te-rangi,  
E rua! E rua! Ko Rongo-mai-ā-Io.  
Tē riro tohu ki ngā kai,  
O te kāinga o Maruiwi.  
I whakataukī ai a Tāpuikākahu,  
“Te kai hoki i Waiaua”.  
He whare moenga mōu, mō te tangata,  
He kumenga kupenga ki te ākau,  
Ka rua o kāinga e te whitiwhiti,  
Kei te Rāhori, kai te Awahou.  
Kai hea koe e Hikitaia?  
Hai tohu kia kitea,*

*Kia hōmai rā ōu matenga,  
Mōu mō te tangata.  
E te Tokawhakaēa,  
Te rākau whana kai te rua,  
Ko te tohu o te tangata,  
I maka noa ki te whanga takoto ai,  
Hai kaupapa mō Te Riri-a-te-atua  
Te puta ki te Ahi-tarakihi,  
Kia hinga iho ana ko Te Wahangū, ko Te Tawiri-o-te-rangi.  
Tau rawa iho te rākau ki te whare,  
Ka pā te rimu ki Ō-Pou, ki te taumatua,  
Ka tika te rauwhaitanga,  
O te ika o te kupenga a te Pāua.  
He hao nā te ngākau,  
Kia tangohgia wareatia e koe,  
E ko te ika kapakapa nui a Tūmatauenga,  
Whati manunu te tauru o te rākau,  
Whati manomano ki roto te kakī,  
Tē taea te tūtaki.  
Kau tango, kau mai,  
Te ariki o te kauika a Tamakore.  
Ka whara ka pā ki muri te wahine,  
Tāu whakauenga e Hape,  
Riro rawa ngā koroahu nui,  
Tieki o Tūhanaia ko te kamo kino.  
No mua ngā kī waiho i roto,  
Tūtaki rawa mai ki te rangi o te kakari,  
Nau mai haere te tira haurangi a Tama-maiki-whenua,  
Ā he poupourangi te taru nāna i hōmai ki te riri,  
Nā te waha i kī, nā te ringa i paepae,  
Kūrei tō waha!  
E tata te kī, e tata te tangi,  
Auē taukurī e!  
Te tika te huanui,  
Haramai ki te kāinga,  
Heke ki te ngū, ki te ngē, ki te repo,  
E i ki te mate noa iho e...*

Kua kuramahora i tā te tohunga whakamakaurangi i ōna pātaka mōteatea ki tā nehe kōrero; tūtohu whenua, whakapapa, kupu whakarite, kīwaha, whakatauāki, reo taketake nō Te Whakatōhea. Kua mārama te kitea o te tohungatanga o rātou mā ki tō rātou nā taiao ki te whakairo kōrero. Tō rātou tohungatanga ki te whakatakoto kōrero me te whakawhāiti i ō rātou whakaaro ki te itinga o te kupu. Ko reira kua noho ngā mōteatea hai wānanga mā te iwi, hai rangakuratanga māna kia mōhio ai ia ki a ia anō, ko wai ia, nā wai ia, nō hea ia? He whare wānanga ēnei mōteatea hai whakarauora i te iwi kua raupatutia tōna ao, ōna whenua, ōna Atua, tōna reo, āna tikanga. Hai mauriohooho ngā mōteatea mō Te Whakatōhea, hai whakahoki mai i tōna mana Māori motuhake kia tū toherauriki anō a Te Whakatōhea..

### 5.3.6 Kapa Haka

Ko ngā hāererenga maitanga o te Whānau Rōera o Piritānia tētahi take nui o te whakatūtū kapa haka ki te whakangahau i a rātou, kia kite mai rātou i tō rātou iwi Māori, me tā te Māori kite i a rātou hoki.

Nō te tau 1901 ko te haerenga mai a te Tiuka me te Tatiata o Cornwall. I riro mā te Mema Pāremata a Timi Kara te pōhiri ki ngā iwi o te motu kia huihui atu ki runga o Rotorua ki te pōhiri me te whakangahau i te Tiuka me tana wahine ki ngā mahi kapa haka. Men, young and old, and even women, sought temporary employment to earn a few pounds to take them to the land of Waiariki, for the moment made doubly attractive by the projected visit of Royalty. Chants that emphasized the points of a weighty speech in the runanga house, short ditties that maidens carolled forth about the pa, war-songs that fired the hearts of warriors on the march—these were heard through the length and breadth of Te Ika-a-Maui, Maori poets vieing one with another to compose songs suitable for the occasion. Dainty fingers played deftly with raupo, and evolved the poi-ball. Old, scarred warriors waxed wrathful in heated debate over ancient wardances to be used in mimic warfare at Rotorua, the almost obsolete ‘peruperu’ that were wont to awake echoes in the New Zealand forests in the fighting-days of the past. Once more the Maori lived in the past. For a brief space the edge of the heavy curtain that screened it was raised, old memories revived, old chords were touched anew, and hearts thrilled and vibrated to the weird music of the dead ages.

Each tribe was careful to conceal the peculiarities of step and gesture on which it depended for success in the friendly competition with other tribes. And so, for nearly two weeks, the rehearsals went on. There was a babel of sounds, a constant repetition of ‘haka’ and song with fierce action, until every movement was perfect, and the choruses attained the highest possible

volume of sound. There was no tiring, no consideration for personal ailments and inconvenience; for was not the honour of a great tribe at stake? "In the article, The Maori gave his best (1953).



*Whakaahua 3: Te Arawa warriors performing a haka at Rotorua during the 1901 visit of the Duke and Duchess of Cornwall and York, ko te mana whakaae Alexander Turnbull Library.*

...it was the visit by the Duke and Duchess of Cornwall and York (later King George V and Queen Mary in 1901 that inspired a cultural competition among the various tribes (Gardiner, W. 2001. p.70). Nō te takiwā o ngā pakanga nunui o te ao i nui ai te whanaketanga o te mahi kapa haka, te take i nui ai anō hoki ngā mahi tito waiata. The 1920's to the 1940's were vital years in the development of Kapa Haka. The period during the World Wars saw a flood of compositions to farewell soldiers, to support the war effort in their absence, and eventually welcome them home (Hill, D. 2004. p. 45).

Ko Tā Apirana Ngata tētahi i puta nui āna titonga waiata i te Pakanga Tuatahi o te Ao. Ko "*Karangatia rā*". tētahi o āna waiata e waiata tonutia ana i ēnei rā nei.

Ngata popularised the action song (waiata-ā-ringa), and wrote many songs of this sort. He translated popular European songs of the time into te reo Māori, and also set original Māori words to well-known dance tunes. '*Karangatia rā*' was originally written to welcome surviving

members of the Māori contingent home from the First World War, and also paid tribute to parliamentarian Wī Pere, who died in 1915 (Royal, 2014).

*Karangatia rā, karangatia rā,  
Pōwhiritia rā,  
Ngā iwi o te motu.  
Ngā mano tini,  
Haere mai.  
He hui aroha,  
Mō ngā hōia,  
Ngau nei te aroha me te Mamae.  
Haere mai e ngā iwi,  
Haere mai e ngā toa,  
Nau mai te Kāwana,  
Ngā mana tiketike,  
Honoa mai te Aroha,  
Haere mai.  
Ngā ōhākī a ngā tūpuna,  
Ngau nei te aroha me te mamae,  
Nāu rā Wī Pere,  
Nāu rā e Māhaki,  
Wero ki taku uma,  
Titi rawa i te manawa,  
Oho ana te mauri, auē rā,  
Taonga tuku iho a ngā tūpuna,  
Ngau nei te aroha me te mamae, hī.*

Nā Apirana anō i akiaki te kuia rongonui i a Tuini Ngāwai o Te Whānau-ā-Ruataupare ki te tito i ngā waiata mō ngā hōia i haere ki te mura o te ahi.

As the Second World War began, Tuini returned to Tokomaru Bay, setting up and leading (in her strong contralto voice) Te Hokowhitu-a-Tu, a performing group whose work assisted Ngata in his recruiting efforts for the 28th New Zealand (Maori) Battalion (Kingi, 2000).

*Ngā iwi nui e,  
E tangi nei e...*

*Ngā marae e tū noa nei,  
Ngā maunga e tū noa nei,  
Aue! rā e tama mā,  
Te mamae te pouri e,  
E patu nei i ahau inā,  
E te Hokowhitu a Tū,  
Kia kaha rā,  
Kāti rā te hingahinga,  
Ki raro rā,  
Mā ngā whakaaro,  
Kei runga rawa,  
Hei arahi ki te ara,  
E tika ai,  
Whirinaki, whirinaki,  
Tātou katoa,  
Kia kotahi rā,  
Ngārimu auē,  
Ngā iwi nui e,  
E tangi nei e,  
(Kingi, 2000).*

### **Tēnei e te iwi te wā ki tō koutou whanaunga.**

I konei ka titiro ki ngā kapa haka ki roto o Te Whakatōhea. Ka titiro ake ki te whānautanga mai o ngā kapa haka i te wā o te pakanga tuarua o te ao, ka titiro ake ki ngā mahi kapa haka i tīmataria ake i roto i ngā tau o ngā ono tekau, ko Waioweka tērā, ko Ngā Pōtiki tēra, ko Ngāti Ira tērā, ko Te Whakatōhea tērā. Ko ngā kapa haka ēnei nāna nei i pupuri ai te mauri o tēnei mea te kapa haka ki roto o Te Whakatōhea. Ka rua ka titiro hoki ki te Delamere Cup; ko te mahi kapa haka tērā o roto i ngā kura tuatahi mai i Tihirau ki Te Waimana-kaaku. Ko te mahi kapa haka tēnei i whāngai i ngā uri o Te Whakatōhea ki āna kōrero, ki āna tikanga, ki ōna whakapapa, ki tōna reo, ki ngā kaupapa tōrangapū, ki ngā take o ērā wā.

Nō te wā o te pakanga tuarua o te ao i whakatūtū e ngā hapū ōna kapa haka. E ai ki a Hinehou Campbell, tētahi kuia nō Ngāti Rua o Te Whakatōhea; anā kua whakataetae rātou ki a rātou anō; ngā kapa haka, hapū ki te hapū. Kua mahi ngā kapa haka nei i ā rātou mahi konehete hai kohikohi moni ki te tuku ki ngā hōia i te mura o te ahi. Nā ēnei kapa haka hoki i pōhiri i ngā hōia i te hokinga mai i te pae o te pakanga ki te wā kāinga, ki runga o Ōmarumutu. He wāhine

te nuinga o ngā kaihaka i roto i ngā kapa haka; ko te take kē kua riro kē ngā tāne ki te whakauenga riri o te ao. Kua oti kē tēnei whakatauirā ake i te kapa a Tinirau, he wāhine katoa.



*Whakaahua 4: Ngāi Tamahauā hapū o Te Whakatōhea, ANZAC Day 1946, Ōpōtiki. Ko te mana whakaae, Dawn Hill.*

Nō te tau 1956 i tīmata ai tēnei kapa haka o Te Whakatōhea; ko Ngāpōtiki te ingoa. Ko te kaiako ko Rāwnia Rangi; ko tōna ingoa takakau ko Wehi, ko tana matua ko Te Wehi-o-te-rangi, ko tana kōkā ko Tārere. Hai whaea kēkē ki a Ngāpō Wehi.

He ringa kino nō Rāwinia ki te whakairo kupu, ki te tito waiata. He nui āna waiata e waiata tonutia ana e Te Whakatōhea me te motu. He toa anō a Rāwnia ki te haka me te mau taiaha. He tū tāne tāna. Ko ngā poupou o Ngāpōtiki ko Nehumoana (Ben) Gage, ko Kaaterina Maxwell. Ko ōna kaiāwhina ko Charlie rāua ko Phoebe Walker, ko Daisy Waterson. E ai ki a Skimpy Christie te hekeretari o Ngāpōtiki me te kaumātua o Ngāpōtiki kai te ora i ēnei rā; I was married in 1958 and I was already in Ngāpōtiki.

Ko te kāinga whakaharatau o Ngāpōtiki, ko Pākōhai, ki reira ngā whakaharatau i ia Rātapu. E ai ki a Mere Walker; We'd go into town from Waiaua on our big farm truck and go and pick up the Waterson whānau. Every Sunday night we'd go and steal buns from Noel's Bakery. Ko Hamuera Mitchell tētahi o ngā whakaruruhau o Ngāpōtiki. Anā, i tīmata a Ngāpōtiki ki te mahi konohete ki ngā wāhi puni (camping grounds) o Ōpōtiki i te tuatahi.

E ai ki a Skimpy Christie; When Waihīrere would go on the road they'd call in at Pākōhai and do a concert to support the establishment of Ngāpōtiki, they were just starting too. They had a relationship with Rāwinia. Once we got good then we started to enter competitions.

I whakataetae a Ngāpōtiki ki te WD & HO Willis Tabacco Cup ki Tauranga (Tauranga Cup), te Ōhope Cup ki Ōhope, ki ngā whakataetae hoki ki Rotorua me Ngāruawāhia. I te tau 1963 i wini i a Ngāpōtiki te Tauranga Cup, i tuarua ko Waioweka. E ai ki a Kawa Gage; It was Nanny Win (Rāwinia) and Kaa (Kaaterina) why Ngāpōtiki won. They changed things before they went on to the stage. Kaa sat in the crowd with her coat over her korowai. Dad (Ben Gage) did the wero, Nanny Win did the karanga and Kaa called from the crowd. Everyone was looking around to see who was calling, then Kaa took her coat off and walked on to the stage. You won!



*Whakaahua 5: Ngāpōtiki e whakataetae ana ki te WD & HO Wills Tabacco Cup ki Tauranga. Ko te mana whakaae, Skimpy Christie, Hekeretari o Ngāpōtiki.*

E ai ki a Kawa Gage; We had to give the Ōhope Cup back; it kept coming this way (Ngāpōtiki), my father said to give it back and we'd keep going to tautoko te kaupapa.

We didn't have TV, kapa haka was TV. Dad wrote the words on our blinds (curtains) and we'd sit there and sing. When he needed more songs he'd move to the next blind.

E ai ki a Danie Poihipi; I uru a Ngāpōtiki ki te New Zealand Polynesian Festival tuatahi i te tau 1972, i wini i a Ngāpōtiki te haka. I whakamoea a Ngāpōtiki i muri mai i te whetiwara i te tau 1972.

Ko te Delamere Cup he whataetae nui ki roto o Te Whakatōhea, Te Whānau-ā-Apanui, Ngāi Tai me Te Waimana-Kaaku Tūhoe mō ngā kura tuatahi. I tīmata tēnei whakataetae i te tau 1961 ki roto o Ōpōtiki kai reira e tū tonu ana.

Nā Takamoana Bill Delamere te taonga nei, te kapū. Ka hoatu nā e ia ki a Rāwinia Rangi. Ka haria te kapū ki te kuia mau moko o Kutarere ki a Te Onewhero ki te hōmai ingoa. Ka pātai te kuia nō hea te kapū, nā wai te kapū? Ka whakahokia, nā Bill Delamere. Ka whakahokia e te kuia; ‘Kāti, koinā te ingoa, anā, ko te Delemaere Cup tonu te ingoa i tēnei rā. Ko tā te kapū nei he whakaako i ngā tamariki kura tuatahi ki tēnei mea te kapa haka, ahakoa ko wai, ahakoa nō hea? Ko tāna he whakaako i ngā tamariki ki te reo me ngā tikanga, ki ngā hītōria, ki ngā whakapapa. Koira te Delamere Cup, he whakatipu, kaihaka, kaiako, kaitito, kaiwhakawā, kaiwhakahaere. Nō reira ko tā te kapū he whakatipu i ngā momo tāngata, he nui tāna mahi, he nui tāna wāriu ki te iwi ki te whakawhanake i a ia anō ā tangata, ā iwi, ā momo mahinga. Ko te Delamere Cup.



*Whakaahua 6: Delamere Cup. Ko te mana whakaae, Delamere Cup Committee.*

E ai ki a Bubby Kururangi; nō te tau 1963 i tīmata ai a Waioweka Youth Club i a Heeni Green. I Ngāpōtiki a Heeni me tana whānau, nā te pueatanga ake o tētahi kūrakuraku i haere ia ki Waioweka ki te whakatū i a Waioweka Youth Club. Ko ōna whakaruruhau ko Ngākohu Pera, ko Pani Kerehona, ko Maaka Paul he kaukoroua, he kaukuia ēnei ōna. Ko ōna maunga ko John Rangihau o Tūhoe, ko Hamu Mitchell o Te Arawa. I hari a Heeni i a Waioweka ki ngā Koroneihana o Kīngi Koroki i te 8 o Oketopa o ia tau me ngā Rā Koroneihana o Te Arikiniui Te Atairangikaahu i te 23 o Mei o ia tau. E ai ki a Bubby Kururangi kaitātiki o Waioweka ko te Koroneihana tuatahi i te tau 1963, i reira a Ōhau i a Irirangi Tiakiawa, a Ngāti Pōneke me Te

Waihīrere. I te haka tuatahitanga ko Hinetangi Coleman e 9 ana tau i roto e haka ana. He waewae rākau tōna, anā ka mau i ngā papa o te ātamira. Ka tonoa e Kīngi Korokī kia noho i tana taha.

I haere a Heeni me Waioweka Youth Club ki te Koroneihana ki te tautoko i te rangatira a Ngākohu. E ai ki a Hone Green e toru rā te wehenga o Ngākohu i mua i a Waioweka ki Waikato, anā te taenga atu ki Tūrangawaewae kua piki te koroua ki runga i te pahi ki te tāuhiuhi te tira ki te wai ki te tiaki i a rātou i ngā mana me ngā tapu o Waikato.

E ai ki a Ema Rogers ko te haerenga ki Ngāruawāhia ki te pūrei paheketepōro i te taha o te Karapū o te Ōpōtiki United i te taha o Waioweka, he hoa Pākehā kai roto i te tīma. Anā kua haere te koroua ki te tāuhiuhi i te wai, anā kua tūmeke ngā wāhine Pākeha, kua karanga ake; “Oh goodness gracious!” Kua karanga ake anō a Ngākohu; “Me spash ki te wai losa taniwha here, nor good.” Anā kua kata ngā Māori. E ai ki a Bubby Kururangi; “We would arrive at midnight and Waikato would pohiri us inside. We wouldn’t move, we’d say we were waiting for Nanny Kohu. So they’d go get the koroua. He’d give the water to Burt Huriwaka to sprinkle on us because it was too dark for Nany Kohu, he couldn’t see. So we’d hunch ourselves up because the water was too cold. We took Nany Kohu wherever we went. He and Te Kani from Waihīrere were it. We got the red carpet, when Nanny Kohu died, no more red carpet”.

Nō te Maehe o 1970 i pōhiritia a Waioweka Youth Club e te Mea o Toowoomba ki te haka i te 17th annual Carnival of the Flowers. When the invitation was issued the young, brightly costumed East Coast group were entertaining 140 Australian tourists at the Tamtekapua meeting house, Ohinemutu. Normally this would have been done by a Rotorua concert party but the Waioweka Club were testing themselves out in front of a large audience before performing for the Queen Mother on 30 April (New schools for old crafts, 1966. p. 10).



*Whakaahua 7: Waioweka Youth Club. Ko te mana whakaae, Tangaroa Christie, Heamana.*

I whakataetae anō a Waioweka ki ngā kapū whakataetae haka o mua noa atu, ko te Ōhope Cup me te WD & HO Wills Tabacco Cup ki Tauranga. He whakataetae nui te WD & HO Wills Tabacco Cup i tērā wā. E ai ki a Hone Green i whakataetae hoki a Te Irirangi Tiakiawa me tana kapa haka a Ōhau me Napi Waaka me tana kapa haka o Tāmaki ko Te Ātaahua me Pita Awatere me tana kapa haka.

Ka kite ake he kamupene tūpeka nāna i tautoko ā pūtea te whakataetae me te whakapoapoa i te iwi Māori ki te kaipaipa. He pai i ērā wā, engari i ēnei wā e korekore rawa e whakaae te kaipaipa i ēnei rā, kua auahikore ngā papa whakatū waewae.

Nō te 1972 i tū a Waioweka Youth Club ki te New Zealand Polynesian Festival tuatahi ki Rotorua, anā i tuatoru a Waioweka. E ai ki a Bubby Kururangi i mau a Heeni Green ki ngā ture me te titonga hōu, ngā mahinga katoatanga; anā i tērā tau kāore i mahi i te rakuraku, ko te waiata ā ringa me te poi kāore hoki he rakuraku. Ko tā rātou waiata ā ringa i tīkina atu ko te tiwha a Te Pou-o-Urutake nā Ūhia o Tūhoe. Te take i tīkina atu ai tērā mōteatea hai waiata ā ringa kai roto ngā kōrero mō te pakanga a Tūhoe ki a Te Whakatōhea. Ko Ōhui me Ōama e whakahuahuatia ake i roto i te mōteatea he whenua ngā mea e rua kai Terere pā, kai te rohe o Ngāti Ngahere ki roto o Te Whakatōhea. He mōteatea e kaha nui te waiatatia ki roto o Te Whakatōhea i ēnei rā tonu.

*Whakarongo! Whakarongo rā te taringa ki te hau taua e hau mai nei, kai te tai, kai te uru.*

*Hurihia, hurihia ki muri ki tō tuarā tīkina taku ika  
ki waho i te Moana-nui-ā-Kiwa te takoto mai nei.*

*He koronga nōku kia tae au ki ngā uru kahika ki Ōhui, ki Ōama.  
Kia kata noa mai te kīkīhitara kōtipatipa kōhurehure kīkihi pounamu, e tangi ana ki tōna  
whenua ka tipuria nei e te māheuheu. Tangi kau ana te mapū e.*

Ko tēnei waiata ā ringa i waiatatia i te Koroneihana o Te Arikini Te Ata-i-rangi-kaahu i te 23 o Mei 1973. Ko te tau tēnei i whakatūwheratia ai a Kimiora te puna o te ora ki Tūrangawaewae marae, Ngāruawāhia. He waiata tangi hoki tēnei mō Ngākohu Pera te ariki o Te Whakatōhea i mate i tērā tau 1971. Ko Ngākohu te kaumātua o Te Hāhi Ringatū i tōna matenga. One of the oldest and most noted orators, he claimed to be the oldest surviving member of the Ringatū Church. He had been a follower of the prophet Rua, and could recall the 1886 eruption of Mt Tarawera, and the days he served food to the famous Te Kooti (Haere ki o koutou tipuna, 1971).

Nā Heeni Green ngā kupu, ko te rangi he rangi pākeha Il Silenzio. Ko te ingoa o te waiata, Ata e:

*Āta e  
I karere mai tō pōhiri,  
Ki a au ki te Tairāwhiti,  
Me mihi atu ki a koutou,  
Auē, auē  
Pūrehurehu noa rā te iwi  
Ātairangi ngā mahara  
Kua eke mai ki runga  
Tūrangawaewae e  
Mahinārangi e  
Te whare nei  
Kia ora rā  
Ngākohu e koro, e koro  
Takoto mai i tō moenga roa  
Kāore kōrua Te Puea  
E kite te whare Kimiora  
Tū pani noa ahau e koro e  
Me pēhea taku tū i tēnei rā  
Aua atu ngā kōrero  
Mehemea i konei koe  
Tangihia! Tangihia! Tangihia!  
Auē*

Nō te tau 1982 i huri te ingoa o Waioweka Youth Club ki a Waioweka Nui A Kiwa. He roa nō Heeni rāua ko Hone Green e noho ana ki roto o Tāmaki i huri te ingoa kia tō mai i ngā tāngata me ngā iwi nō waho atu o te rohe o Te Whakatōhea ki roto i te kapa nei. Koirā te take i huri ai te ingoa ki a Waioweka Nui A Kiwa. Nō te tau 1984 i uru ahau ki roto o Waioweka-Nui-A-Kiwa kapa haka. I auau te hokihoki atu a Waioweka ki ngā Koroneihana i te wā i a Kīngi Korokī tatū iho ki te wā i Te Arikini Te Atairangikaahu. I whakataetae mātou i te tau 1984 ki te koroneihana, anā i wini i a Waioweka Nui A Kiwa te whakataetae ko te taonga mō te katoa ko Te Panekiretanga te ingoa. Anā nō te tau 1986 i uru a Waioweka Nui A Kiwa ki te Whakataetae ā Rohe tuatahi o te rohe o Mātaatua i tū ki roto o Te Whakatōhea ki te whare pikitia ko te Ōpōtiki Delux Theatre. Anā, he pakupaku nō te whare pikitia, ka whakataetae tuatahi ki mua ki ngā kaiwhakawā, anā ka makere mai ka hanatū ki te Kāreti o Ōpōtiki ka whakangahau i te overflow ki reira. Ko te hakatanga tuaruatanga ki te Kāreti te mea papai, he ngahau, kāore hoki i whakawāngia. Anā i toa ko Waioweka Nui A Kiwa, i tuarua ko Ekepī nō Ngāti Awa, anā, i tuatoru ko Te Whānau-a-Apanui. Ko ngā kapa i haere ai ki Ōtautahi ki te New Zealand Polynesian Festival i te tau 1986 ko Waioweka Nui A Kiwa, ko Ekepī, ko Te Whānau-a-Apanui. Tekau mā whā ngā kapa i tū ki te whakataetae tuatahi o te rohe o Mātaatua, i haramai i Tokoroa rā anō me Tūhoe ki Waikato. Ko te tau 1988 te tau whakamutunga i whakataetae te kapa haka o Waioweka Nui A Kiwa, anā nō muri tata iho i whakamoea.

I whakakotahitia ngā kapa haka o Te Whakatōhea i te tau 1969 ki te pōhiri i Te Kāwana Tianara a Sir Arthur Porritt, koia te Kāwana Tianara tuatahi nō Niu Tīreni, anā i whānau mai i Aotearoa. Ko ngā kaiako o Te Whakatōhea ko Ruihā (Nancy) Peka nō Te Whakatōhea rāua ko John Rangihau. Ki Waitangi ko Ben Gage te kaiwero. E ai ki a Kawa Gage ko Pani Kerehona te kaikaranga. Nanny Pani did the karanga. Waioweka did the poi, Ngāpōtiki did the action song and the men combined to do the haka. The performance was like a wave, each group taking turns.



*Whakaahua 8: Ko Te Whakatōhea e pōhiri ana i te Kāwana Tianara i a Sir Arthur Porritt ki Waitangi 1969. Ko te mana whakaae, Kawa Gage.*

I muri mai i a Waioweka me Ngāpōtiki kua tū anō he kapa haka, pēnei i a Ngāti Ira me Te Whakatōhea, hoi anō he harore rangitahi nō ēnei kapa haka. There are a number of other kapa haka that I remember vividly from 1972. One was Waioeka who gained third place at the festival. This rōpū was from Whakatohea. Its movements and actions, as well as strength of singing, was very reminiscent of a rōpū, Ngā Pōtiki. At the introduction of the Festival the North was not yet a separate rohe but instead competed in the Auckland regional competitions. Ngā Pōtiki, led by one of their tūpuna, Rawinia Rangī. I had seen the rōpū, Ngā Pōtiki, perform at Founders' Theatre, in Hamilton, in the 1960s. When I watch the current rōpū from that area, Ōpōtiki mai Tawhiti, perform, I am reminded how identity is linked to genes, as their styles, though decades apart, are reminiscent of their ancestors who performed in Ngā Pōtiki in the sixties. Ōpōtiki mai Tawhiti though is certainly in the business of developing a new modern Māori identity. It is constantly testing its own boundaries when it prepares its repertoire by being committed to maintaining their Whakatōhea traditions while always creating new and innovative performances that are indicative of the change in the make-up of the iwi in terms of town versus city experiences (Papesch, 2015, p. 42-143).

Koinei tētahi matapihi ki te whakapapa o te haka ki roto o Te Whakatōhea. Ko tā te kapa haka kāhore i tino rerekē ake i tāna o ēnei rā; he pupuri i ngā kōrero a te iwi ko tōna whakapapa, ko tōna reo, ko tāna tū, ko āna kupu, ko ngā kōrero o te wā; o nehe, o taua wā. Ko te pupuri i te reo me te iwi ki tōna Māoritanga tētahi tino kaupapa o ngā tau 50 ki ngā 70. Ko tā te kapa haka he mahi whakamānawa i tōna ahurea ki te iwi, ki te hāpori Māori mai, Pākehā mai, ki Aotearoa me te ao whānui hoki. Ko te mahi kapa haka he oranga nui mō te hauora, hinengaro, tinana me te taha wairua o te iwi. Ko te mahi kapa haka he mahi moni hoki hai oranga mō te iwi. Koia rā

hoki ngā kaupapa o tēnei wā hoki i roto i te mahi kapa haka ki roto o Te Whakatōhea; ki roto i te kapa haka o Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti hoki.

#### 5.4 Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti

I roto i tēnei wāhanga ka titiro ki te kapa haka nei a Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti. Ka titiro ki ngā kōrero mō Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti, ko tōna ōrokohanga mai, me ngā kōrero mōna tae noa mai ki tēnei wā. Ka tūhura i tōna kaupapa me ōna mātāpono mō Te Whakatōhea me ōna uri. Tuatoru ka whakatakoto i ngā tikanga a Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti, ko tāna whai i ngā tikanga a Te Ringatū a Te Kooti Arikirangi hai tāhuhū mō tōna whare.



Whakaahua 9: Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti, Te Whakataetae ā Rohe o Mātaatua, Te Teko, 2016. Ko te mana whakaae Ōpōtiki mai Tawhiti.

Ko te waiata e whai ake nei i titoa e te kairangakura, e Te Kahautu Maxwell mō Hikairo te mokopuna tuatahi a Kīngi Pōtatau Te Wherowhero VII hai whakanui i a ia i te mea ko Hikairo te tatau ki Te Kīngitanga, ki Te Hāhi Ringatū hoki, anā i tūātia ki roto hai Ringatū. Ko te kairangakura hoki i tohua e te Kīngi Māori, e Kīngi Tūheitia Pōtatau Te Wherowhero VII ko ia hai whakaruruhau (Godfather) mō tana mokopuna a Hikairo. He oriori tēnei waiata, engari he waiata tira. Ko ngā kupu mai i roto i te oriori Pinepine te kura hoki me te oriori a Tūhotoariki mō Tūteremoana kua rauhi ki roto i tēnei oriori mō Hikairo Neil Kamelehiwahiwaokalaninuiākea Paki

Ko te take o te oriori ki konei hai oriori i a Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti ki roto ki te tuhikura nei.

**Waiata Tira : E tama Hikairo**

*He hōnore he kororia he maungārongo ki runga i te whenua, he whakaaro pai ki ngā tāngata*

*katoa. Āmine*

*He tamaiti ahau nā tōku pāpā,*

*He mea mate nui ahau nā tōku māmā,*

*Korōria ki tō ingoa tapu,*

*Āmine.*

*Nau mai e tama kia mihi atu au,*

*I haramai koe i te kunenga mai o te tangata,*

*Te toi ki Hawaiki,*

*Ki te whai ao, ki te ao mārama.*

*E tama Hikairo,*

*Haere mai rā,*

*Nō Runga-Rawa koe,*

*Nō te mana o te Kīngi Tūheitia,*

*Nā Rangi-Tū koe,*

*Nā Te Kotahitanga,*

*Nā Tāne rawa koe,*

*Te wehi o te tapu,*

*Te mana o te ihi.*

*Tuia ō waka, ngā maunga o ngā iwi,*

*mana Māori motuhake,*

*I te maru o Ihowā o Ngā Mano.*

*E tama Hikairo,*

*Haere mai rā,*

*Ko Te Kura roa koe i whanake,*

*Ko Te Kura nā Tūhaepō,*

*Te Mokopuna a Te Motū.*

*Pinepine te kura,*

*Hau te kura,*

(Waiata Tira: E tama Hikairo, Te Kahautu Maxwell, i hakaina ki Te Matatini, 2015)

#### **5.4.1 Ko wai a Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti**

Ko Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti he kapa haka nā Te Whakatōhea, nō te taone o Ōpōtiki me ōna hapū katoa. I tangohia mai tōna ingoa i te punawai a Tarawa mō ana pōtiki, nāna i ārahi ia i Hawaiki ki Aotearoa; ko Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti. The members of the group; they are a whanau whereby the majority are made up of members from the various hapū of Whakatōhea, many of whom are related either through whakapapa or marriage (Hill, 2004, p. 66).

Nō te 1pm o te 29th o Hānuere o te tau 1995 i whānau mai a Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti. Ko te kōrero o te whakatū kapa haka mō Te Whakatōhea i tīmata ki te tangihanga o Te Wairēmana Taia ki Terere Pā i te marama o Tīhema i te tau 1994 i a Te Kahautu Maxwell me Te Hererīpene Dawn Hill. He aronga nui ki te rangatahi o Te Whakatōhea o tērā wā pēnei te manu kaewa kāore e mōhio ko hea te tauranga mōna, ahakoa he tūrangawaewae, kāore he tūrangawaewae i te mea kua raupatutia, ōna kōrero kua kore, tōna reo kua kore, tōna tuakiri kua kore, he mahi kore, korekore kore rawa atu. I matapakitia ko te waka hai waka whakarauora i te iwi, i te kāhui manu e pōkaikaha ana i ngā tairo a Kupe.

Ko te take i kōrerotia; ko te tau o muri atu 1995 kua tū ngā Whakataetae ā Rohe ki roto o Te Whakatōhea, anā kua whakamoea katoatia ngā kapa haka kaumātua o Te Whakatōhea.

... amid concerns about the wellbeing of the iwi and, particularly, of the rangatahi. It was observed that there was a general lack of self-esteem among the young people, as well as a diminished capacity to support the paepae of the various marae. Kapa Haka had been an integral part of the Whakatōhea way of life for many decades. A hui was called to discuss the idea of forming a kapa haka to revive the waiata and haka of former generations. At the hui on January 25 1995, it was decided that establishing a kapa haka was imperative for two reasons: firstly, to provide a vehicle for Whakatōhea people, particularly rangatahi, to learn their histories and language; secondly, to ensure the mana of Whakatōhea was upheld at the Mataatua Regional Kapa Haka competition to be held later that year, which Whakatōhea would be hosting. The name of the kapa was also decided at that hui. In keeping with the consensus that the group belonged to the community, it was agreed that ‘Ōpōtiki-mai-tawhiti’, the full name of Ōpōtiki township, was an appropriately name, one that reflected inclusiveness and the diversity of all those who had made Ōpōtiki their home (Hill, 2004. pp. 64-65).

Ko Johnny Riini Kūrei tētahi anō mana nui i tū ai a Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti. Nāna i karanga te hui tuatahi i te 29th o Hānuere 1995 ki Terere Pā. Nāna i whakakao te iwi kia hui ki Terere. Ko tāna kē he whakaharatau kai Terere i te 1pm o taua rā me tana kī ki te iwi nāku kē i karanga. Kātahi tana haramaitanga ki te whākoakoa mai ki ahau i aha ia. Ka ohore ahau. Waimaria i roto ahau i te akoranga; Waiata ā Ringa a Dr Te Rita Papesch i Te Whare Wānanga o Waikato, ā he tito waiata te mahi. Waimaria e rua aku waiata. Ka rere atu ahau ki te whare o Richard Mitai he tohunga ki te tīra i te rakuraku me te whakamahi i a ia ki te tīra i taku waiata; Taku Mounga Tiketike, he waiata whakanui i te reo Māori. Anā i noho tērā hai poi mā Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti. Ko te huinga o te iwi i taua hui tuatahi kai tōna rima tekau tāngata, kaumātua mai, pakeke mai, taitamariki mai, mokopuna mai. Anā ka whanau mai ko Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti, ko te kupu i tinana, i tinana ko te kupu. Anā, i whakaharatau mō te iwa marama. Kāore a Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti i pīrangi kia kuhu noa iho ki te whakakīkī tūranga, engari he kuhu ki te tūrakiraki i ngā kapa katoa, ahakoa rei puta, rei toa ko rātou katoa hai whakangaunga mō te toki o Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti. I tū te Whakataetae ā Rohe o Mātaatua i te marama o Hepetema, 1995.

Ka huri ngā kuia ki te whakairo tauira mō ngā pari, tīpare me ngā piupiu. Anā nā Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti i maurioho ai i ngā pūkenga o ngā tohunga o Te Whakatōhea mō te mahi tāniko, mahi piupiu, mahi korowai. Anā kua whai mahi ngā kaumātua ki te hāpai i te iwi, i ā rātou tamariki, mokopuna. Ko te whakakākahu i a rātou ki ō nehe pueru, ko te tuku iho i ō rātou pūkenga ki ēnei mahi ki ngā uri whakatipu, ko te tapahi harakeke, ko te hāro, ko te miro harakeke. Anā, he taonga tuku iho. Kua whakaara ake nei te iti i roto i te puehu, kua whakateitei ake nei te rawakore i roto i te pūranga paru.

For their first ever performance on the competitive stage, at the 1995 Mataatua Regionals, Ōpōtiki-mai-tawhiti placed 2nd overall. That earned them the right to represent Mataatua at the 1996 Aotearoa Traditional Māori Performing Arts Festival in Rotorua, where they placed 11th from a pool of 36 teams (Hill, 2004. p. 65). The group has qualified for the biennial national competition (now Te Matatini) ever since. While the many achievements of the kapa at regional and national level are a source of pride, the growth and development of individuals, whānau, hapū and the iwi through Kapa Haka is considered more significant (Hill, 2004. p. 65).

Nō roto mai i ōna 23 tau kua tū a Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti hai wānanga mō Te Whakatōhea. Ānō he whatinga nō te ngaru e kore e mutu, timu atu, pari mai, ko tēnā whakatipuranga, ko tēnā whakatipuranga ka haramai, ka kuhu mai, ka haka mai. Nōnātata ake nei kua pari mai ko te ngaru mokopuna, ka whakapātaritari he tūranga ki ō rātou mātua, kaumātua hoki. Ko tā te Kura Roa nei he tuku iho i ngā kōrero tuku iho, i ngā taonga tuku a kui mā, a koro mā, a tuaukiuki mā.

Members talked about the evolution of Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti from primarily being a haka group to becoming more of a ‘kura’ or ‘wānanga’ where all the elements of building cultural capital - tikanga, te reo, tribal kōrero and history, and the Hāhi Ringatū, combine to facilitate the intergenerational transmission of knowledge. The Hāhi is employed as a strategy to revitalise te reo, tikanga and the teachings of the Ringatū faith; simultaneously, the haka training facilitates the revitalisation of ritual practices that can be utilised on the marae (Te Huawai Pārae report page 41).



*Whakaahua 10: He tuku mātauranga i tēnā whakatipuranga ki tēnā whakatipuranga . Ngā mokopuna a Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti, Terere Pā, 2019. Ko te mana whakaae, Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti .*

#### **5.4.2 Whakaara ake nei te iti i roto i te puehu (Tōna Kaupapa)**

Ko te tāhuhu me te papa o Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti ehara kau i te kapa haka anake, ahakoa i kōrerotia i runga ake nei te kaupapa i whakatūngia ko te Whakataetae ā Rohe o Mātaatua 1995.

Ko te whakataetae tonu te whāinga i te ōrokofīmatanga ake. Ae. I kitea ake mai i tōna tīmatanga ko te tokomaha he kore mahi, i runga penihana, tokoiti i whai tohu mātauranga. Ko te kore mōhio ki te kōrero i te reo Māori engari anō ngā tikanga me te noho marae, ae he mōhio i te mea he iwi noho marae ngā uri o Te Whakatōhea kai te noho ki te wā kāinga. He whakamā nō ngā uri i te mea he pōhara, he māuiui, he porohaurangi, he kai taru kino te noho a te iwi, te ao o te iwi Ae, ko ētahi tokoiti kua whai mahi pai, ko te hunga waimaria. Ko ētahi tokoiti kua eke ki ngā taumata teitei i te mātauranga me ngā tūranga nunui o roto i ngā pākihi nunui. Kua whai kē i te ahurea o ngā kēnge ki roto o Ōpōtiki. Ko ngā tikanga whakarere iho o tērā ko te mate hinengaro, ko te tūkino wāhine, ko te tūkino tamariki tērā. He tipuranga atu, he tipuranga atu koinei te tā moko ki runga ki a Te Whakatōhea.

I kite ake anō rā kua noho pōhara ngā pae tapu, kua tokoiti ngā pūkōrero, kākā tarahae, kua pae nekeneke. He pērā anō ngā kaikaranga me ngā kaiwaiata. Kua korekore ngā mōteatea, ka auau te waiata ko aua waiata anō rā. He aha ai kua matemate te hunga matatau, ngā tohunga o te iwi. Nā te tokoiti kua kawea ko ngā mōteatea e mōhio ana e te nuinga kua whakatahangia ērā atu, kia ngāwari ai ki te iwi pupuri i ngā pae tapu, i te kawa, i ngā tikanga a Te Whakatōhea.

Ko tāku e whakapae nei ka hoki ēnei mate ki te raupatutanga o te whenua o Te Whakatōhea. Raupatu whenua, raupatu tikanga, raupatu kōrero ōnehe, raupatu reo, raupatu ahurea, raupatu hinengaro. Raupatu.

#### **5.4.3 Whakateitei ake nei te rawakore i roto i te pūranga paru (Āna Tikanga)**

Nō roto i ngā tau e rua tekau mā whā kua noho ko Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti hai momo wānanga mō te iwi. He wānanga whakarauora i te ngākau, hinengaro, tinana, tikanga, karakia, Ringatū, paetapu, paekaranga, paemōteatea, reo o Te Whakatōhea. He wānanga anō i mirimiri, i whakapoapoa i te hinengaro me te ngākau o te tangata ki tōna reo Māori. He wānanga anō i tautokona, i āki i te iwi ki te whai i te mātauranga hai hiki anō i tana āhua noho ki roto i te ao nei, mōna tonu, mō tana whānau, mō ana tamariki, mokopuna hoki. He wānanga hoki i huri ai te whakaaro o te tangata ki te whai mahi. Ehara i te mea i matakitehia tēnei, engari he āhuatanga i whānau mai i te roanga ōna e haere ana, ko Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti.

He aha i kīa ai he wānanga a Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti? Ko te iwi kai te kī he wānanga, ko ngā mema o Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti kai te kī he wānanga, ko te rangatahi kai te kī he wānanga. E kī ana he wānanga i te mea ko tāna he wānanga i a Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti ki a ia anō mā roto mai i ngā titonga waiata, haka, poi, mahinga a te kapa haka ka rūmakina te iwi ki te hōhonutanga o te kōrero, o te tapu, ki tōna anō ao, nōnamata, tūmata, anamata hoki. He wānanga ki ōna Atua, ki ōna waka, ki ōna ariki, ki ōna toa, ki ōna tīpuna, ki ōna whakapapa, ki ōna kōrero, ki tōna kawa, ki tōna rohe, ki ōna tūtohu whenua, ki āna karakia, ki āna mōteatea, ki āna tikanga, ki tōna iwi ki a Te Whakatōhea.

Ko tēnei wānanga ehara i te mea nō te wāhi kotahi, nō te whare kotahi, e kao, nō te iwi kē, nō reira ko tōna ahi tapu, ahi kōmau kai ngā marae katoa, ngā hapū katoa o te iwi. Ka huri, ka huri, ka huri, wiki atu, marama atu, tau atu, tau atu kia rongō a Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti i te hā o tōna rohe, kia wānanga i ngā kōrero e pā ana ki ōna marae whare, ki ōna maunga tapu, awa tapu, kōawaawa, māra kai, ōna tīpuna otirā kia tae ā tinana ki ngā takahanga o ngā mātua, tīpuna. He wā tōna kua puta ki waho atu anō i a ia ki roto ki ngā marae o ōna whaunga ki roto o Ngāi Tai, ki roto o Ngāti Awa, Tūwheretoa ki Kawerau. He take anō ka tae ki ērā marae, ko te whakapapa me he kaupapa rānei kai tērā takiwā ka tautokona e te kapa nei pēnei i ngā Poukai ki roto o Te Pahīpoto, ki runga o Kōkōhīnau ki roto o Te Teko. Ia tau, ia tau ka hanatū a Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti ki Ngāti Awa ki Rangitaiki ki te tautoko i te Poukai o runga i a Te Pahīpoto ki Kōkōhīnau Marae. He kaupapa tēnei hai whakaū i ngā herenga whakapapa o Te Whakatōhea ki a Ngāti Awa, otirā ki Te Kīngitanga. Ko te Poukai o Kōkōhīnau i tēnei wā tonu i raro i a Kīngi Tūheitia Pōtatau Te Wherowhero VII me te kī a Hēmana Eruera te rangatira o Te Pahīpoto, te tama a Eruera Mānuera, ko tērā poukai hai poukai mō Mātaatua waka whānui.

Tau atu, tau atu ka tau atu ai a Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti ki te tautoko i ngā Koroneihana. He tauira tēnei kua oti kē te tauira mai rā anō i ngā mātua, tīpuna ko Rangiriri tērā, ko Ōrākau tērā, i ngā koroneihana o Kīngi Korokī ko Ngā Pōtiki me Waioweka Youth Club me Waioweka Nui A Kiwa ērā. Ko Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti hoki anake te kapa haka i pōhiritia e Kīngi Tūheitia Pōtatau Te Wherowhero VII hai kapa haka whakangahau mō tana huri tau ono tekau i tū ki Waahi Paa ki roto o Rāhui Pōkeka i te tau 2015. Otirā he whakapūmau tēnei i te whakapapa o Te Whakatōhea ki a Tainui waka, ki a Tōrerenuiārua, te mātāmua a Hoturoa ariki o te waka o Tainui.

He wāhanga tēnei o te rautaki whakarauora, whakapūmau i te tuakiri o Te Whakatōhea, mai i roto i ngā pōkaikaha, i ngā pōtatutatu o ngā tau 1865-1866. He whakahauora i a Te Whakatōhea iwi, i a Te Whakatōhea tangata me tōna mana Māori motuhake. Te Reo

*Nei rā te kaupapa ko te reo Māori e*

*He taonga tuku iho nā ngā tīpuna  
Hei parekawakawa, hei mea hirahira e  
Tōku reo, tōku ohoo, māpihi maurea, whakakai marihi...*  
(Te Tawhiro Māxwell rāua ko Te Okeroa Huriwaka). Waiata

E ai ki a Ahorangi Tā Tīmoti Kāretū ko te reo Māori te āhuatanga kotahi e mōhiotia ai koe he Māori inā whakaritea atu ki ētahi atu iwi. Kua kōrero kētia i te tīmatatanga o Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti torutoru noa iho o te kapa haka i matatau ki te reo Māori, ko tōna tokoono i āhei ki te kōrero i te reo Māori. He mate tuku iho tēnei nā te raupatu. Ko te nuinga o ngā mema o te kapa haka i te tīmatatanga kua taipakeke kē, kua mutu noa atu te kura, kāore i whai wāhi ki te kōhanga reo, ki te kura kaupapapa Māori me te wharekura hoki. Nō muri kē mai ēnei whare whakarauora i te reo i te kuranga o ngā tautōhito o Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti.

Kāore i rerekē i ētahi atu iwi te take i kore i akotia te reo ki ngā mātua, tīpuna, ae ko te rautaki a tauwiwi ki te whakapākehā i te iwi Māori tērā me te raupatu i te whenua. Nā runga i tēnei kāore hoki ngā mātua me ngā tīpuna i whakatipu i ā rātou tamariki, mokopuna ki te reo Māori. Nā i pēra a Te Whakatōhea. Nā konei he pae nekeneke tōna, kāore e nui te hunga i pakeke mai i roto i te reo, e matatau hoki rānei ki te reo. Nā konei i pēnei ai te tokoiti o te hunga i matatau ki te reo i te tīmatatanga o Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti. Ko te ara i whāia, kai te whāia tonutia ko Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti. Ko te mea nui kē hoki kua kite ahau me whai mahere rautaki. Kāore he rautaki a Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti i te mea tuatahi ko wai hoki ahau e mōhio i tērā wā tae noatia tēnei rā e rua tekau mā whā ki muri nei kai te haere tonu a Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti.

I roto i ngā tau e rua tekau mā whā nei kua kite ahau i te pūāwaitanga o te reo. Tuatahi ko ngā tautōhito i haere ki te whai i Te Ātārangi, i Te Ara Reo i tahuri hoki ki te rūmaki i a rātou ki ngā mahi a Te Whakatōhea, ko te take koirā ngā wāhi e rongohia ai te reo, arā ko ngā hui ērā, ko ngā Rā a Te Hāhi Ringatū ērā, ko ngā tangihanga ērā, ko te noho ki ngā rekereke o ngā kaumātua tērā, arā atu anō, arā atu anō. Ko te take i pērā ai rātou, te tahuri ki te reo nā te mahi kapa haka, kia mārama rātou ki ngā kaupapa me te tāhuhu o ngā waiata me ā rātou kōrero ā iwi, hītōria. I kaha anō hoki te tuku i ā rātou tamariki, mokopuna ki te kōhanga reo, ki ngā kura whai rūma rūmaki, ki ngā kura kaupapa Māori, ki ngā wharekura.

Ehara i te mea nā te mahi kapa haka anake i whakatō i te reo e kao. Hoi anō he wānanga kapa haka i whakatō i te kākano, i āwhina anō, i āki anō hai whakarauora i te reo o te whānau, te hapū, te iwi o Te Whakatōhea mai i roto i a Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti.

Anā kua tonoa mai hoki e ngā mātua, e ngā tīpuna o ngā tamariki, mokopuna ki Te Whare Wānanga o Waikato ki te whai i Te Tohu Paetahi kia rūmakina hōhonutia ki te reo Māori kia tika, kia rere, kia Māori, anā mā Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti e whakangungu i a rātou ki te kupu, ki ngā kīwaha, ki te whakataukī tūturu kia Te Whakatōhea ai tō rātou reo kōrero ki tōna ake mita. Ehara i te mea ko Te Whare Wānanga o Waikato anake, arā ko Te Wānanga o Aotearoa, ko Te Whare Wānanga o Te Awanuiārangi, ko Whare Wānanga o Wikipōria. Engari ko Te Whare Wānanga o Waikato i te mea ko Te Tohu Paetahi te matua o ngā kaupapa rūmaki reo Māori ki Aotearoa nei, kua rua tekau mā waru tau mai i te 1991. Ko Te Whare Wānanga o Waikato, i te mea ko reira, ko Waikato te kāinga o te kairangakura nei te tīramaroa i runga i te maunga hai tōtō mai i ngā uri o Te Whakatōhea, hai tānga manawa mō ngā mātua me ngā kaumātua o ngā tamariki, mokopuna nei.

Ko te tāhuhu o ngā titonga mō Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti, ko te whakarauora i tōna reo tonu, arā ko te tiki mai i ngā kīanga, i ngā kīwaha, i ngā whakataukī, i ngā kupu motuhake mai i roto i ngā waiata mōteatea, i ngā ngeri, i ngā pātere, i ngā haka, i ngā waiata apakura a Te Whakatōhea tonu. He whakaoho mai kia mauriohoho anō i ērā kupu, ērā kōrero kia ora ai anō i roto i ngā uri.

Ka rua ka tiki mai i ngā kōrero, i ngā kī taurangi, i ngā tapu, i ngā karakia, i ngā hīmene, i ngā pānui, i ngā waiata a Te Hāhi Ringatū hai whakarawai i ngā titonga hou. Ka tiki hoki i ngā kupu, i ngā kīanga, i ngā kupu whakaari a Te Matua tangata mai i ana waiata koroua, i ana haka, i ngā kōrero tawhito hoki mōna me tana whawhai mō te mana Māori motuhake.

Kua whakairohia hoki e te kairangakura ētahi whakatauākī mō Te Whakatōhea ake. I tūpono atu ahau ki tētahi wānanga mō ngā kaimahi o Te Kōhanga reo o Terere. I reira, he mea tonu mai ahau e te kuia o te kōhanga, e Rangitahi Mitai kia hangaia mai he whakatauākī ake mō Te Whakatōhea e hua ai i te ingoa o Te Whakatōhea, e rongu ai te taringa ko te ingoa o te iwi, e mōhio ai te whakaminenga, ae ko Te Whakatōhea tēnei te haere nei. Hai tāna kua hōhā kē tana haere ki ngā hui kōhanga o te rohe o Mātaatua me te whakarongo ki ā Tūhoe whakatauākī, ki ā Ngāti Awa, me ā Te Moana o Tauranga me te kore noa iho nei ā Te Whakatōhea. I whakaaro ahau e hika, māku he whakatauākī e whakairo? Hoi anō, ko wai ahau ki te whakakāhore i te tonu mai a te kuia nei, me taku whakaae i te mea nō te kairangakura e tauira ana i te akomanga whakatauākī a Te Ahorangi Te Wharehuia Milroy ki Te Whare Wānanga o Waikato, koinā hoki tāku i kite ai i aku rangahautanga, ae he whakataukī ā Te Whakatōhea, engari kāore tētahi kotahi i kite e pepehātia ana te ingoa o Te Whakatōhea. Anā i taua wā tonu i tahuri ahau ki te whakairo whakatauākī, tuatahi i tāpaea te take nei ki te karakia Ringatū hai ārahi i ahau me te

kaupapa i whakahautia ahau kia mahi. Kotahi te whakatauākī i oti i taua pō, i te wā poto nei. Whakapae ana ahau nā te tapu o te karakia, i whai wāhi ai te wāhi ngaro ki te whakatauākī nei;

### ***“Toherāoa, toherāoa Te Whakatōhea maurua”.***

Ko te toherāoa nei he momo pātītī, karaihe (New Zealand wind grass, *Lachnagrostis filiformis*). Kitea ai te toherāoa ki ngā wāhi katoa o Te Whakatōhea, kai runga tātahi, kai runga maunga, kai ngā roto, kai ngā awa. E kīa ana e ētahi he tarutaru kē tēnei pātītī, hoi anō he pātītī kaha e taea ai ngā momo whenua me ngā momo huarangi ki te tipu. Ko te take i tīkina ai ko te toherāoa hai kupu whakarite mō Te Whakatōhea, tuatahi ko te kaha e rite ana ki a Te Whakatōhea ki te tohe kia ora ai a ia ahakoa he aha, raupatu mai ngā pēhi kikino o te wā kai konei tonu a Te Whakatōhea. Tuarua, ko te ingoa tonu a te toherāoa, kai roto hoki te ingoa o te iwi e whakaatu mai ana i te *“tohe”*.

Ko te *“maurua”*, he momo here tērā mō te raranga whāriki; ki te mahi whāriki, ka mahia mai hai papa tuatahi. Ka rarangatia mai tēnā papa, tēnā papa, tēnā papa kia rite te nui o ngā papa ki te nui o te whāriki kai te pīrangitia. Anā, hai hono i ērā papa kia kotahi te whāriki kia nui ai, ka herea ki te here e kīa nei ko te maurua.

Ko te tikanga o te whakatauākī nei ko te whakahau i te iwi kia whakakotahi. He iwi kaha ki te ora i roto i te whakawhiu, i ngā pēhi taumaha, engari ka kaha ake ki te whakakotahi i a ia

### ***“Te Whakatōhea, toherauriki”***

Ko tēnei whakataukī i pirangi ahau kia whai whakatauākī a Te Whakatōhea e whakamahia te kupu rau, pēnei i a *“Waikato taniwharau he piko, he taniwha, he piko, he taniwha.”* Pēnei anō i a *“Ngā Puhī kōhaorau”*. Anā i whakairotia ko tēnei hai tohu ki te iwi, ahakoa te pōhara, ahakoa te rawakore, kore whenua he iwi rangatira tonu i te mea i heke mai a Te Whakatōhea i ngā whakapapa atua, ariki, rangatira; ko Māui tērā, ko Tāwhaki tērā, ko Muriwai tērā, ko Tūtāmure tērā. He iwi ariki arā ōna ariki he rau, he rau. Ahakoa ngā whakawhiu me tohe i tō arikitanga kia tū ariki ai ko Te Whakatōhea.

### ***“Te Whakatōhea tohenihorau”***

He pērā anō, he whakaatu i te kaha o Te Whakatōhea ki te kuhu i a ia kia puta tana ihu; *i roto i te pōuri te māramatanga e whiti ana heoi kīhai i mau i te pōuri*. Anā koina te āhua o te iwi nei, pēnei i te kurī he ngenegere i ana rei ki te pakanga kia toa. He pērā tā Te Whakatōhea whawhai kia ora ai a ia i roto i ngā whakawhiu o te ao whakawai nei. Katoa ēnei whakatauākī he whakahau i te iwi kia ora ai, kia tū ariki ai, kia whakakotahi ai i a ia anō, kia tohe anō ai te tohe ki te mate, ki te ora.

Kua whakaurungia ērā whakatauākī āku ki roto i ngā titonga mō Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti hai kawē ki te motu whānui, ki te ao whānui i āna hīkoinga. Ināianei ka tae atu a Te Whakatōhea ki ngā hui nunui a te iwi Māori kua whakatauākītia ai a Te Whakatōhea ki ngā whakatauākī nei o roto i ngā whaikōrero a ngā iwi. O te motu. Anā, kua pakaru ēnei whakatauākī a te kairangakura ki te motu, kua whakatauākītia ai ko Te Whakatōhea tangata, kua pepehātia ai ko Te Whakatōhea iwi.

Anā ka ngata te hiahia o te kuia nei a Te Rangitahi Mitai ki te whakaputa i te ingoa o tana iwi i roto i ngā kaupapa a te kōhanga reo, otirā kua tangata whenua ki te hinengaro o Te Whakatōhea, o ngā iwi katoa o te motu.

Nā kōnei ka mōhio ai a Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti i tōna whakapapa ki ngā titonga i te mea mōna ngā titonga, mōna ngā kōrero, nāna hoki ngā kōrero. Ka rongō hoki ia i te matua o te kupu me te mōhio nāna tēna kupu, nāna tēna kīanga, nāna tēnā, tēnā me tēna i te mea he whakapapa tōna ki te kupu, ki aua kupu hoki. Ana kua tahuri rātou ki te whakahāngia ērā kupu, ērā kōrero kia mauriohooho ki runga ki te tipu o te arero o ngā uri o Te Whakatōhea, otirā ngā tāura, ngā rei puta me ngā taringa huruhuru o Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti.

Anā e rua tekau mā whā tau e haere ana te kapa haka o Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti kua hau mai ngā pēpi i te tīmatatanga o te kapa haka hai kaihaka me rātou i whānau i muri noa mai i te tīmatatanga. Ko te iwa tekau ōrau o te kapa haka kai te matatau, kai te mōhio ki te kōrero i te reo Māori. Ka whakamahia ngā kupu o ngā titonga, ngā kupu, ngā kīanga, ngā āhua katoanga o te momo reo ki roto i ā rātou reo kōrero o te wā, mihimihi, karanga hoki. Nō reira ko Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti he wānanga i hongī ai te tangata ki te hā o te reo ka hamumu. Ka mitimiti te tangata i te kiri o te reo ka kōhimuhimu. Ka timotimo te tangata ki te ngako o te reo ka tapepa. Ka ngau te tangata i te ngako o te reo ka kōrero. Ka kai te tangata i te matū o te reo kōrerorero. Koinei tā Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti ki te whakarauora i te reo o Te Whakatōhea, he whakapoapoa, he mirimiri, he āki, he tautoko, he whakahau, anei ahau ko tōu reo, haere mai, tīkina mai, ākona mai, kōrero mai i tōu reo Māori.

#### **5.4.3.1 Ringatū**

*Nā Rangitū koe*

*Nā Te Kotahitanga, nā Tāne rawa koe*

*Nā Pure-i-tawhiti, nā kaunati hikahika te kaunati a tō tipuna a Rāwiri i haere ai i te ara; ko koutou anake i titikaha mai nā...*

He wāhanga tēnei nā te waiata nei a Pinepine te kura nā Te Kooti.

Ko te ahi tapu o Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti ko te ahi tapu a Rāwiri, arā te Hāhi Ringatū. Koirā te fīmatanga me te whakamutunga o ngā whakahaere katoa a Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti. Ko te take, kua kōrero kētia he iwi Ringatū te nuinga o Te Whakatōhea. Ko te ritenga o Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti ko Te Hāhi Ringatū he wānanga, he waka hai whakarauora i a Te Whakatōhea he huhuti ake i a ia i roto i te pūranga paru.

*“Ko wai te rite ana ki a Ihowā ki tō tātou Atua e noho nei i runga, e whakaiti nei i a ia, e titiro iho nei i te rangi i whenua, e whakaara ake nei te iti i roto i te puehu, e whakateitei ake nei te rawakore i roto i te pūranga paru.”*

He wāhanga tēnei o tētahi inoi nā Te Hāhi Ringatū.

Otirā ko tēnei moe tahitanga he tautoko tētāhi i tētahi. Ko Te Ringatū ka tautoko i a Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti i roto i āna mahi whakarauora i a Te Whakatōhea, ā i roto hoki i te wairua tapu o Ihowā Te Atua Ora O Ngā Mano. Ko tā Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti he whakarauora anō hoki i Te Hāhi Ringatū, i te mea ko Te Hāhi ki roto o Te Whakatōhea e rua tekau mā whā tau ki muri he rite anō ki ngā paetapu o te iwi he tokoiti ngā tohunga hai whakahaere i ngā karakia ki roto i ngā Rā, ki roto ki ngā tangihanga, hura kōhatu ko ngā kaupapa a te iwi. Anā, ko tā Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti he whakatipu tohunga, he ako i te iwi ki ngā karakia, he whakatō i te kākano o te wairuatapu ki roto ki te ngākau o te iwi, ahakoa kua whakatōkia kētia i te wā o te tamarikitanga e ētahi whānau pūmau ki Te Ringatū. Ko tā te kapa he whāinu i taua kākano kia tipu, kia rea.



*Whakaahua 11: Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti, kai te pupuri i ngā pukapuka karakia Ringatū , Terere Pā , 2019. Ko te mana whakaae, Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti.*

Hai te pō tīmata o ngā wānanga kua tangi te pere hai te 7pm kua kao te kapa ki roto ki te tipuna whare kua whakamoemiti, mō tā Te Atua, ārahi i te iwi ki runga i ngā huarahi. Hai ngā ata kua moata kia pai ai ngā mahi mō taua rā. Hai te 10am o ia Rāhoroi kua Hāpati a Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti e ai ki ngā tikanga ā rātou mā. He Rā tēnei kua wehea mai mō te Atua, kātahi ka uru anō ki ngā mahi whakaharatau. Hai te 7pm o ia pō kua whakamoemiti anō mō ngā hōmaitanga i roto i ngā mahi o taua rā. Anā ināianei nō roto i te rua tekau mā whā tau, kua āhei te rangatahi ki te tū ki te whakahaere i ngā tikanga karakia a Te Ringatū, nā roto i ngā tikanga whakahaunga a Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti. Otirā ko tēnei, he pupuri i ngā tikanga tuku iho a ngā mātua, tīpuna kia whakahaeretia ai ngā mahi i roto i te tapu o te Atua, māna hai ārahi, tohu, tiaki i te kapa haka i roto i āna mahi katoa.

*I think health, also taha wairua, it fits everywhere really but . . . it's a huge part of our club, te Hāhi Ringatū. It's something we practice every week, every month . . . It's the inter-generational thing, it's something from Te Kooti that's come down through our kuia, and through to us (Te Huawai Pārae Report, personal communication, 2018, p. 46).*

Ko ngā kupu karakia, kupu whakaari, mahi a tōna poropiti a Te Matuatanga, hītoria o te tīmatanga mai o Te Ringatū ka noho hai tūāpapa ki roto i te nuinga o ngā titonga, ngā waiata, haka, poi a Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti.

Anā rāua, rāua he whakarauora, he whakapakari, he pupuri i te mana Māori motuhake o Te Whakatōhea. Ko Te Ringatū i whānau mai i roto i ngā pakanga whenua, i roto i te raupatu

whenua, he pupuri i te mana Māori motuhake. Ko Te Whakatōhea he iwi raupatu, ahakoa he harakore nōna, i whawhai kia pupuri i te mana Māori motuhake. Ko Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti ko tāna he whakarauora i te iwi i ngā pēhi kino taumaha a te raupatu ki runga ki a Te Whakatōhea.

#### 5.4.3.2 Tikanga

*E kai ō koutou mata i te kohu e tatao i waho i te moana o Toka-āhuru , ko te kopa o te whare,  
ko te ara tōtara...*

He wāhanga tēnei nā te waiata nei a Pinepine te kura nā Te Kooti.

Ko te ara tōtara o Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti, ko te pupuri i ngā tikanga a te iwi, kia mau ai, kia whakahoki mai ai, kia ora ai haere ake nei, haere ake nei. Ko te tikanga he matapihi kia kite ake i tā te iwi whakahaere i a ia anō i runga i te tika. Ko te tikanga, ko te tāmoko e mōhio ai te tangata ko wai a wai iwi, ko wai a wai tangata. Anā i konei ko te tikanga e mōhio ai te tangata, te ao Māori hoki ko ā Te Whakatōhea o roto mai i ā Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti.

Ko te tū a Te Whakatōhea i roto i ngā mahi kapa haka, waiata ā ringa, poi, kāore e hiki te waewae i te whenua, kāore e wehe te waewae i te whenua. Ko tā Te Whakatōhea tū ko ngā matimati te kapu anake o te waewae ka hīkina ki runga, ki raro, ki runga, ki raro, ka pātōtō. Ko te rekereke ka haika i te tangata ki te whenua. Ko ngā matimati me te kapū o te waewae ka pupuri i te manawataki. Ko ngā ringaringa ka whātoro whakawaho kia torotika. Kāore e whakaatu i ngā kēkē, kāore hoki e hīkina ki runga ake i te mahunga, he tapu te mahunga o te tangata. Ko te whiu o ngā ringa, ka āta rere ki te whakairo ā ringa i te tikanga o te kupu. Ko te wiriwiri a Te Whakatōhea he kaha nui te wiriwiri mai i ngā matimati ki ngā pakihwi rā anō. Kai te mōhio whānuitia Te Whakatōhea mō tāna wiriwiri, he iwi tohunga ki te waiata ā ringa i ngā tau kua pahure ake, ko te kapa haka o Waioweka Youth Club tērā, ko Ngā Pōtiki tērā.

Ko te tū ā haka, e kīa ana he tautau rahoraho tāna tū mō te haka, arā he kūwhera ngā waewae kia whānui tonu, anā heke whakararo te tinana kia tau ki runga ki ngā pōnā o ngā waewae. Me torotika te tuarā kaua e piko te tuarā. Me takahi te waewae me wehe i te whenua. He uaua tēnei tū, ko ngā uaua kai ngā waewae nā te tuku i te tinana kia heke ki raro, arā kia tautau ngā rahoraho o te kaihaka tāne. Ko te rite o te tū nei ki tō te tekoteko, he mārō, he pakari.

Koinei ngā tohutohu, whakahaunga a ngā kaumātua, ngā tohunga o te kapa o roto o Te Whakatōhea, ko Kaaterina Maxwell tērā taku tipuna kuia, ko Heeni Green tērā, ko Nancy Peka tērā, ko Te Okeroa Huriwaka tērā, ko Hera Pāhewa tērā, ko Wharekawa Kurei tērā, ko Hone

Green tērā, ko Ben Gage tērā. He kura katoa ēnei tohunga haka nōku e tamariki ana, nōku e taitamariki ana, nōku e taipakeke ana. I kura ahau i raro i ā rātou rākau. Koinei ngā tikanga me ngā ako kua whakapūmautia ki roto i ngā wānanga o Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti kia mau ai ki te tū a Te Whakatōhea kia mōhio ai ngā uri ki tā rātou tū, kia mōhio anō te ao Māori ki te tū a Te Whakatōhea.

Ko tāna tū e rerekē ai a Te Whakatōhea ki te katoa i roto i te ao kapa haka. Motuhake e kore tēnei tū āna e ngaro i te mea kua noho hai taonga tuku iho tapu mā te iwi nei. Nā te wānanga nei i raro i a Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti i whakahoki mai ahakoa kāore i ngaro, he mea whakapūmau kia toka tēnei tū.

### 5.4.3.3 Paepaetapu

*Kāti rā e hika te takoto i raro o Papa-tahuaroa!*

*E ara ki runga mau ki tō toki,*

*Hāua atu rā ki te riu o Tāne,*

*E mau ki tō patupatu hai tonu kai māu i te ata,*

*Ngā mahi e hika nā Rua-te-pupuke,*

*Nā Rua-te-hotahota, nā Hīngangaroa rā,*

*Ka puta mai te karere i a Te Wharekāhū rā,*

*Ka pae Ngāti Ngahere he hōmai i te huia,*

*He hōmai i te kākahu remu ngorengore,*

*I te wai whīnau, te Whatu o Poutini...*

He wāhanga tēnei nā te waiata nā Rangaika o Tūhoe.

#### 5.4.3.3.1 Pae Mōteatea

Ko ngā mōteatea ka whakaakona ki a Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti i mātua whakatauhia e ahau me whakaako i ngā mōteatea kia wawara anō ngā paetapu o Te Whakatōhea.

Tuatahi i tūmanakotia tēnei āhutatanga kia kaha te wawaratia o te mōteatea ki runga ki taku paepaetapu o Terere, arā ko Te Whare-ki-Wānanga tōna ingoa. I whakatauhia ko ngā mōteatea ka whakaakona ki Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti ko ngā mōteatea ērā hai mōteatea ki runga ki ngā paepaetapu o Te Whakatōhea. Ahakoa he whakataetae te kaupapa i whakaakona ki a Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti, ko te take kē rā hoki o te whakaako, ko te paepaetapu o Te Whakatōhea. Nōku e rangatahi ana i ōku haeretanga ki aku huanga o Te Whānau a Tūtawake ki runga i te marae o

Whitianga ki roto o Te Whānau-a-Apanui i reira i kite ahau, i rongu ahau i ōku whaea, ōku pāpā o te whānau Delamere, arā a Tā Mōnita Delamere, Peeti Delamere, Danie Poihipi, Tama Gage, Ema Rogers, Te Raita Ngāmoki, Maaka Jones me aku tūākana a Travan Albert, a Blythe Rogers, a Pixie Rogers, e karawhiu ana i a Pinapine te kura, i a Pōpō, i a Karapīpiti me te huhua noa o ngā mōteatea. Anā, i ranga te hari, i haruru te paepaetapu o Whitianga i te mahi a te mōteatea. Ko tāku i kite ai, ko te waiata rongonui a Te Kooti, ko Pinepine te kura i ngā tau e rua tekau mā whā ki muri i kaha te rongohia ki runga i ētahi marae o Te Whānau a Apanui ko Maraenui me Whitianga me Ōtūwhare, ki roto hoki o Tūhoe me Ngāti Awa ki roto o Mātaatua, engari ki roto o Te Whakatōhea, e kao.

Kāore i paku rongohia a Te Whakatōhea e kawea ana i tērā i runga i ōna marae. Ahakoa he tangata ōna i mōhio ai ki taua mōteatea pērā i taku kuia a Kaaterina Maxwell, a Tā Monita, a Robert Biddle, a Tipi McCormick, a Kimiora Pukepuke mā kāore ahau i kite, i rongu rānei i a Te Whakatōhea whānui e kawea ana i a Pinepine te kura, pērā i āku i rongu ai ki roto o Ngāi Tūhoe, Ngāti Awa, otirā Te Whānau-a-Apanui. Tērā pea i rongu, engari kīhai i rongu, nā te tamariki pea, engari nōku e taipakeke ana kāhore.

Ka hoki anō ki ngā kōrero o runga ake, nā te tokoiti o te tangata mātau, me te tūkaumātua hoki i runga i ngā paepaetapu o ngā marae kīhai i kawea nā te taumaha mā te tokoiti me te kaumātua rawa o te tangata.

I tūmanakotia e ahau tērā te wā ka pērā anō taku paepaetapu ki runga o Terere. Anā, nā Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti me ana wānanga i taea ai taku moemoeā me ngā tūmanakotanga o taku ngākau te whakatinana. I ēnei rā, hai ngā tangihanga, hai ngā hui nui a Te Whakatōhea ka auau te waiatatia o Pinepine te kura ki runga i ngā marae o Te Whakatōhea me te nui anō o te mōteatea a Te Kooti, a Te Whakatōhea hoki ki runga i ōna marae maha. Nā te wānanga nei a Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti te kupu i tinana, i tinana ko te kupu.

#### **5.4.3.3.2 Paekaranga**

Ko te paekaranga i waimaria ngā wāhine o Te Whakatōhea, otirā Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti i tōna tīmatatanga ina rā te mātotoru o te tohunga ki te karanga he tokomaha. He kaikaranga tō ia marae, tō ia hapū e pupuri ana i te mauri o te karanga. Nō reira i noho ēnei kuia karanga hai whakatauirā atu i te karanga ki ngā uri whakaheke. Ko te rerekē o ērā kuia ki ngā kaikaranga o te nāiane i tīpu kē ake ērā ki roto i te reo, i taea ai e rātou te whakairo i te kupu ahakoa he aha te kaupapa, i taea noatia e rātou. Ko tō muri mai whakatipuranga kua oti kē te kōrero i runga ake nei, kāore he reo, rānei he mea i mātua ako ko te reo me te mahi karanga. Ehara i te mea i

āta wānangatia te karanga ki roto o Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti, ehara hoki i te mea i kuraina ngā wāhine katoa ki te karanga. Ehara.

Ki roto o Te Whakatōhea he mauri tō te karanga he mea whakaheke ā whakapapa nei ki roto i ngā whānau kai a rātou te mauri o te karanga e pupuri ana kai tēnā marae, kai tēnā marae. Ehara i te mea ka tū noa te wahine ki te karanga, e kao he mea āta tohu, āta tuku iho ki te uri e tika ana māna e kawe te karanga. Pēnā kai a koe te mauri o te karanga o te marae, o te hapū me tū i tō marae mō ngā kaupapa katoa, kua mō ngā taima e hiahia ai te tangata, ina kore ka tuku mā tētahi atu. Kāore i te pērā te whakahaere i taua mauri rā, kai taua wahine rā kia mate rā anō, mena rānei ka pāngia ki te mate urutā e kore e ora, kua tino tū kaukuia nei kua whakawātea, kua whakahorohoro i ngā tapu e pā ana ki tērā mahi o te karanga, kātahi kua tuku ihotia te mauri ki te uri e tika ana.

Nā reira mō roto mai i a Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti he pērā anō te kura i te wahine mō te karanga. I te mea ko ngā whakaeke a Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti mō ngā whakataetae ka whakatauiratia ki te whakaeke marae tonu, arā me karanga. Me whakatau i te mana o te mana whenua, me whakatau anō hoki i te mana o Te Whakatōhea e whakaeketia atu ana ki runga ki te marae o te whakataetae, ki mua ki ngā mana, ki ngā ihi, ki ngā wehi, ki ngā tapu hoki o te motu.

Nā ka tohu ko ngā uri tonu o ngā whānau kai te pupuri i te mauri o te karanga ki roto o Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti hai kaitātaki, hai kaikaranga hoki. He māmā noa iho, ko tōna tikanga he momo, kai roto tonu i aua uri rā e āritarita mai ana. Kai a rātou taua reo tatangi ki te karanga. He taonga, ko taua mauri tonu kai roto i a rātou e tatari atu ana kia pāorooro ki te ao, e kī ana; “anei ahau.” Ko te take ka tohua ko ēnei uri ko rātou kai te kāinga e noho ana, ko rātou ka nōhia ō rātou marae. Nō reira ko tā te wānanga o Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti he whakapoapoa i taua taonga kia whānau mai ai ki roto i te uri, he mirimiri kia tōia whakawahotia, he tautoko, he whakapakari, he whakapūāwai kia mauritau te karanga ki roto i te uri mō tōna ao karanga ina tae mai te wā ki a ia ki runga ki tōna marae.

Ki roto i te wānanga o Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti ko te kairangakura te kaituruki i ngā wānanga karanga, koia hoki te ahorangi whakaako i ngā uri wāhine ki te karanga. Kua hua ai ētahi hapū a Ngāti Ngahere, a Ngāti Ira, a Ngāi Tama, a Te Ūpokorehe i te rākau a te kairangakura nei.

Ko te tiki mai hoki i ngā kupu, ngā kīanga, ngā whakatauākī, ngā pepehā, ngā kupu whakaari, karakia hai poutoko ake i te whare karanga o te uri mō roto i ngā whakataetae. He whakamārama ki a ia i te tino kaupapa o tāna e karanga atu ai, he kura i a ia ki ngā piki me ngā heke o tana maka i tana reo karanga. Ko ngā karanga ka whāngaihia ki taua uri ina kē te tohunga

o te whakairo i te kupu, mā te tohunga rā anō ki te reo e mātau ai ki ā te kaikaranga kupu e whāriki atu ana ki runga ki te marae. Ko te reo tērā o te kairangakura. He āta wānanga ki a ia anō te kaupapa me ngā kupu kātahi ka whakairotia. Katoa ēnei āhuatanga, enei tikanga o tēnei kura, o tēnei wānanga, he whakapakari, he whakatikatika, he whakangungu te kairangakura i te uri inā te wā ki a ia ki te paekaranga o tōna marae. Kai a ia te tikanga mena rānei ka whai i tā Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti wānanga tikanga mō te tohunga o te kupu, mō te maka i tōna reo, ōna piki, ōna heke, tōna tatangi hoki. Hoi anō kua mātua mōhio te kairangakura, a Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti kua tika tāna kura, tana wānanga i ngā torekaihuru o te kaikaranga o te nāianei me āpōpō. Ka auau hoki te kura nā haere ake nei, haere ake nei kia tohunga ngā kaikaranga mō runga i ngā marae o Te Whakatōhea.

Kua tūtia kētia e tētahi ika ā whiro o Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti ki ngā paekaranga, kua nōhia kētia ōna marae o Te Whakatōhea, o Waioweka me Terere i te mea kai a ia te mauri o ērā marae. Kua tū anō ia hai reo mō Te Whakatōhea kai ngā huihuinga nunui a Te Whakatōhea ki te kāinga, hai reo hoki ki ngā huihuinga nunui a te motu. Ahakoa taipakeke tonu kāore hoki i te pīrangitia, he mea āta whakaheke i tōna kuia ki tōna māmā ki a ia. Ko Tracy Gilmer, nō te whānau Tāwhara, nō te whānau Mitai. Ko taku whakapae ko Tracy tētahi o ngā tohunga karanga o Te Whakatōhea. Ko Rāmari Sherman anō hoki tētahi i kuraina nō te whānau Rēwiri, nō te whānau Kora hoki. Ko te rerekē o tēnei he matatau ki te reo i pakeke mai i roto i te kōhanga me te Wharekura o Ruamatā ki roto o Te Arawa, i pakeke mai i tētahi kāinga reo Māori. Ahakoa kai Te Arawa a Rāmari e noho ana i tū a Rāmari ki te hui nui a Te Whakatōhea ko te hui tērā i whakamaumahara ki te 150 o ngā tau o Te Tarata te pakanga whenua a Ngāti Ira, otirā Te Whakatōhea ki te Karauna 1866-2016. He mea tohu ia e tōna hapū o Ngāti Ira, otirā Te Whakatōhea. Ko Tracy rāua ko Rāmari ētahi o ngā kaikaranga ki Te Tarata, ā nā te kairangakura ā rāua karanga i whakairo me kī nā te wānanga o Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti.

Ko Anameka Paenga anō tētahi he kaikaranga nā te iwi, nō te whānau Pirini, nō te whānau Mokomoko, nō te whānau Hape. He kaikaranga anō ia ki roto i te iwi. He tohunga anō hoki ia. I pakeke mai a ia i roto i te reo, ki te kōhanga, ki te Kura Kaupapa o Te Ahureinga o Te Whakatōhea, i pōtaea ki Te Whare Wānanga o Waikato, i puta hoki i Te Panekiretanga o Te Reo. Nā te kairangakura anō tuatahi a Anameka i mātua poipoi ki roto i te wānanga o Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti kia tū toherauariki a ia hai kaikaranga.

Koinei tana karanga mō te whakaeke a Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti ki runga ki te ātamira whakataetae ki Ōtautahi 2015. He tangi tēnei karanga ki a Heeni Green tētahi tohunga o te mahi kapa haka ki roto o Te Whakatōhea otirā te ao Māori whānui. Ko te kaupapa tuarua ko te tangi ki te parekura o te rū whenua 2011.

*Tērā te uira  
E hiko i te rangi  
E wāhi rua ana  
Rā runga o Waioweka  
Kāore ia nei ko te tohu o te mate  
Te kuranui o kuraroa  
Ka hūtia te tohunga  
E kui Heeni  
Ki runga ki a Rona  
Te kura tapu o Waioweka  
Haere ra haere atu rā<sup>67</sup>*

*Aorangi i runga atu i ngā rangi  
E rere rā Waitaki taki atu, taki mai  
Riringi te wai i ako kamo mō te parekura nui  
Rūaimoko te whenua, te tangata ki te mate  
Ngāi Tahu taukurī e!*

(Karanga: Ki a Heeni Green, Te Kahautu Maxwell, i mahi ki Te Matatini, 2015)

Tētahi atu huarahi kura i te kaikaranga hou ko te marae tonu. Ina tae ai he manuhiri ki ngā whakaharatau a Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti kua pōhiritia rātou ki runga ki te marae e ai ki tā te tikanga. Anā, i konā kua whakangāwaritia te tikanga kia whai wāhi te rangatahi, ahakoa kai te ora tonu te kuia, te whaea o te rangatahi nei. Kua kite kē i te pitomata ki roto i te tamaiti rā ki tēnei tūranga rā. Nō reira ko tā Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti he mirimiri, he poi-poi, he ātawhai i te rangatahi kia whakapūāwaitia mai te taonga kai roto i a ia, i runga i te ngāwari, i te wā hoki kai te ora ngā kaumātua me ngā mātua. “*Tamaiti ākona ki te kāinga, tū ana ki te marae tau ana.*” Nō reira ko te mea nui kia whakaae te rangatahi i te tuatahi māna te karanga ki te manuhiri. Tuarua ko te whāngai i a ia/ rātou ki ngā kupu māmā e taea ai e rātou te waha ki runga ki te marae, ki mua i te iwi, ki mua i te manuhiri. He mahi whakawehi tangata ki te tū mō te wā tuatahi ki runga ki te marae ātea ki te waha i tērā tikanga tapu o te karanga. Koia rā tēnei wānanga o te karanga e ai ki te kairangakura, e ai hoki ki tā Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti, he mea āta kura te puni wāhine e tika ana, kai te mau rānei i ngā tohu o te kaikaranga, ki roto ki te wānanga o Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti e

---

<sup>67</sup> He poroporoake tēnei ki tō mātou tohunga kapa haka, ki a Heeni Green. He tohunga ia ki te tito waiata, ki te mahi waiata-ā-ringa. Ko tōna tohu ko te wiri o ngā ringa, ka kitea tēnei āhuatanga i roto i ngā mahinga a Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti. Koia te tohunga o te kapa haka rongonui o Waioweka i roto i ngā tau maha. I mate te kuia nei i te tau 2014.

ora ai te tikanga, e pupuri ai te kawa, e mau ai te mauri o karanga ki ngā marae o Te Whakatōhea, ā haere ake nei.

#### 5.4.3.3 Paekōrero

Ko te whakarauora i te paetapu, paekōrero he rautaki anō tērā, he wānanga anō tērā ki roto o Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti me ōna tikanga whakahaere. Karakia ai a Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti i ia pō i te 7pm ki roto i te tipuna whare. Inā mutu ai te karakia ko te tikanga ki roto o Te Whakatōhea mā te tohunga whakahaere, te ture rānei o te marae e mihi ki te iwi kua pae nei, ki te manuhiri, ki te iwi kāinga hoki me te whakaara ake i ngā kaupapa o te wā hai wānanga, hai whakapuaki whakaaro, hai takitaki i te hinengaro o te tangata, o te iwi e pae nei. Anā i konei kua tukuna atu ēnei whakahaere mā te rangatahi e whakahaere. He pērā anō ki te karanga, he whakangāwari i te tikanga o te tipuna koroua, o te matua pāpā e ora tonu ana, o te tūākana rānei kai te ora tonu. Ae he mirimiri anō i te taonga me ngā tohu kai te rangatahi e mau ana, kia ruakina ki waho, kia tīmata te tū a te rangatahi ki tērā tūranga. He poipoi, he akiaki, he tautoko, he whāngai i te hiakai o te rangatahi ki te whakatinana i ngā moemoeā, tūmanako ōna, otirā o te whānau, o te hapū, o te iwi ki te whakakīkī i ngā whāwhārua, kia rite te rangatahi ina eke te wā ki a ia/ rātou ki te tū i te tūranga i tūtia ai e ōnā matua, e ōna tīpuna.

He mauri hoki e rite ana ki tō te karanga, kai tēnā whānau, kai tēnā whānau o tēnā marae, o tēnā hapū e pupuri ana i te mauri o te whaikōrero mō runga i ngā pae tapu. Ko taua mauri he pērā anō ka tuku iho, ka tuku iho ki tēnā whakatipuranga, ki tēnā whakatipuranga. Mā reira e ora ai te kawa, e mau ai te tikanga, e mura ai te ahi kāroa.

Ka tohutohungia te rangatahi kua tohua kia mau ki te tāhuhu kua oti kē te whakatauiria i ngā matua, tīpuna. Ana he tauparapara, he mihi ki te tipuna whare, he mihi ki ngā mate, he mihi ki te iwi kua pae nei, ki ngā manuhiri, ki te iwi kāinga. Mena e taea ai he kupu, he kaupapa i tua atu i tēnei tāhuhu ko te painga kē atu tērā. Ko te mea kē kua tū ki te mihi, ā he pērā anō he mahi whakawehi i te tangata ki te kōrero i mua i te aroaro o te tangata. He iwi whakamā te iwi Māori, a Te Whakatōhea, he iwi whakaiti, kāore e pīrangi ki te pana i a ia whakamua i ētahi koi kīa he whakahīhī, koi hē hoki, koi kataina.

Nō reira ko te mahi tuatahi kia whakaaea mai e te rangatahi kia tū, ka rua ko te whakaruruhau, ko te akiaki i te rangatahi e te pakeke, e te kaumātua kia wātea ia ki te tū, kia mauritau ia ki te tū ahakoa manawapopore. Nō reira ka taunga haere te rangatahi ki te tū ki rō whare tipuna ka taka iho ngā muhunga o te ngākau, o te hinengaro ki te tū. Ko te mahi i muri i tērā ko te whakatauiria atu ki te rangatahi me pehea te whakawhānui i tana rākau kōrero kia eke āna kupu,

āna kōrero me ōna whakaaro ki tētahi kaupapa. Ko te whakatūwhera tērā i ngā karu o te hinengaro, i ngā taringa o te ngākau me te tatau o te tangata ki te whakaputa i ōna i rongō ai, i ōna i whakaaro ai, i ōna kai te matua ki a ia.

Kua whakatūtū anō hoki ko ngā wāhine me ngā kōhine ki te tū ki te mihi. Ahakoa chara tērā i te tikanga me te kawa o Te Whakatōhea ko tā Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti e whai nā, ko te akiaki i te kōrerotia o te reo Māori, ko te whakapakari anō hoki i te hunga wāhine ki te whakapuaki whakaaro, ki te whakatakoto kupu ki roto i te reo Māori ki mua i te aroaro o te tangata. He mea nui tērā ki te patu i tēnei mea te whakamā. He whakamā tuatahi ki te tū ki te kōrero ōkawa i mua i te tānagta, he whakamā koi hē, he whakamā he iti te reo kōrero, he tapepa te reo kōrero, he kore rānei te reo kōrero o te tangata. Mā tēnei tū āhuatanga ka kaha kē atu te waia, te taunga me te pakari o te tangata. Mā konei anō hoki e akiaki i te tangata ki te ako i te reo me te whakapakari i a ia ki te kōrero i te reo kia tika, ko te reo kia rere, ko te reo kia Māori, nā Tīmoti Karetū.

I tētahi pō kāore he tāne i te wā o te karakia, āe ko te momo tēnei o te tāne he hamupaka, he karo, he haututū. Anā i te tangihanga āku i te pere ka kao te kapa ki roto i te tipuna whare a Te Iringa ki Terere, ka titiro ahau ka kitea he wāhine anake i reira. Ahakoa kua kitea noatia te ngākau rua me te karo a te tāne i te pere o te pō kātahi anō ka tau tēnei tūāhua kāore he tāne atu i ahau. I konā ka whakaaro ake, ka tohu mā tētahi o ngā wāhine e whakahaere te karakia, ko Tracy Gilmer tērā.

Ehara i te mea he tauhou tērā tikanga o te tohunga wahine ki te whakahaere i ngā karakia, e kao. Ko te Onewhero Takurua tērā nō Te Ūpokorehe ki Kutarere; he tohunga Ringatū i ōna wā, ko Hārete Temepara tērā nō roto mai o Ngāti Rua, ki Ōmarumutu tērā me te huhua o ngā kuia i pupuri te mauri o ngā Rā ki ō rātou marae, chara i te mea he tohunga, engari ko ngā kaipupuri i ō rātou Rā.

Ko te mea hoki ko Te Whakatōhea iwi, ko Te Whakatōhea ingoa taketake nā te mana o te wahine, ko Muriwai.

Anā ko te tuatahi tērā nā ngā wāhine te whakahaere katoa, he wāhine ngā tohunga whakahaere, he wāhine anō hoki i hāpai i ngā karakia, nā rātou anō hoki i mihimihi ki a rātou anō me ngā mōteatea hurihuri i te whare tipuna. Kāore he hapa i tutuki pai. Ko ngā wāhine te taituarā o Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti ā haka, ā whakahaere ko rātou te iwi pūmau kai te tūturu, kai te pono ki Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti. Ko ngā tāne he rite ki ngā tāne i te ūnga mai o Mātaatua ki Kākahoroa ki Whakatāne, ka whakarere i te waka me ngā wāhine ka warea kē ō rātou whakaaro ki te whenua

hou ka wareware te waka me ngā wāhine. Ka raruraru a Mātaatua i te tai, i te korenga o te tāne i riro mā te wahine te whakahaere, ka tū ake a Muriwai; ka whakatāne i a ia kia ora ai te waka. Ko Rongo-maraeroa tērā.

Ko te marae ātea a Tūmatauenga. Ko reira he kawa anō, he tikanga anō. Kua kōrero kētia ina tae ake he manuhiri ki ngā whakaharatau a Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti kua tū te pōhiri, nā te rangatahi te whakahaere. Kua tohua ko ngā rangatahi, me kī ko ngā mātāmua, tuākana o te kapa hai nōhia te paetapu. Ko te take, ae he mārama anō ki te reo, ae kua taunga anō ki te mihimihi mō roto i a Rongomaraeroa ka mutu kua kuraina anō ēnei tāngata ki te whaikōrero mai i te kura tuatahi, arā i roto i te whakataetae o te Delamere Cup tō rātou tīmatanga, ko te wāhanga tērā ki te whaikōrero, ahakoa he ako kākā, he tīmatanga tonu tērā ki te whaikōrero. Ko Ngā Manu Kōrero anō hoki, ko Ngā Manu Kōrero a Ngā Wāhine Māori Toko i te Ora hoki tērā. Nō reira ko ērā kuranga anō ērā hai whakamātautautanga mā te tamaiti tāne ki te whaikōrero.

He pērā anō ko te tamaiti i tohua ki te kura kāore e hapa nō ngā whānau tonu e pupuri ana i ngā paetapu o ngā marae, o ngā hapū o te iwi. Hoi anō he kuranga anō tēnei o roto i te wānanga o Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti. Ko tā tēnei kura he titiro ki te pae tawhiti, ko te whakarauora i te reo, ko te whakangungu i ngā pūkōrero o te iwi mō te āpōpō, ko te whakapakari i ngā paetapu o te iwi. Ko tēnei tūnga ki te marae ko te tūnga o te kaikōrero ki runga ki tōna marae ake, ehara tēnei i te ātamira kua whakamaraetia, ko te marae kē tēnei o Tūmatauenga, i konā kua takahi te rangatahi i ngā tapuwae o ō rātou mātua, tīpuna.

Kāore rātou te rangatahi i te mārama ki tā Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti e mahi nā, arā he rautaki. Ki tō te rangatahi whakaaro pea he whakamātautau noa i a rātou, he whakamahi i a rātou kia wātea ai ngā pakeke. Engari tērā anō te wā kai te haramai, me te mana me te tapu o te tikanga o te whaikōrero e haere atu ana i te taha, e kore e taea te karo ahakoa e kore pīrangī te tangata ki taua mea, ka kimi taua taonga i te taua tangata i te mea koia te mea e tika ana, he taonga tuku iho, he mauri tuku iho ki tērā kua tohua e ngā whetū, e ngā pakeke rānei, e te iwi hoki.

Ko te rangatahi ka tohua, ka tū ki te marae, ka tohutohutia rātou ki te tauira o tō rātou whare kōrero. Ka tohutohutia rātou ko wai te manuhiri, he aha tāna kaupapa i tae ake ai ki Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti kia pai ai tā te rangatahi honohono i te manuhiri ki te marae me te kōrero i te kaupapa i tae ake ai me te aki anō i te kaikōrero ki te whakapuaki i ōna whakaaro e pā ana ki te kaupapa, mena rānei he māramatanga ōna ki taua kaupapa.

Ko te ātaahua kua kite ahau, kua tīkina tētahi haka, ngeri, ētahi kupu mai i ētahi mōteatea, i ngā mahinga rānei kua titoa mō Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti ake hai tauparapara, mena he hāngai anō ki te

kaupapa kua whakairotoia ērā kupu, rerenga kōrero, kīwaha hai whakarawai i ō rātou whare kōrero. *We had a dying pae and it's through haka we've been able to at least sustain for now a decent paetapu and hopefully build on [that] . . . but through haka we're holding on to our mōteatea, our kōrero. I hear my cousins getting up and all of their tauparapara have been whakaeke, have been haka, and that's just through haka. And then there's the necessities, like karakia, whakamoemiti, it's strong, it's strong. Te nui o ngā kapa haka, both teams of haka back home . . . there's at least 200 people involved in both of those teams. . . . that are participating in our Hāhi . . . the Hāhi is alive and well within us. And that's through haka* (Te Huawai Pārae Report, personal communication, 2018).

Ahakoia kai te rangatahi ngā whakahaere o ngā pōhiri ki ngā manuhiri a Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti, ka noho tonu te kairangakura ki te paetapu, hai whakaruruhau i te rangatahi i roto i ā rātou whakahaere. Mā te noho pērā a te kairangakura ka mauritau te rangatahi i te mōhio kai reira te kairangakura hai whakaruruhau ki te tiaki i ngā mea wāhine, i ngā mea tāne hoki. Me te pai hoki nō rātou, nō te rangatahi ngā marae katoa o Te Whakatōhea, nō reira ki te hē, ka pai kai te wākāinga.

Anā nā ēnei mahi whakangungu, whakapakari, whakarauora o roto i ngā momo wānanga o Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti, ki te poto ngā paepae i ngā tangihanga, i ngā hui ā iwi mō Te Whakatōhea anake anā kai runga i te marae nō reira te rangatahi kua tūkina atu hai whakakīkī i ngā whāwhārua.

He tauira tēnei ki te rautaki a Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti ki te whakarauora i te reo, whakarauora i ngā tikanga o te whaikōrero, o te mihi whakatau, o te karanga, o te mōteatea hoki, arā te kawa me ngā tikanga marae o Te Whakatōhea.

Ko te rautaki hoki ki te whakatūtū tohunga Ringatū hai whakahaere i ngā karakia mō runga i ngā marae o Te Whakatōhea. Ehara i te mea, koinei anake te kura, koinei anake te ako e kao. He amo tēnei o te whānuitanga o ngā momo wānanga, o ngā momo kuranga, o ngā momo akoako a Te Whakatōhea, engari he whai wāhi nui tō tēnei wānanga o Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti, tō tēnei rautaki a Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti ki te rautaki whānui a te iwi. He aha i kīa pērātia ai, kai te kitea, kai te rongohia, kai te mōhioia ko te rangatahi kai te pakari ki ā rātou tikanga o te karanga, o te whaikōrero, o te karakia Ringatū nō roto mai anō hoki i a Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti.

## 5.5 Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti me ngā kapa haka o Te Whakatōhea

I roto i ōna rua tekau mā whā tau kua kitea ake te whai wāhi a Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti ki ngā mahi kapa haka a te iwi mai i ngā pīpī paopao ki ngā pakeke. Nā tērā tūāhuatanga anō hoki kua kitea te eke anō o te kounga o te kapa haka ki taumata kē. “If you have a look at our primary school level of haka now, every single rōpū kura . . . their level of haka has picked up. We've been lucky where almost every kapa, every school team is tutored by someone from OMT or a whānau of, and Waioeka. It's reached out to all the schools. That's made a good impact cultural wise . . . but it's even like the education side, we are all in schools teaching one thing or another . . . so there has definitely been a trickle [down] effect from being a part of OMT” (Te Huawai Pārae Report, personal communication, 2018).

Anā, kua kuhu atu ngā kaihaka o Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti ki roto i ngā kura o Te Whakatōhea ki te whakaako i ngā kura ki te kapa haka mō te Delamere Cup kai ngā reanga katoa mai i ngā pīpī paopao, tau tuatahi ki ngā tamariki kura tāitamariki, tau tekau, tau atu anō hoki ki Kura Ki Uta ko te kapa haka tērā o te Kāreti o Ōpōtiki. Nā konei kua noho hoki a Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti hai wānanga whakatipu i ngā kaiako kapa haka mō te nāianei, mō te āpōpō hoki. Anā, ko ngā pūkenga, ko ngā tikanga kua whakawhiwhia mai ai i ngā wānanga o Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti kua whāngaia atu ki ngā tamariki, mokopuna a te iwi me ngā tauwiwi hoki i roto mai i ngā kura tuatahi o te rohe. Nā te mea ko ngā kura katoa o Ōpōtiki ka uru ki te Delamere Cup, ka uru ngā kura, ka uru ko ngā tamariki katoa o ngā kura Māori mai, Pākehā mai, Hainamana mai aha atu, aha atu. Nō reira ko ngā tamariki o te hāpori whānui o Ōpōtiki ka whai wāhi ki ngā tikanga kapa haka a Te Whakatōhea, ko tāna tū tērā.

Tau atu anō hoki ki Kura Ki Uta, he pērā anō, ko te rohe o tēnā kura mai Te Waimana ki Te Whānau a Apanui. Ahakoa tērā ka whakapūmautia te tū ake a Te Whakatōhea i te mea nō Te Whakatōhea tēnā kura. I te tīmatatanga o te whai wāhi o Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti ki te whakaako i ngā kura i tonoa mai ahau ki te tito waiata mā ō rātou kura kai te whakaakona. Nā, nō roto mai i ngā tau kua tahuri ko rātou ake ki te tito i ā ratou ake waiata.

Ko ngā hua kua kitea ake i roto i ēnei tūāhuatanga o te whakaako kapa haka kura ko te eke o te kounga o te kapa haka mō roto i ngā kura ki taumata kē. Arā ko Kura Ki Uta kua tae ki te taumata o te motu i te tau 2000 i tuatoru, 2014 i tuarua. Ko ngā kaiako me ngā kaitito he kaihaka nō Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti. Ki ngā whakataetae ā motu kura tuatahi i eke Te Kura Kaupapa Māori o Waioweka ki te taumata i te tau 2016 i tuatoru, 2018 i tuarua. Ko ngā kaiako me ngā kaitito he kaihaka nō Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti. Nō reira ko te whakaatu tērā i te pakari me te mātau o ngā kaihaka ki tō rātou reo Māori, he whakaatu anō tērā i te pakari o te wānanga nei o Ōpōtiki Mai

Tawhiti ki te whakangungu i ana kaihaka, kua puta te ihu kua kaiako kapa haka, kua kaitito kapa haka.

Āe i tae anō ngā kura o Te Whakatōhea ki ēnei whakataetae ā motu i mua i te tīmatatanga o Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti, engari ināianei he mārama te kite atu i te tū a Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti e āritarita ana i roto i ngā whakaakoranga ki ngā kura, āe e mārama ana anō hoki ki ngā iwi o te motu, ae ko Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti tērā, ko te tū tērā a Te Whakatōhea, kua kōhatū, kua tangata whenuatia ki roto i ngā uri, ki roto hoki ki ngā kapa haka a Te Whakatōhea, kōhanga reo mai, kura tuatahi mai, kura kaupapa Māori mai, kāreti mai, pakeke mai. Ko te tū a Te Whakatōhea i ēnei rā, ko tā Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti, ko te waihaka a ngā wāhine, nā te kairangakura i whakairo i roto i te wānanga o Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti.



*Whakaahua 12: Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti, Te Matatini, 2015 . Ko te kupu whakamana nā Te Matatini. Ko te mana whakaae, Ōpōtiki Mai tawhiti.*

Nō te tau 2016 i whakaara ake anō te hapū o Ngāti Ira i tōna anō kapa haka ko Waioweka. Kua kōrerotia kētia a Waioweka. Kua roa te hapū e wawata ana kia tū anō te kapa haka o Waioweka, he iwi haka a Ngāti Ira, koia te hapū pakari o te katoa ki te haka. He kura tuatahi tōna anā, kua hakahaka ngā mokopuna i te whānautanga mai ki te ao nei, kai roto i te toto. Anā, ko te wānanga i taea ai e Ngāti Ira te whakatinana i ōna moemoeā ko Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti. Ko Ngāti Ira te tāhuhu nui o Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti mai anō i tōnā tīmatatanga i te mea ko rātou te iwi pakari ki te haka o te Te Whakatōhea. Anā ka tū a Waioweka ki te Whakataetae ā Rohe o Mātaatua i tū ki Ruatoki i taua tau, anā ka uru anō hoki a Waioweka i tuarima, i whai wāhi ki Te Matatini 2017 ki Ngati Kahungunu. Ko te nuinga o ngā kaihaka o Waioweka i whakangungua ki te paepae o te wānanga o Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti i roto i ōna 21 tau i tērā wā, 2016. Ko ngā kaiako me ngā kaitito nō roto mai i te wānanga o Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti. Ko te tū a Waioweka ko te tū a Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti, ko tōna āhua ko Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti me aha e kore ai? Waihoki ko te

wānanga kua hoki anō ki te wānanga, i tīmata te kairangakura nōna e taitamariki ana ki ngā mahi kapa haka a te pakeke i roto i te wānanga o Waioweka Nui Ā Kiwa i te tau 1984 tae noatia ka whakamoea tērā kapa haka. Ko ētahi o ngā pūkenga o te kairangakura; pūkenga ā whakaako, pūkenga ā tito, pūkenga ā tū i haramai i roto i te wānanga o Waioweka. Engari i roto i te rua tekau mā whā tau o Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti nā te kairangakura i whakairo anō tāna ake tū kua noho koiora te tū a Te Whakatōhea. Anā i roto i ngā tau kua whakairotia tā te kairangakura moko o te haka, o te tū a Te Whakatōhea e kawea ana e Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti, anā kua pērā anō te waihaka a Waioweka. Kāore e hapa i roto i ngā tau ka heke, ka whakairotia e ngā mana whakahaere o Waioweka tā rātou moko o te haka o Waioweka ki tā rātou ake tū e puta motuhake ai te wānanga o Waioweka i te ātaarangi o te wānanga o Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti.



*Whakaahua 13: Te kairangakura, Te Kahautu Maxwell i te kapa haka o Waioweka-Nui-A-Kiwa, Koroneihana, Tūrangaewae, 1984. Ko te mana whakaahua nō Te Kahautu Maxwell.*

Kua ora mai anō ngā marae i ngā mahi kapa haka. Hai ngā tangihanga, hai ngā mārena, hai ngā hura kōhatū, hai ngā momo hui katoa o runga i ngā marae kua tū te kapa haka, ko ngā mema o Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti ki runga i ō rātou ake marae o Te Whakatōhea ki te whakangahau i te iwi, i te manuhiri hoki. He āhuetanga i kitea e te kairangakura ki runga o Pākirikiri marae ki roto o Tokomaru, ki Te Whānau a Ruataupare ki roto o Ngāti Porou, anā te tūnga mai o ngā kaumātua o te kapa haka rongonui ko Te Hokowhitu-ā-Tū ki roto o Hinematikotai, te wharekai o reira ki te whakangahau i te iwi. Ko ngā tūāhine o Ngoi Pēwhairangi ērā, ko Hārata Coleman, ko Karaumata (Nunu) Kīngi me Wikitōria (Nan) Matahiki, Anaru Takurua, te kuia rā a Googs me te hoa tauira, te hoa mahi a te kairangakura a Nātana Takurua kua mate nei me te huhua o rātou, ka mutu ko te ngahau kē. Koirā i wawatatia ai e te kairangakura mō tōna marae a Terere me

ngā hapū katoa o Te Whakatōhea. Anā nā Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti tērā āhuatanga i taea ai e te iwi. Ko te whakaaro kua tinana, kua tinana ko te whakaaro.

Te Matatini provides a platform for those Kapa Haka who want to compete, but for other groups, entertainment and the participation in protocol and customary practice on the marae as a kapa haka is of equal value, especially in the preservation of te reo and tikanga (Papesch, 2015, p.189).

Pinepine te kura, hau te kura; ko Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti he Kura nui, he Kura roa, he Kura nā Tūhaepō.

## 5.6 Titikaha

Kua kuramahora te ariā o Te Kura Roa nei a Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti me tōna whakapaparanga i te ao tūāuriuri, whāioio taka noa mai ki runga ki a Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti me te whakatau he aha i nui ai te mahi kapa haka ki Te Whakatōhea. Kua horahia te takapau o te wānanga o Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti me te whakaari mai i ngā mahinga a Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti i roto i ngā tau e rua tekau mā whā. Ae tuatahi, ko tōna ōrokofīmatatanga ko te whakatū kapa haka hai pupuri i te mauri o Te Whakatōhea i te tau 1995 nā te mea i tū ai te Whakataetae ā Rohe o Mātaatua ki Te Whakatōhea me te korenga o tētahi kapa haka. Engari i roto i te rua tekau mā whā tau ōna kua noho ko Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti hai wānanga mō te iwi, he Kura Roa. Nāna i raro i te kairangakura i whakarauora te reo o Te Whakatōhea mā te kukume mai i ngā kupu me ngā kōrero o whakapatā nō roto mai i ngā mōteatea a te iwi, i ngā haka, ngeri a te iwi mō roto mai i ngā waiata, haka kua titoa motuhaketia mō Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti, ko ngā whakatauākī i titoa e te kairangakura mō Te Whakatōhea ake. Ko reira i noho tangata whenua ai ērā kupu, ērā kīanga ki te hinengaro, te ngākau me te arero o ngā kaihaka o Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti hai kupu, hai reo kōrerorero, hai reo whaikōrero, hai reo karanga, hai reo whakairo waiata, haka anō hoki.

Ko Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti te kaiwhakapoapaoa i te hunga tapepa ki te reo, i te hunga reo kore ki te whai i te reo kia ako, ki te whai i te reo kia pakari, ki te whai i te reo kia mātau. Ko te Ara Reo tērā, ko te whai i ngā kaumātua tērā. Te take i pērā ai i tukuna ā rātou tamariki, mokopuna hoki ki ngā kōhanga reo, ki ngā kura kaupapa, wharekura, ki ngā whare wānanga hoki ki te whai i Te Tohu Paetahi, arā he pīrangi nō ngā mātua me ngā kaumātua kia ako i te reo kia pai ai te tautoko i ō rātou whānau ki roto hoki i te reo.

Nō reira mai i te tokoiti i mātau ki te kōrero i te tau 1995 e rua tekau mā whā tau ki muri ko te tokomaha e mātau ana ki te kōrero i tōna reo Māori.

*Whakamoemititia Ia i runga i te tangi a te tētere, whakamemititia Ia i runga i te hātere me te hāpa. Whakarongo e tāku tamaiti ki te ako a tōu pāpā, kua e whakarērea te ture a tōu whaea, ā ka waiho hai whakapaipai ātaahua mō tōu mātenga, hai mekameka whakapaipai mō tōu kakī e taku tamaiti.*

He karakia whakamoemiti nā Te Hāhi Ringatū; kai roto hoki i te karakia nei, ko ngā kōrero mō te ako me te ture, ko te ture ko ngā tikanga ērā mō te tōtōā, mō te kauanuanu.

I pānuitia atu ko te ahi kōmau a Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti, ko te ahi tapu a Rāwiri, arā ko te Hāhi Ringatū. Ko Te Hāhi Ringatū te kāmaka o Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti ko āna whakahaere katoa ka tīmata i roto i te tapu, ā hai te mutunga rā anō ka pōkaia te takapau o te wānanga mō tahi wā anō ki te karakia ka whakatūwhera a Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti ki te whai ao, ki te ao kikokiko.

I roto i ngā whakahaere Ringatū ko te whakatipu i Te Ringatū i roto i Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti, anā ko te akoako i ngā uri o Te Whakatōhea ki ngā tikanga a Te Ringatū, ōna kura anō hoki a ngā mātua, tīpuna mai rā anō i te tau 1869 te tomokanga mai a Te Matua tangata me tōna whakapono ka poua ki roto i Te Whakatōhea hai whakapono mō Te Whakatōhea, he waka wairua, he waka oranga hai kawē i ngā tūmanakotanga o Te Whakatōhea mai i roto i ngā raupatu whenua ki te nāianeī.

He whakatipu tohunga mō te āpōpō te mahi a Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti he kura i te rangatahi ki ngā tikanga me ngā whakahaere a Te Ringatū, ko ngā karakia Whakamōemiti me āna hīmene, pānui, waiata me ngā inoi me ngā takutaku e tika ana. Ko ngā Hāpati me āna hīmene, pānui, waiata me ngā inoi me ngā takutaku e tika ana. Ko ngā karakia Tono anō hoki me āna hīmene, pānui, waiata me ngā inoi me ngā takutaku e tika ana. Ko ngā karakia Tuku me āna hīmene, pānui, waiata me ngā inoi me ngā takutaku e tika ana.

He ako i a Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti ki ngā kupu whakaari me ngā mōteatea a te Matua Tangata e pā ana ki a Te Whakatōhea, otirā ki Te Hāhi Ringatū whānui, ko āna tikanga ērā. Ko te tiki mai i ngā kōrero, i ngā kupu, i ngā kupu whakaari a Te Matua Tangata hai whakarawai i ngā titonga hou mō Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti, hai reo kōrerorero mō ngā uri o Te Whakatōhea, mō Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti.

Nō reira ko tā Te Hāhi Ringatū he whakahauora i te wairua o Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti me āna tāngata me te korowai i a ia mō roto i te tapu o te Wairua Tapu o Ihowā te Atua ora o ngā mano.

Ko tā Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti he whakarauora anō i Te Hāhi Ringatū he pērā tā Te Hāhi whakarauora i Te Whakatōhea mai i te tau 1869.

*I roto i te pōuri te māramatanga e whiti ana, heoi kīhai i mai i te pōuri. Korōria ki tō ingoa tapu. Āmine.*

I roto i ngā whakahaere ōna, o Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti i roto i ngā tau e rua tekau mā whā i Kura Roa ko ngā tikanga a Te Whakatōhea, ko ngā mōteatea ērā mō runga i ngā paetapu, ko ngā karanga ērā ki runga i te marae, ko ngā whaikōrero ērā ki runga i te paetapu ko te kawa tērā o ngā marae o Te Whakatōhea.

Ko te Kura Roa e kōrerohia ake nei ko te kura i ngā uri e tika ana hai mau i ērā tūranga o te iwi. Ko te whakangungu i a rātou ki ngā tikanga me te kawa o te Te Whakatōhea kia ora ai ngā paetapu o te iwi i te mea kua paenekeneke ngā paetapu ko te whakarauora i ngā paetapu o ngā hapū o Te Whakatōhea ā mōteatea, ā karanga, ā whaikōrero. Ko ngā uri e tika ana; ko tāna tikanga ko ngā uri o ngā whānau kai te pupuri i te mauri o te karanga, o te whaikōrero hoki kai ngā marae, kai ngā hapū o Te Whakatōhea. I te mea kai te pērā ngā paetapu o Te Whakatōhea ehara i te mea ka tū poka noa te tangata ki te pīrangi ia ki aua mahi, e kao, he mauri kai ērā tūranga mā ngā uri o ngā whānau kai te pupuri ki taua mauri mā rātou e tū ki te kawē i ērā tūranga tapu. Nō reira ko tā te Kura Roa nei o Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti he whakatipu i ngā uri kai roto i Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti ki te whakatikatika i a rātou, tērā te wā ka tau tērā korowai ki runga ki a rātou ki te kawē i ērā tūranga tapu, i ērā tikanga tapu a te iwi e pakari ai te kawa o te marae.

Ko ngā kaupapa kua whakatakotohia ake rā ko te reo, ko Te Hāhi Ringatū, ko ngā tikanga o te marae, ko te kawa o te marae, ko ngā mōteatea, ko te paetapu, ko te paekaranga; katoa ēnei ngoikoretanga o te iwi o Te Whakatōhea; otirā ko ngā rautaki hai whakarauora mā Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti mō Te Whakatōhea; ko tā te kairangakura whakapae he hā nā te raupatu. Arā katoa ēnei mate o te iwi he mea tuku mai nā te raupatu whenua. Arā te whakatauaākī a Mokomoko; “*Patu tangata, patu whenua*”, i roto i te horopaki o tēnei rā; “*Patu tangata, patu whenua, patu reo, patu tikanga*” he raupatu katoa ēnei. Koia tēnei, ko tā te rautaki nei ki te whakarauora katoa i ēnei raupatunga ki runga ki a Te Whakatōhea i roto i te wānanga nei o Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti e kīa nei ko Te Kura Roa.

Hoi anō ko te pātai ka pēhea te reo o Te Whakatōhea, Te Hāhi Ringatū, ngā tikanga o te marae, te kawa o te marae, te paetapu, te paekaranga, te paemōteatea. Ko tāku e whakapae nei ka tohenihorautia e Te Whakatōhea tōna mate, ka tohenihorautia e Te Whakatōhea tōna ora. Arā, kua pakari, kua tangata whenua o roto i ngā rua tekau mā whā tau; ka pakari haere ake, ka

pakari haere ake. Ko te whakapono kua kōhatu ngā tikanga a Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti, kua tangata whenua ki roto i te rangatahi te hunga ka kaihautū i tēnei wānanga ki tua atu o te pae tawhiti ki nukurau-roa-ao. Anā ko tā te wānanga he nukutawhiti, he nukutawhiti i te mate ki te ora kia tū toherauariki a Te Whakatōhea i a Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti.

Mā te titonga nei e whakaatu te kōkiri me te tohe a Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti kia toheraoa, tohenihorau ōna kia tū toherauariki i tana tangi ki te whenua, ki tana wero ki te Pirimia ki te whakatau wawe i te kerēme a Te Whakatōhea, ko reira e tiaki ana te mana Māori motuhake o Te Whakatōhea ki te tūmata, ki te anamata.

### WHAKAEKE: PURUHETI TĪ, PURUHETI KŌ

*Auē taukurī te mamae i ahau e,*

*Kua riro taku whenua.*

*Te Kāwanatanga tika haramai*

*Ki te whakaora i a mātou.*

*Nō te mea kai roto mātou i te pōuritanga,*

*Kāhore he maungārongo ki te hunga kino.*

*E ai tā tōku Atua, hoki mai me hoatu te korōria te hōnore.*

*E te Pirimia hōmai te oranga nui ki a mātou Te Whakatōhea ake, ake.*

*He aha rā kai tōku ihu e waitohu noa nei,*

*He wawara taua pea, tēnei ka tata mai.*

*Kāore ia rā ko Te Pārematamēne,*

*Puruheti tī! Puruheti kō!*

*Harahara aitū harahara ā tai,*

*He aroha noa ake nōku ki te whenua.*

*Nō mua ngā kī hō waiho i roto,*

*Tūtaki rawa mai ki te rangi o te kakari.*

*Nau mai haere te tira haurangi o Tama-Mai-Ki-Whenua*

*He poupourangi te taru nāna i hōmai ki te riri,*

*Nā te waha i kī, nā te ringa i paepae.*

*Me tau ahau ki te tauwati,*

*Muru Papa-tahuaroa,*

*Nāna i horo te whetū, nāna i horo te marama,*

*Te Whakatōhea!*

*Kua tae mai ki Te Paremata ki Te Ūpoko o Te Ika.*

*Tangohia mai te taura i taku kakī,*

*Horahia mai te ture, e te Pārematamēne,*

*Puruheti tī! Puruheti kō!*

(Whakaeke: Puruheti Tī, Puruheti Kō, Te Kahautu Maxwell, i hakaina ki Te Matatini,  
2019)

“I roto i te pōuri te māramatanga e whiti ana heoi kīhai i mau i te pōuri”.

*... Ka noho pani nei,  
I pani ki te whenua,  
I pani ki te tangata,  
Au tangi kau iho i te pō  
Ka whakatū ki hea te aroha,  
Te tōnga o te rā ki a Rikirangi,  
Ko tōku whanaunga ia tērā,  
Inā te āhua i mihi ki te whenua,  
I tangi ki te tangata,  
Ka noho wairangi nei ...*

He wāhanga tēnei nā te waiata tangi a Te Araroa nō Te Teko.

He waka whawhai a Te Kooti me tana whakapono a Te Ringatū mō te mana Māori motuhake o te tangata o te iwi Māori, kia whakahokia mai. Hai tā Mita Rēnta; The Ringatū faith of Te Kooti and his followers had ‘sprung from a desire...to find for themselves a religion which shall be different from that which is professed by those whom they have been at war’ (Porter, 2003).

Ko taku whakapae koianeī i tere te tuku a Te Whakatōhea i a ia ki raro i te maru o Te Kooti me tana whakapono o Te Hāhi Ringatū. He maha ōna ritenga i pērā ai; ko te Paimārire tērā ka tau mai te raruraru ki Ōpōtiki me Tūranga. Ko te pakanga whakapono tērā, whakapono ki te whakapono me te Kāwanatanga. Ko ngā whakapaeteka ērā me te whakarau harakore o Mokomoko rāua ko Te Kooti. Ko te murunga whenua tērā, ko te patunga tāngata tērā. Rāua, rāua he rite ō rāua whakapapa. Anā i mārena i roto i te mate, i mārena i roto i te ora. Ko Te Kooti me Te Hāhi Ringatū he waka i taea ai e Te Whakatōhea te uta atu i ōna tūmanakotanga katoatanga ki runga ki te whakarauora i a ia, ki te whakahoki mai anō i tōna tuakiri kia tū hai iwi kaha, iwi mana, iwi rangatira anō hoki i raro i te kotahitanga o te wairua i a Ihowā te Atua Ora o Ngā Mano ki roto i Te Hāhi Ringatū. E whai kia mau te kotahitanga o te wairua he mea paihere nā te rangimārie.

*“I roto i te pōuri te māramatanga e whiti ana”.*

## Ko te Kura nā Tūhaepō

---

Ko te Kura nā Tūhaepō koia tēnei e haea nei te pō e tū mārama ai te whatukura ki tēnei rangakura o roto mai i tēnei tuhikura e ai ki tā te kairangakura. Ae ko te kura tēnei e titikaha ai tēnei rangakura me te whakatau ae e taea ai te whakarauora i te iwi kua rapatungia ōna whenua, āna tikanga, tōna reo, ōna rawa katoa e ngā whiunga taumaha a te Pākehā mā roto mai i te pupuri ki ngā tikanga me ngā whakahaunga a Te Kooti me tōna whakapono a Te Hāhi Ringatū e noho nei hai kāmaka mō te kapa haka o Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti e haika ai i tōna waka ki te whakarauora i te reo o Te Whakatōhea, ki te whakarauora i ngā tikanga marae me te kawa o Te Whakatōhea, ōna paetapu, ōna paekaranga, ōna paemōteatea me ngā tohunga hoki mō te āpōpō o Te Hāhi Ringatū me te whakatipu i te kāhui whakapono o Te Hāhi Ringatū mā roto mai i ngā tikanga whakahaere a Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti i tōna wānanga ko te Kura Roa kua kōrerotia ake nei ia i roto i ngā tau e rua tekau mā whā kua mahue ake nei mai i tōna ōrokoīmatatanga i te tau 1995.

Ko ngā moemoeā me ngā tūmanako o te kairangakura mō Te Whakatōhea i taea ai e te kairangakura te whakatinana mā rōto mai i te kapa haka o Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti. Mā tēnei wāhanga o te hīmene mō te tūā a Te Hāhi Ringatū hai whakaatū i tā te kairangakura whai mā roto mai i te rautaki nāna i whakatakoto mō te kapa haka o Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti. I tangohia mai ēnei karaipiture i a **Hoera 2: 28**

*Ā e poropiti ā koutou taitamariki... ā koutou tamāhine...*

*Ka moemoeā ō koutou kaumātua... ka kite anō hoki...*

*Ā koutou taitamariki... i ngā whakakitenga nui...*

### 6.1 Whanake Te Kura i raro i a Awarua

Kua tangihia e te hōrirerie te rongopai o tēnei kura ki te rire o te rangi, ki te rire o te whenua, kia rongo ai i te rire o te ngākau tangata ki tōna reo Atua, ki te reo o ōna waka; ka tangi te kura ka tangi wiwini, ka tangi te kura ka tangi wawana ko Aotearoa, Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti ka tau kai uta. Kua hakiri ki tōna hākoakoa, ki tōna hāuriuri, ki tōna hānōnoke, ki tōna hāaraara anō i roto i ngā mano tau ka rerehu atu ki te muri, ka urarā ki te pae. I mumura te hikanga ahi tapu ki te kaunati hikahika a te tipuna nei a Rāwiri i tere i nui ao me ngā moana i kauria e Te Whakatōhea i tana hikanga i tana ahi i te kimihanga i te ara o te tikanga i pai ai tāna noho ki tawhito rangi i te ao nā, kia pai ai hoki tāna noho ki tū rangi i te ao nei. I kahupapatia tēnei kura, kua

whakapuakina tā ināmata kupu me tā tūmata tonu nei kupu hai whatu i ngā kura i te huanga mai ko Te Whakatōhea e tū nei i tōna mana Māori motuhake.

I te tīmatanga o tēnei kura i kakea ai te toihiarewa te ara o Tāwhaki ki ngā Atua Māori. Nā konei ake ai i whakaheke ihotia te iho Atua, te iho ariki o ngā waka ariki, i hua ai ko Te Whakatōhea iwi, i pouwhenuatia ai ko Te Whakatōhea mana whenua, i tokatū moanatia ai ko Te Whakatōhea mana moana, i poutiriaorangitia ai ko Te Whakatōhea mana rangi. Ka kuramahora te korowai o Te Whakatōhea e raupītia ai tōna whenuakura, ōnā tūtohu whenua, ōna hapū, ōna marae me ngā iwi kai te remu o tōna korowai whenuakura.

Kua matapakitia te whatinga mai o te tai Pākehā ki tātahi me ōnā whiunga porotāwhaowhao i pōtukia ki te rae o Te Whakatōhea. Ko te taenga mai o te Atua hohou rongō tērā, ko te riri taua nui tērā, ko te muru whenua tērā, ka mutu ka mate tangata, mate whenua, mate tikanga, mate reo.

Kua kuramahora te kitea o tā Te Whakatōhea pupuri ki tōna tuakiri me tōna mana mai i rā anō i te tīmatanga o te ao i ngā Atua i a Tāwhaki, i a Tamaiwaho, i a Māui heke rawa mai ki te hekenga mai o ngā waka ki te tatūtanga o Te Whakatōhea hai iwi motuhake i mau tonu ia ki tōna tuakiri. Nā te whakapapa tērā āhuatanga ōna i pērā ai. Ko te mōhio ōna ki a ia anō. Kai roto i tōna toto e rere ana ko te ira Atua, ko te ira tipua, ko te ira ariki, ko te ira tangata. E kīa ana he momo tērā. Arā he momo nō tērā ira, tērā kāwai, ērā tīpuna, kua hanumi, kua kotahi e hua mai ai tērā kotahitanga o ērā matatini o te tawatawainga e kīa nei ko te tuakiri tērā o tēnei mea ko te iwi. Anā, i tēnei kura ko Te Whakatōhea te iwi.

Ahako ko ngā ururua, ko ngā tairo a Kupe, ko ngā taru tawhiti i urutomokia a Te Whakatōhea e waho, arā ko te tai Pākehā me tōna matatini, mata-ora, mata-hua, mata-rawa, mata-pai me tērā hoki o te mata-mate, mata-kino, mata-tinihanga, mata-rua katoa atu he tini hēanga.

Ko te tauhokohoko tērā i ātawhaitia e Te Whakatōhea, ko te whaiwhai wērā tērā i hua mai ai ko te ōhanga o te iwi, ko ngā hangarau hou i tōia mai te iwia Te Whakatōhea i te ao kōhatū ki te ao hou. I konā i rerekē ai te noho a te iwi ki tōna anō ao. Engari ko tā Te Whakatōhea he hanumi i ērā tūāhuatanga ko te ao Pākehā ki tōna anō ao, hoi anō ko te mutunga iho ko tōna anō tuakiri i mau tonu iho ko Te Whakatōhea iwi, ko Te Whakatōhea tangata.

Ko te hohoutanga o te rongopai i rerekē anō ai tōna ao. I konei i tau iho, i tāmutumutu ai ko tāna pupuri ki te ao o te patu tangata, ki te kai tangata, ki ngā tikanga a tana Atua riri o Tamaiwaho. Ko te hohou tērā i te āhuareka o te nōhanga tahitanga a ngā tūākana me ngā taina

i te whakaaro kotahi. I konei i hanumi tonu ai ko te whakapono Māori ki te whakapono Karaitiana kia Te Whakatōhea tonu āna whakahaere, āna tikanga me te mau tonu ki ngā mahi a te tohunga ki roto ki te rongopai me te tapu o tēnei mea ko te karakia. Hai konā i mau tonu ai a Te Whakatōhea ki tōna tuakiri i roto i te whakapono i hau mai ai, i hou mai ai ki tōna ao.

Nā roto tonu mai i te whakapono ka tau iho ai ko te tūtukitanga ki te mata-mate, mata-kino, mata-tinihanga, mata-rua o te tai Pākehā. Anā i raupatutia ai ko te whenua, i kōhurutia ai ko te tangata, i murua ai ko te tikanga, i patua ai ko te wairua. Nō roto ana mai i tēnei mate kino nui i kitea ko te pakari o Te Whakatōhea ki te pakanga ki te mate kia puta ko tōna ora. Ko te tohetohe tērā ki te hē kia tū ko te tika i te mea ko te kaha o tana whakapono he harakore, anā i whawhai mō tana mana, ko tana tuakiri tērā. Ka kitea i tēnei rā kai konei tonu ko Te Whakatōhea i kimihia te ara o te tikanga kia pai ai tana noho i tēnei ao; ko tana ū ki tana kaupapa i ngā petihana, ko tana tohe ki tana harakore tērā e puta ai ia i te mate ki te ora. Ka riro mai he kamapeihana ka tū ko Te Poari Māori o Te Whakatōhea. Anā i raro i tērā kua hua mai ko ana kauapapa maha katoa, ko te hoko mai i te whenua hai whakahoki mai i te whenua, ko te whakarauora i te iwi, ā hauora, ā, wairua, ā hinengaro, ā tinana, ā mātauranga, ā tikanga, ā reo, ā mātauranga o Te Whakatōhea, ā mātauranga whānui o te ao, ā ōhanga, ā nōhonga whare, ā whakawhanaketanga, ā te katoa. Ā, ko te whakatutuki i te kerēme ā Te Whakatōhea tērā kāore anō kia tatū iho engari e tohetohe tonungia ana ko tana harakore hai whakahoki mai i tōna mana ko tana tuakiri ka puta mai i te mate ki te ora.

I roto i ēnei mahi a Te Whakatōhea ko te whai kia mau ki tōna mana, ko te tuakiri tērā, ko te whakapakari i te iwi kia kitea mai ko tōna kaha ki te pakanga i te mate kia puta ko te ora o Te Whakatōhea iwi. Ko te tūmanako ka tau hai tēnei tau 2019.

I roto i ēnei mahi a Te Whakatōhea ko te whai kia mau ki tōna mana, ko te tuakiri tērā, ko te whakapakari i te iwi kia kitea mai ko tōna kaha ki te pakanga i te mate kia puta ko te ora o Te Whakatōhea iwi. *“Tohenihoratia taku mate, tohenihorautia taku ora”* He wāhanga tēnei mai i te whakaeke a Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti i 2019. Anei a Te Whakatōhea, tēnei ko Te Whakatōhea, ko te kura nei ko te Tohekura o Te Whakatōhea. Ko te kura tēnei i whanake i raro i te Awarua o Te Whakatōhea, kura tawhito, kura hou. Kua Kura nui, kua Kura roa, kua Kura tēnei nā Tūhaepō.

*“Patu tangata, patu whenua, harakore!”*

He whakataukī tēnei kua waitohutia ki te tipuna whare o Ruamoko ki roto o Ngāti Patumoana, Te Whakatōhea.

## 6.2 Te Kura Nui

Mai rā anō i te 27 o Hānuere 1869 kua kotahi rau, e rima tekau tau i tēnei tau 2019 a Te Whakatōhea e whai ana i Te Hāhi Ringatū te whakapono i hohoutia ai e Te Kooti tōna rongō. Kotahi rau whā tekau mā iwa tau ko Te Kooti hai Matuatanga mō Te Whakatōhea, e ū tonu nei, e pūmau tonu nei, ka whakapūmau tonu nei e tēnā whakatipuranga, e tēnā whakatipuranga haere ake nei, haere ake nei.

Ko ngā whakahaunga me ngā tikanga a Te Matua tangata i whakarauora i te noho Māori ā iwi a Te Whakatōhea; *“Kimihia e te iwi te ara o te tikanga i pai ai te noho i te ao nei”*. Ko āna mōteateatea ērā, ko āna haka ērā, ko āna karakia ērā, ko āna kupu whakaari ērā i waiho hai takitaki i a Te Whakatōhea ki roto i ngā ururua, i ngā tairo a Kupe i arataki i a Te Whakatōhea kia kite *i roto i te pōuri te māramatanga e whiti ana*. Nā Te Kooti me tana whakapono hou a Te Ringatū i whakarauora, i mau ai ngā tikanga a Te Whakatōhea kia noho Māori tonu ia ki roto ki tōna ao, ahakoa te pōkaikaha, ahakoa te pōtatutatu me ngā whiu taumaha a te Kāwanatanga ki runga ki Te Whakatōhea. Ae kua panoni ngā tikanga a Te Whakatōhea engari, ae kai te Māori tonu ngā tikanga a Te Whakatōhea, nā Te Kooti me tana whakapono a Te Ringatū i taea ai tēnei noho a Te Whakatōhea ki roto ki tōna ao nei ahakoa i pani i te murunga o te whenua, i mate tangata, i mate whenua. I pani i te matenga o te tangata i ngā riri whenua.

He waka whawhai mō te mana Māori motuhake o te tangata o te iwi Māori, kia whakahokia mai. Hai te Mita Rēnta; The Ringatū faith of Te Kooti and his followers had ‘sprung from a desire...to find for themselves a religion which shall be different from that which is professed by those whom they have been at war’ "(Porter, 2003).

Ko taku whakapae koiane i tere te tuku a Te Whakatōhea i a ia ki raro i te maru o Te Kooti me tana whakapono o Te Hāhi Ringatū. He maha ōna ritenga i pērā ai; ko te Paimārire tērā ka tau mai te raruraru ki Ōpōtiki me Tūranga. Ko te pakanga whakapono tērā, whakapono ki te whakapono me te Kāwanatanga. Ko ngā whakapaeteka ērā me te whakarau harakore o Mokomoko rāua ko Te Kooti. Ko te murunga whenua tērā, ko te patunga tāngata tērā. Rāua, rāua he rite ō rāua whakapapa. Anā i mārena i roto i te mate, i mārena i roto i te ora. Ko Te Kooti me Te Hāhi Ringatū he waka i taea e Te Whakatōhea te uta atu ōna tūmanakotanga katoatanga ki runga ki te whakarauora i a ia, ki te whakahoki mai anō i tōna tuakiri kia tū hai iwi kaha, iwi mana, iwi rangatira anō hoki i raro i te Kotahitanga o te wairua i a Ihowā te Atua Ora o Ngā Mano ki roto i Te Hāhi Ringatū. E whai kia mau te kotahitanga o te wairua he mea paihere nā te rangimārie.

*I roto i te pōuri te māramatanga e whiti.*

### **6.3 Te Kura Roa**

Kua kuramahora te ariā o Te Kura Roa nei a Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti me tōna whakapaparanga i te ao tūāuriuri, whāioio taka noa mai ki runga ki a Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti me te whakatau he aha i nui ai te mahi kapa haka ki Te Whakatōhea. Kua horahia te takapau o te wānanga o Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti me te whakaari mai i ngā mahinga a Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti i roto i ngā tau e rua tekau mā whā. Ae tuatahi, ko tōna ōrokotīmatatanga ko te whakatū kapa haka hai pupuri i te mauri o Te Whakatōhea i te tau 1995 nā te mea i tū ai te Whakataetae ā Rohe o Mātaatua ki Te Whakatōhea me te korenga o tētahi kapa haka. Engari i roto i te rua tekau mā whā tau ōna kua noho ko Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti hai wānanga mō te iwi, he Kura Roa. Nāna i whakarauora te reo o Te Whakatōhea mā te kukume mai ngā kupu me ngā kōrero o whakapatā nō roto mai i ngā mōteatea a te iwi, i ngā haka, ngeri a te iwi mō roto mai i ngā waiata, haka kua titoa motuhaketia mō Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti. Ko reira i noho tangata whenua ai ērā kupu ki te hinengaro, te ngākau me te arero o ngā kaihaka o Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti hai kupu, hai reo kōrerorero, hai reo whaikōrero, karanga anō hoki. Ko Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti te kaiwhakapoapaoa i te hunga tapepa ki te reo, i te hunga reo kore ki te whai i te reo kia ako, ki te whai i te reo kia pakari, ki te whai i te reo kia mātau. Ko te Ara Reo tērā, ko te whai i ngā kaumātua tērā. Te take i pērā ai i tukuna ā rātou tamariki, mokopuna hoki ki ngā kōhanga reo, ki ngā kura kaupapa, wharekura, ki ngā whare wānanga hoki ki te whai i Te Tohu Paetahi, arā he pīrangi nō ngā mātua me ngā kaumātua kia ako i te reo kia pai ai te tautoko i ō rātou whanau ki roto hoki i te reo. Nō reira mai i te tokoiti i mātau ki te kōrero i te tau 1995 e rua tekau mā whā tau ki muri ko te tokomnaha e mātau ana ki te kōrero i tōna reo Māori.

I pānuitia atu ko te ahi kōmau a Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti, ko te ahi tapu a Rāwiri, arā ko te Hāhi Ringatū. Ko Te Hāhi Ringatū te kāmaka o Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti ko āna whakahaere katoa ka tīmata i roto i te tapu, ā hai te mutunga rā anō ka pōkaia te takapau o te wānanga mō tahi wā anō ki te karakia ka whakatūwhera a Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti ki te whai ao, ki te ao kikokiko. I roto i ngā whakahaere Ringatū ko te whakatipu i Te Ringatū i roto i Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti, anā ko te akoako i ngā uri o Te Whakatōhea ki ngā tikanga a Te Ringatū ko ōna kura anō hoki a ngā mātua, tīpuna mai rā anō i te tau 1869 ko te tomokanga mai a Te Matua Tangata me tōna whakapono ka poua ki roto i Te Whakatōhea hai whakapono mō Te Whakatōhea, he waka wairua, he waka oranga hai kawē i ngā tūmanakotanga o Te Whakatōhea mai i roto i ngā raupatu whenua ki te nāianeī. He whakatipu tohunga mō āpōpō te mahi a Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti he kura i te rangatahi ki ngā tikanga me ngā whakahaere a Te Ringatū.

Nō reira ko tā Te Hāhi Ringatū he whakahauora i te wairua o Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti me āna tāngata me korowai i a ia i roto i te tapu o te Wairua Tapu. Ko tā Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti he whakarauora anō i Te Hāhi Ringatū me pērā tā Te Hāhi whakarauora i Te Whakatōhea mai i te tau 1869. I roto i te pōuri te māramatanga e whiti ana, heoi kīhai i mai i te pōuri. Korōria ki tō ingoa tapu. Āmine.

I roto i ngā whakahaere ōna i roto i ngā tau e rua tekau mā whā i Kura Roa ko ngā tikanga a Te Whakatōhea, ko ngā mōteatea ērā mō runga i ngā paetapu, ko ngā karanga ērā ki runga i te marae, ko ngā whaikōrero ērā ki runga i te paetapu ko te kawa tērā o ngā marae o Te Whakatōhea.

Nō reira ko tā te Kura Roa nei o Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti e whakatipu i ngā uri kai roto i Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti ki te whakatikatika i a rātou, tērā te wā ka tau tērā korowai ki runga ki a rātou ki te kawe i ērā tūranga tapu, i ērā tikanga tapu a te iwi e pakari ai te kawa o te marae.

Koia tēnei tā te rautaki nei ki te whakarauora katoa i ēnei raupatunga ki runga ki a Te Whakatōhea i roto i te wānanga nei o Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti e kīa nei ko Te Kura Roa.

Hoi anō ko te pātai ka pēhea te reo o Te Whakatōhea, Te Hāhi Ringatū, ngā tikanga o te marae, te kawa o te marae, te paetapu, te paekaranga, te paemōteatea. Ko tāku e whakapae nei ka tohenihorautia e Te Whakatōhea tōna mate, ka tohenihorautia e Te Whakatōhea tōna ora. Arā, ka pakari haere ake, ka pakari haere ake.

#### **6.4 Ko te hua i te kai**

Nō reira ko tā tēnei tuhikura he urupare i te urupounamu, pēhea nei te whakaako i ngā kura o Te Kooti Arikirangi Te Turuki e whai wāhi ana ki te tuakiri o Te Whakatōhea, mā te waka nei o te kapa haka? I roto i tēnei tuhikura, anei anō ētahi atu urupounamu ka whakatewhatewhatia,

- Ko wai a Te Whakatōhea?
- Ko wai a Te Kooti?
- He aha ngā kura o Te Kooti me ngā pānga o ēnei ki a Te Whakatōhea?
- He aha te kapa haka?
- Pēhea e whakapuakitia ai ngā kura o Te Kooti mā roto mai i te kapa haka?
- He aha ngā pānga o te kapa haka me ngā kura o Te Kooti ki roto o Te Whakatōhea?

Kua uruparetia te urupounamu pēhea nei te whakaako i ngā kura o Te Kooti Arikirangi Te Turuki e whai wāhi ana ki te tuakiri o Te Whakatōhea, mā te waka nei o te kapa haka? He iwi raupatu a Te Whakatōhea, i raupatutia te 144,000 eka a Te Whakatōhea i raupatutia tōna ao katoa, ōna katoa, tōna kaha, tōna ōhanga, tōna reo, tōna kawa me āna tikanga o runga i ngā marae, tōna mana Māori motuhake.

Nō te tūtanga maitanga o Te Kooti ka heipū a Te Whakatōhea ki te poropiti nei me tana whakapono Ringatū hai waka kawē i ōna tūmanakotanga o te ngākau ki te whaiwhai mō tōna mana Māori motuhake i raro i Te Tiriti o Waitangi. Ko tana whakapono o Te Hāhi Ringatū he pupuri i ngā tikanga, ko te noho marae tērā, ko te whaikōrero tērā, ko ngā mōtēatea tērā, ko te reo tērā me te karakia me te tohunga hoki tērā, ko te tapu tērā, ko te whakamataku tērā. He tikanga katoa ēnei nō te ao kōhatu, ko te ao o Te Whakatōhea i mua i te raupatutanga o tōna whenua i pupuritia, i whakakaupapatia ki roto ki tana whakapono. Nō reira ko te Te Hāhi Ringatū i taea ai, e taea tonutia ai a Te Whakatōhea ki te pupuri i ētahi o āna tikanga me tōna kawa.

Kua matemate katoa ngā pātaka iringa kōrero o te iwi, ko ngā Kahukura o te iwi, ko kahuwaeroa o te mana, o te ihi, o te wehi, o te tapu, anā i noho pōhara ko Te Whakatōhea, kua raupatutia anō a Te Whakatōhea e te wā me ngā ture me ngā tikanga anō a Te Pākehā kua tāharahara te reo ko ngā tikanga o te marae anō hoki ērā ko te paetapu, ko te paekaranga, ko te paemōteatea ērā. I roto i te rua tekau mā whā tau i roto i ngā mahi kapa haka me te wānanga o Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti kua tohenihorautia te mate tāharahara o ngā tikanga o te marae me tōna kawa. Kua whakahokia mai te reo, kua whakakīkītia ngā whāwhārua i mahue i ā pū, i a toa, i rākaukawa, i a whakaihuwaka. Kua tūtia ngā paetapu, ā kua whaikōrero, kua tūtia te amo o ngā marae-whare, ā kua karanga, kua wawara ngā paepae i te wē haere o te mōteatea. Kua ora mai anō te Hāhi Ringatū kua akoako ngā kaihaka o Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti ki ngā karakia, ki ngā hīmene, ki ngā pānui, ki ngā waiata, ki te kupu whakaari, ki ngā mōteatea a Te Kooti me āna kōrero me ōna whakamārama. Kua whakatipuria he tohunga, kua whakatipuria te kāhui me ōna hipi kua ora. Nō te mea ko Te Ringatū te kāmaka o Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti ko āna tikanga e whakapūmautia ana ko ngā tikanga a Te Whakatōhea, ko tōna kawa. Ko Te Whakatōhea i pōtatutungia i roto i te raupatu, i pōkaikaha i roto i te harakore, ā i ora kai konei tonu e tohenihorautia ana, e tū toherauariki nei i a Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti. Ko Te Ringatū i pōtatutungia i roto i te raupatu, i pōkaikaha i roto i te harakore, ā i ora kai konei tonu e tohenihorautia ana, e tū toherauariki nei i a Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti.

Nō reira kua uruparetia te urupounamu pēhea nei te whakaako i ngā kura o Te Kooti Arikirangi Te Turuki e whai wāhi ana ki te tuakiri o Te Whakatōhea, mā te waka nei o te kapa haka; kai te tino Kino te tika, ae.

Ko ngā potonga o tēnei kura pea ko te kore ōku i uiui tāngata. Ko te take ko ōku kahukura nāna nei ahau i kura ki ēnei kōrero kua matemate katoa. Ko ngā kōrero a te kapa haka a Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti i tangohia mai i tētahi rangakura nā Te Matatini i tonu ki Te Whare Wānanga o Waikato kia rangakuratia; te pānga o te kapa haka i raro i Te Matatini ki te ōhanga o Aotearoa. Anā, nā te poto o te wā ki Te Whare Wānanga o Waikato i rangakuraa kētia ko Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti. Nō reirā ko ngā wheako me ngā kōrero a ngā kaihaka o mua noa atu, o mua tata, o nāia tonu nei kai roto i te rangakura nā e kīa nā; (Te Huawai Pārae Report, personal communication, 2018).

Ko ngā āheitanga mai i tēnei rangakura ka taea e ngā iwi, ngā hapū, ngā marae ki te whakapakari i a rātou anō me ō rātou ake marae mā roto mai i ngā mahi kapa haka ki te whakarauora i te reo, i ngā tikanga o te marae, tō rātou kawa, ā rātou kōrero ōnehe, hītoria, Hoi anō me whai whakakitenga nui, me moemoeā ngā mātua me ngā kaumātua mō ō rātou iwi me ā rātou taitamariki.

E taea anō hoki he rangakura whānui mō Te Whakatōhea iwi, e taea hoki he rangakura whānui mō Te Kooti me Te Whakatōhea me āna kupu whakaari. E taea hoki he rangakura mō ngā kupu whakaari a Te Kooti. E taea anō rā he rangakura mō te reo o Te Whakatōhea, arā noa atu, arā noa atu, inā, inā.

E roi Te Whakatōhea i te roi a Tinirau. Ko Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti Te Kura nui, Te Kura roa o Te Whakatōhea, māna e whanake te Kura i raro i a Awarua kia tū koia ko Te Kura nā Tūhaepō. Te Whakatōhea Maurua. Ko te whakakotahitanga i a Te Whakatōhea i roto i a ia anō kia toheraoa ki te whakatipu i te iwi kia toherauariki i roto i tōna ao me te pupuri anō i tōna Whakatōheatanga, i tōna ake anō mauri, i tōna ake anō kawa, i tōna ake anō tū taketake ake nāna, nā Te Whakatōhea.

“Over the last 178 years Māori have endeavoured to maintain the home fires that once burned fiercely throughout tribal palisades of Aotearoa. Fires that provide the heat to keep the culture alive and thriving in the hearts and minds of Māori, the indigenous, the native, the first peoples. The flames burned true, through waves of western interjection that swept the lands from Te Reinga in the North to Rakiura in the South. Despite the steady influx of colonial ways, the home fires remain. A testament to the legacy and spirit of our ancestors, we have endured. More

than just survive, our culture is well and truly alive and thriving. Descendants of navigators, astronomers, warriors, lovers, scientists, hunters, soldiers, explorers, artists, gardeners, guardians, weavers, poets, orators, carvers, philosophers, environmentalists and earthkeepers. We continue to stack the fire high so that it burns fiercely, providing warmth for the soul and enlightening minds of generations to come. Mua te haere” (Dewes, 2018).



*Whakaahua 14: Ko te Tekaumārua o Mei 2019 ki Ōpekerau Marae, Waioweka Pā, Ngāti Ira, Ōpōtiki. Ko Te Hāhi e karakia ana. Ko te mana whakaahua nō Te Kahautu Maxwell.*

Nō te Tekaumārua o Mei i tū ki Ōpekerau Mārae, Waioweka Pā i tutuki ai tēnei tuhikura. I haere kairangakura ki te urupā o Ngāti Ira, Ōwaka ki te kite i a Witi Kūrei te “Mayor o Waioweka” he pou nō te kapa haka o Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti i te mea kīhai i wātea ki tana huranga kōhatu i te Aranga o 2019. Nō konā ka haere te kairangakura ki te toro haere i ngā whakaruruhau nā rātou ia i whakaruruhau, i tohutohu i a ia i tōna ao, i tō rātou nā ao i te wā o te ora, ko Himiona Kahika tērā, ko Hīria Akurangi tērā, ko Te Rōpiha Kūrei tērā, ko Te Pāroa Kūrei tērā, ko Ngākohu Pera tērā, ko Reti Williams tērā. Anā i tūpono atu ahau ki a Te Kirihāehae Paul hoki. I muri i tērā i tāpae te kairangakura nei i te tuhikura nei kia hīritia ki roto i te Tekaumārua o Te Whakatōhea.

Ko te kupu o taua Rā i hāngai ki ahau me te otinga o te tuhikura nei;

**Ngā Whakataukī 4: 20** *E tāku tamaīti tahuri ki āku kupu, anga mai mai tōu taringa ki āku kōrero.*

**Ngā Whakataukī 4: 8** *Whakanuia ia, ā Māna koe ka kake ai, ka whakahōnore Ia i a koe ki te awhitia e koe.*

*“I roto i te pōuri te māramatanga e whiti ana, kīhai i mau i te pōuri, korōria ki tō ingoa tapu. Āmine”.*

*E te Atua whakatūwheratia mai ngā kuaha o te tika ki a mātou i tēnei rā, ā mā mātou rā koutou e whakamoemiti, e whakakorōria ki tōu ingoa tapu. Āmine.*

## Te Kaunati Hikahika

---

Anamata = Future

Hau te kura = Chapter 2 Tikanga Rangakura

Inamata = Past

Kairangakura = Kairangahau/ Researcher

Kaitukukura = Kaiwhāngai/ Research Participants

Ko te hua i te kai = Findings

Kupu Whakaari = Introduction to each chapter

Kuratoroa = Kaitohutohu/ Supervisors

Pinepine te kura = Chapter 1 Ariā/ Introduction

Rangakura = Rangakura, Research

Te Ara o Ēnoka = Foreword

Te Ara Tōtara = Methodology/ Structure

Te Kaunati Hikahika = Kuputaka/ Glossary

Ko Te Kura Nui = Chapter 4 Te Kooti

Ko Te Kura Roa = Chapter 5 Ōōtiki Mai Tawhiti

Te Kura Nā Tūhaepō = Chapter 6 Conclusion

Te Rongopai = Abstract

Te Toihuarewa = Research Methodology

Titikaha = Conclusion of each chapter

Tuhikura = Tuhingaroa, Thesis

Tūmata = Present time

Whakaara ake nei te iti i roto i te puehu = Te kaupapa o Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti

Whakateitei ake te rawakore i roto i te pūranga paru = Ngā tikanga a Ōpōtiki Mai Tawhiti

Whanake te kura i raro i a Awarua = Chapter 3 Te Whakatōhea

Whatukura = Kaipānui, Reader

## Te Wāua Mai Nei

---

Amoamo, T. (1990). *Story: Mekomoko*. In *Te Ara: The Encyclopedia of New Zealand*.

Retrieved from <https://teara.govt.nz/en/biographies/1m47/mekomoko>."

Berg, B. (2007). *Qualitative Research Methods for the Social Sciences* (6th ed). Boston, MA: Pearson Education.

Best, E. (1904). *Art II: Notes on ancient Polynesian migrants, or voyagers, to New Zealand, and voyage of the "Aratawhao" canoe to Hawaiki*. *Transactions and Proceedings of the Royal Society of New Zealand 1868-1961*, 37, 121-138. Retrieved from [http://rsnz.natlib.govt.nz/volume/rsnz\\_37/rsnz\\_37\\_00\\_001230.html](http://rsnz.natlib.govt.nz/volume/rsnz_37/rsnz_37_00_001230.html).

Best, E. (1905). *Art XXV: Maori eschatology: The Whare Potae (House of Mourning) and its lore; being a description of many customs, beliefs, superstitions, rites, &c., pertaining to death and burial among Maori people, as also some account of native belief in a spiritual world*. *Transactions and Proceedings of the Royal Society of New Zealand 1868-1961*, 38, 148-239. Retrieved from [http://rsnz.natlib.govt.nz/volume/rsnz\\_38/rsnz\\_38\\_00\\_002700.html](http://rsnz.natlib.govt.nz/volume/rsnz_38/rsnz_38_00_002700.html)"

Best, E. (1972). *Tuhoe: The children of the mist; a sketch of the origin, history, myths and beliefs of the Tuhoe tribe of the Maori of New Zealand, with some account of other early tribes of the Bay of Plenty district*. Wellington, New Zealand: A. H. & A. W. Reed.

Biggs, B., Hohepa, P., & Mead, S. M. (1967). *Selected readings in Maori*. Wellington, New Zealand: A. H. & A. W. Reed.

Binney, J. (1990). *Story: Te Kooti Arikirangi Te Turuki*. In *Te Ara: The Encyclopedia of New Zealand*. Retrieved from <https://teara.govt.nz/en/biographies/1t45/te-kooti-arikirangi-te-turuki>

Binney, J. (1995). *Redemption songs: A life of Te Kooti Arikirangi Te Turuki*. Auckland, New Zealand: Auckland University Press.

Bishop, R. (1994). Initiating Empowering Research? *New Zealand Journal of Educational Studies* 29(1). 175-188.

- Bishop, R. (1998). Freeing ourselves from neo-colonial domination in research: A Māori approach to creating knowledge. *Qualitative Studies in Education*, 11(2), 199-219.
- Bishop, R. (1999). Nau te rourou, naku te rourou: Maori education: setting an agenda: Inaugural professorial address. In *School of Education*, Waikato University: Hamilton.
- Boyatzis RE (1998) Transforming Qualitative Information. Cleveland, OH: Sage
- Braun, V & Clarke, V. (2006). Using thematic analysis in psychology. *Qualitative research in Psychology*. 3(2), 77-101.
- Cunningham, C. (1998). A Framework for Addressing Māori Knowledge in Research, Science and Technology. In Te Pūmanawa Hauora (Ed.) *Proceeding of Te Oru Rangakura Māori Research and Development Conference*. Palmerston North, New Zealand: Massey University.
- Dewes, T. (2018, February 6). Over the last 178 years Māori have endeavoured to maintain the home fires that once burned fiercely throughout tribal palisades of Aotearoa [Facebook update]. Retrieved from <https://www.facebook.com/tekuru.dewes/posts/10155510465366713:0>
- Durie, M. (1998). *Te Mana, Te Kawanatanga: The Politics of Maori Self-Determination*. Auckland, New Zealand: Oxford University Press.
- Education Counts. (2010). *Te Piko o te Māhuri: Ngā āhuratanga matua o te Kura Kaupapa Māori whai angitu*. Retrieved from <https://www.educationcounts.govt.nz/publications/91416/105966/79522/he-kupu-taka>
- Evidence given by Te Hoera Horokai and Heremia Hoera at Opotiki. (1920, July 14). [Unpublished manuscripts]. Whakatohea Trust Board - Appointment of (MAW2459, 44, 5/13/14). Archives New Zealand, Wellington, New Zealand."
- Fergusson, C. (Governor-General). (1928). Confiscated native lands and other grievances. In *Appendix to the Journals of the House of Representatives* [AJHR], (Sess 1, G-07), 1-40. Retrieved from <https://atojs.natlib.govt.nz>

- Fowler, L. (1957, December 21). *A new look at Te Kooti. Te Ao Hou: The New World*. 21, 18-22. Retrieved from <http://teaohou.natlib.govt.nz/journals/teaohou/issue/Mao21TeA/c16.html#n18>
- Gardiner, W. (2001). *Haka: A living tradition*. Auckland, New Zealand: Hodder Moa Beckett.
- Grey, G. (1885). *Polynesian Mythology and Ancient Traditional History of the New Zealand Race. Auckland, New Zealand: Evening Star Office*. Retrieved from <http://nzetc.victoria.ac.nz/tm/scholarly/tei-GrePoly.html>."
- Haere ki o koutou tipuna. (1971). *Te Ao Hou: The New World*. Retrieved from <http://teaohou.natlib.govt.nz/journals/teaohou/issue/Mao69TeA/c1.html>"
- Hill, D. (2004). *Te Ohonga Wairua o Roto* (Master's thesis, Te Whare Wānanga o Awanuiārangi, Whakatāne, New Zealand).
- Howe, T. (1984). *Waioweka School Centennial 1884-1984: Easter weekend*. Waioweka, New Zealand: Waioweka School.
- Hudson, M. (2004). *He matatika Māori: Māori and ethical review of health research* (Master's thesis, Auckland University of Technology, New Zealand).
- Kingi, A. (2000). Story: Ngawai, Tuini Moetu Haangu. In *Te Ara: The Encyclopedia of New Zealand*. Retrieved from <https://teara.govt.nz/en/biographies/5n11/ngawai-tuini-moetu-haangu>"
- Kingi, T. (2005). *Māori health, Māori research, and Māori mental health outcomes*. Paper presented at Whakapiripiri, Christchurch, New Zealand. Retrieved from <http://www.massey.ac.nz/massey/fms/Te%20Mata%20O%20Te%20Tau/Publications%20-%20Te%20Kani/HTML%20Charcode.pdf?6AEFFFAF9616CF61305CFAA372475207>
- Kingi, T. (2006). *Culture, health and Māori development*. Paper presented at Te Mata o te Tau, Palmerston North, New Zealand.

- Kuhn, T. S. (1996). *The structure of scientific revolutions*. Chicago, IL: University of Chicago Press.
- Lyll, A. C. (1979). *Whakatohea of Opotiki*. Wellington, New Zealand: A. H. & A. W. Reed.
- Matamua, R. (2006). *Te reo pāho, Māori radio and language revitalisation* (Doctoral thesis, Massey University, Palmerston North, New Zealand). Retrieved from <http://hdl.handle.net/10179/1864>
- Maxwell, P. (2000). *Frontier: The battle for the north island of New Zealand 1860-1872*. Auckland, New Zealand: Celebrity Books for Waitekauri Publishing.
- Mead, H.M. (2003). *Tikanga Māori: Living Māori Values*. Wellington, New Zealand: Huia Publishers.
- Moka Te Kainga-mataa. (n.d). Retrieved from [https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Moka\\_Te\\_Kainga-mataa](https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Moka_Te_Kainga-mataa)
- New schools for old crafts. (1966, June). *Te Ao Hou: The New World*. Retrieved from <http://teaohou.natlib.govt.nz/journals/teaohou/image/Mao55TeA/Mao55TeA010.html>
- New Zealand Birds. (2014). *Bush Wren*. Retrieved from <http://www.nzbirds.com/birds/matuhi.html>
- New Zealand History. (2018). *Waikato-Tainui sign deed of settlement with the Crown: 22 May 1995*. Retrieved from <https://nzhistory.govt.nz/page/waikato-tainui-sign-deed-settlement-crown>."
- Ngata, A (Ed.). (1990). *Ngā mōteatea: He maramara rere nō ngā waka maha (Vol 4)*. Auckland, New Zealand: Polynesian Society.
- Oliver, S. (2002). Story: Nihoniho, Matutaera. In *Te Ara Encyclopedia of New Zealand*. Retrieved from <https://teara.govt.nz/en/biographies/1n14/nihoniho-matutaera>"
- Papesch, T. (2015). *Creating a modern Māori identity through kapa haka* (Doctoral thesis, University of Canterbury, Chirstchurch, New Zealand). Retrieved from <http://hdl.handle.net/10092/11263>"

- Porter, F. (2003). Story: Williams, William Leonard. In *Te Ara: The Encyclopedia of New Zealand*. Retrieved from <https://teara.govt.nz/en/biographies/2w24/williams-william-leonard>."
- Royal, C. (2014). Story: Māori composers: Ngā kaitito waiata. In *Te Ara Encyclopedia of New Zealand*. Retrieved from <https://teara.govt.nz/en/music/44279/apirana-ngata-and-karangatia-ra>"
- Smith, L.T. (1999). *Decolonizing methodologies*. Dunedin: University of Otago Press.
- Statistics New Zealand. (2013). 2013 *Census map: Iwi within Tauranga Moana / Mātaatua (Bay of Plenty) region*. Retrieved from <http://archive.stats.govt.nz/StatsMaps/Home/Iwi/2013-Census-map-iwi-within-Tauranga-Moana-Mataatua-Bay-of-Plenty-Region.aspx>"
- Stokes, E. (1980). *Pai marire and the niu at kuranui*. Hamilton, New Zealand: Centre for Maori Studies and Research, University of Waikato.
- Te Kooti Arikirangi Te Turuki. (1864). [Unpublished manuscripts]. *Notebook Na Te Kooti* (MSX-3091). Alexander Turnbull Library: Wellington, New Zealand.
- The Maori gave his best. (1953). *Te Ao Hou: The New World*. Retrieved from <http://teaohou.natlib.govt.nz/journals/teaohou/image/Mao06TeA/Mao06TeA018.html> "
- Tipene, J. (2014). *Ngā hua a Tane Rore: The benefits of Kapa haka*. Retrieved from [https://mch.govt.nz/files/Ngā%20Hua%20A%20Tane%20Rore%20%20The%20benefits%20of%20kapa%20haka%20\(D-0570327\).PDF](https://mch.govt.nz/files/Ngā%20Hua%20A%20Tane%20Rore%20%20The%20benefits%20of%20kapa%20haka%20(D-0570327).PDF)
- Turei, M. (1901, June 1). He tangi mō kuini wikitoria. *Pipiharauroa*. Retrieved from [https://paperspast.natlib.govt.nz/periodicals/PIPIWH19010601.2.3?query=arapangateatinuku&start\\_date=1898-01-01&end\\_date=1913-01-01&snippet=true&title=PIPIWH](https://paperspast.natlib.govt.nz/periodicals/PIPIWH19010601.2.3?query=arapangateatinuku&start_date=1898-01-01&end_date=1913-01-01&snippet=true&title=PIPIWH)

- Walker, R. (2007). *Ōpōtiki-Mai-Tawhiti capital of Whakatōhea: The story of Whakatōhea's struggle during the nineteenth and twentieth centuries*. Auckland, New Zealand: Penguin Books.
- Walsh-Tapiata, W. (1998). *Research with you own iwi – what are some of the issues?* Paper presented at Te Oru Rangakura: Māori Research and Development Conference, School of Māori Studeis, Massey University, Palmerston North.
- Whakatohea Maori Trust Board. (n.d). *Aquaculture*. Retrieved from <http://www.whakatohea.co.nz/aquaculture.html>."
- White, H. (1993). Story: Te Popo, Hira. In *Te Ara: The Encyclopedia of New Zealand*. Retrieved from <https://teara.govt.nz/en/biographies/2t25/te-popo-hira>."
- White, J. (1997). *Ancient history of the Maori: His mythology and traditions (Vol 2)*. Chirstchurch, New Zealand: Kiwi Publishers.